



RED PACKET SERVER

BOOK 01

Zhi Xin

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Red Packet Server

(超级红包群)

by

Zhi Xin

(知新)

Synopsis

On a certain day, Ye Zichen was dragged into a deities' chat group. These deities liked to brag, and also liked to send red packets.

Ever since then, Ye Zichen's life has had unbelievable changes.

The God of Fortune sent a red packet. I'm going snatch it! Wow, I got a large gold ingot.

Taibai Jinxing sent a red packet, I'm going to snatch it as well! Wow, I got a thousand years of cultivation.

Super WeChat Red Envelope Group, with a swipe of my hands, I got them red packets.

Stop messing around, I'm going to snatch red envelopes now!

Copyright © by Lisa Hayes

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Selutu @ [Volare Novels](#)

Translation Editing by Khuja & etvolare @ [Volare Novels](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

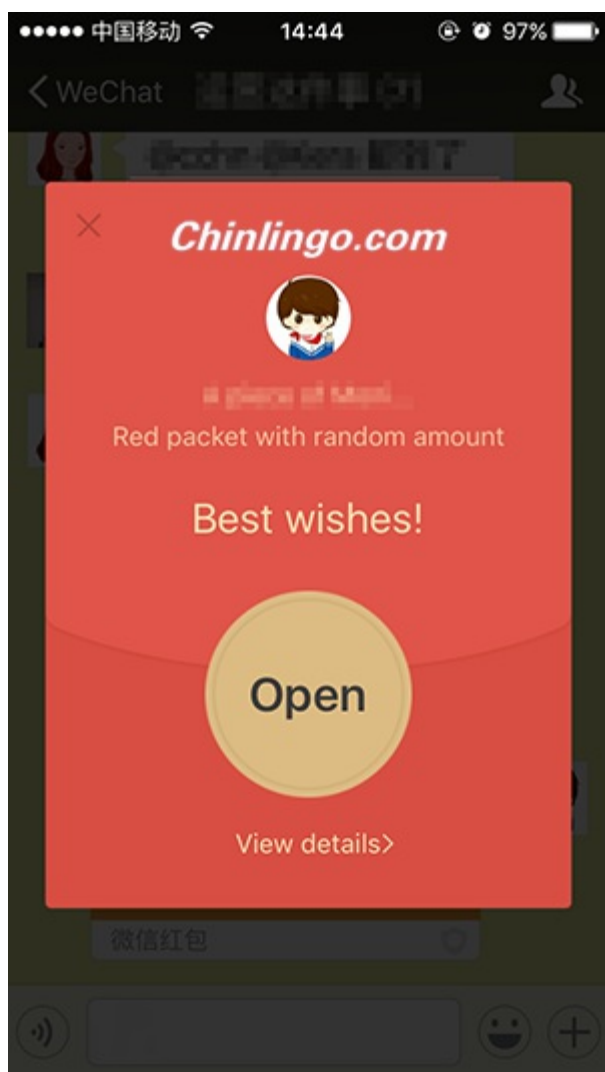
This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Introduction

Readers will be introduced to a part of Chinese popular culture in this novel. The initial part of the novel focuses on [WeChat](#) (of which the Western equivalent might be WhatsApp).

red packets (or red envelopes) are part of the Chinese New Year tradition. They are packets/envelopes containing a bit of money, giving from a person to those of a younger generation as both a symbol of good wishes and good fortune.

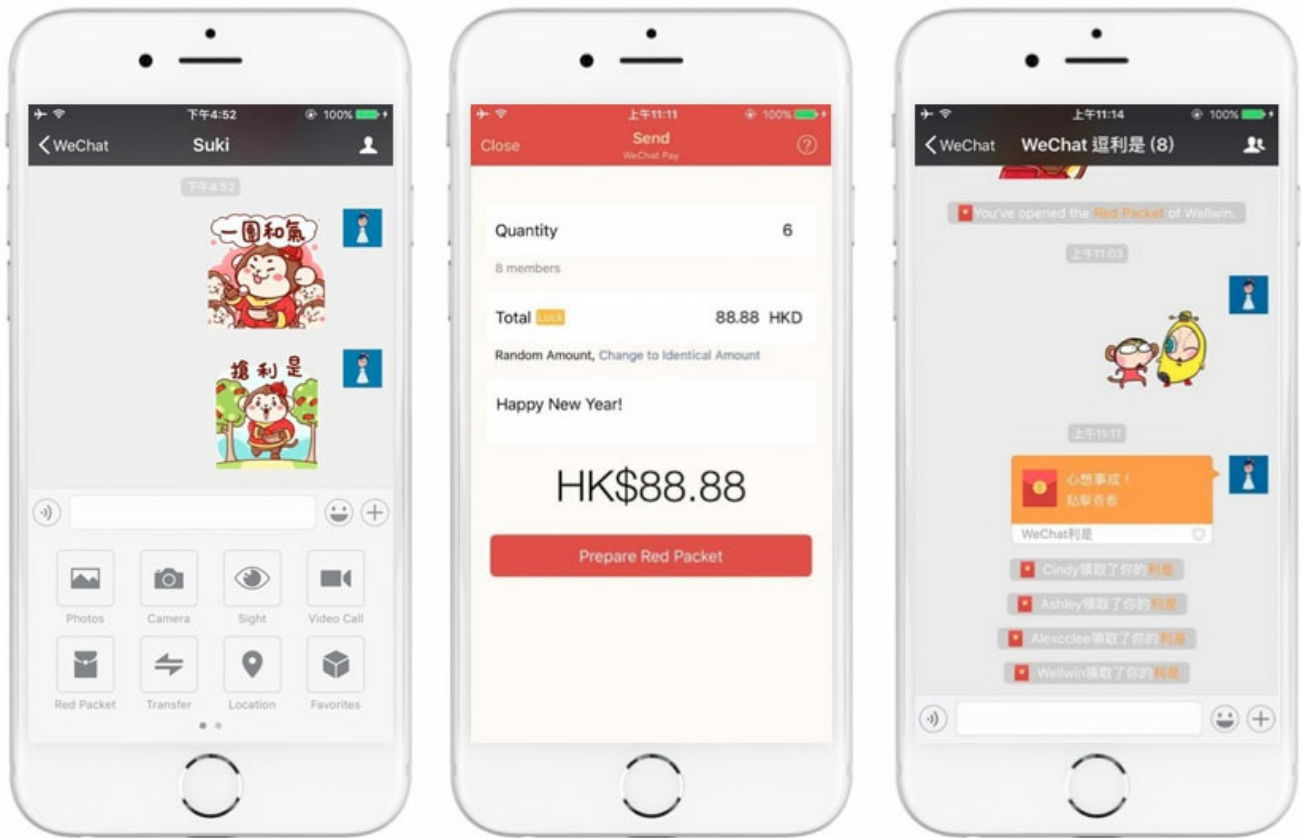
However, as time passed by, red packets have become more than that. They are no longer limited to Chinese New Year, and would be given at a lot of other situations as well. An example of this would be during a wedding to the couple or to the child on their birthday. Ever since the “Red Packet” function has been added to WeChat, it has also become a way for people to send presents to one another in private or to a large group of people.



Recipient or successful snatching of a red packet!

In the latter case, people would have to “snatch” up red packets, since there would be a limited amount, while the amount of money the red packets contains would often range from a rather low amount to 10 or even 100 times it.

“Red Packet Groups” are chat groups on WeChat that takes this to the extreme. By utilizing the “Red Packet” function of WeChat, people in the group would often send out red packets, and the person with the best luck (thus getting the highest amount of money from the red packet) would then be obligated to send out more red packets in order to continue this “game”.



From left to right: 1) Interface of WeChat. 2) Preparation of Red Packet. 3) Sender sees a list of people who've successfully snatched up the red packet.

Chapter 1 – The Deities Have A WeChat Group

Bing Cheng Polytechnic University.

There was a white mulberry grove near the university's second campus. Originally, the college had planted these mulberry trees to bring more greenery to the environment, but after nurturing generations of students, it gradually became the go-to location for students to go on dates.

One was able to smell the scent of love that was floating in the air from a long distance away.

“Yueyue, I bought the lemon juice you like.”

Ye Zichen held two cups of lemon juice that he had just bought from the school's drink shop. Just like other university students, he was enjoying the spring of youth with a girlfriend.

The reason that he had came here today was because his girlfriend had called him. He had excitedly run down from the dormitory under the contemptuous gazes from his roommates, and bought the cold drink...

But...

Splat.

The lemon juice in his hands fell to the ground. Ye Zichen stared blankly at the beautifully smiling girl. She was the girlfriend that incited his roommates' jealousy, but right now, her arms were wrapped around another man.

“Yao Yue, what...”

Ye Zichen was pretty much unable to believe everything that he was seeing, the corner of the girl's mouth twisted up, showing a hint of contempt.

“Ye Zichen, let's break up. We're not suitable for one another.”

The moment she finished talking, a sweet smile rose up that was completely opposite to the contempt she had showed on her face before. She held Guo Qiang's shoulder tightly as she smiled, “My boyfriend, Guo Qiang.”

Guo Qiang, the captain of the Taekwondo society in school. He had a good family background. They said that his father owned a chemical factory and he always drove a Mercedes X to school.

“Yao Yue, that's your original boyfriend? I think he's pretty mediocre!”

Guo Qiang looked at Ye Zichen with disdain. Since Ye Zichen was wearing a total of less than a thousand yuan, he did not feel the need to be wary at all.

Yao Yue held Guo Qiang's arm tightly and nodded in agreement.

“Yeah, actually, I was just messing around when I was with him. Qiang-ge is my true love.”

Guo Qiang clearly enjoyed what was happening in front of him a lot. He casually took out several thousand yuan and threw them at Ye Zichen.

“Take these and buy yourself some decent clothes, if you want to pick up a girl, you gotta have the cash to do so.”

With that, Guo Qiang wrapped his arm around Yao Yue's waist before walking out of the patch of trees towards the hotel outside the school with a savage sneer.

Ever since Ye Zichen had seen Yao Yue with Guo Qiang, he'd laid on the bed with his blanket over his head.

Everyone in the dorm knew about his situation, but even though they wanted to comfort him, they were unsure of how to begin.

“Ol' Five, get up, let's go out and eat.”

Kang Peng tugged on Ye Zichen's blanket, but Ye Zichen, who was on the bed, did not have any reaction at all.

“Never mind, Ol’ Five is in a bad mood. Let’s go out, we’ll bring something back for him later.”

The people at the dorm all left from the room with a sigh, causing the entire room to become empty once more.

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen’s phone suddenly rang. He was still on the bed and he immediately flipped over the blanket and picked up the phone.

He had thought that Yao Yue had just messaged him, but when he opened WeChat, he noticed that someone had pulled him into a group.

“What the fuck.”

Ye Zichen silently swore. However, just as he was about to leave the group, he got attracted in the name of the people in the group.

[Taibai Jinxing](#), God of Fortune, Kitchen God, Erlang Shen, [Lord of the Northern Dipper](#), [Old Lord Taishang](#)...

Taibai Jinxing (太白金星) is the servant of the Jade Emperor, often acting as a messenger for the Jade Emperor’s orders. One

thing he is most well known for is being the first deity to meet Sun Wukong, the Monkey King.

Lord of the Northern Dipper (北斗星君) is the God (or sometimes Gods) of the seven stars of the Big Dipper. He would be related to the fate of people as the chosen ones of each star would take up a certain role within the dynasty.

Old Lord Taishang (太上老君) is a famous pill refiner deity. He is the one who had refined Sun Wukong, the Monkey King, in his furnace for 49 days in Journey to the West.

What the heck is this group.

That was the thought that popped up in Ye Zichen's mind.

However, why isn't anyone chatting in the group.

Dingdong.

A red packet appeared in the group. The person that sent it was Taibai Jinxing.

Ye Zichen decided to click it.

He was too slow, all the red envelopes had been taken!

Fuck, isn't this group a dead one?

Ye Zichen casually clicked around to see everyone's luck, but when he saw it, he was unable to retain his calm anymore.

Sixty-six red envelopes had actually disappeared in an instant.

However, the things in them caused Ye Zichen to blank out a little, ...cultivation experience...

What is this used for?

He saw that the luckiest of those who got an envelope was the God of Thunder, he actually got 1000 cultivation experience!

Could it be money? If that was a thousand yuan, then that was a huge red packet! Had he actually stumbled into a rich people's group?

Ye Zichen felt a random bit of anticipation for being in the group.

Just at that moment, the people in the group exploded!

Lord of the Northern Dipper: Oh wow, God of Thunder, you lurk all the time and I don't see you sending any red envelopes, why do you snatch it before every one of us every single time?

God of Thunder: Sorry, I'm just too lucky. <Insert 3 embarrassed emoji>

Erlang Shen: Damn, you guys took all the red envelopes just during the time laozi went to take my dog for a walk. Old Geezer Taibai is truly generous, but laozi doesn't care about that. Who can send some money, laozi's dog has been starving for several days.

Kitchen God: Then you have to find the God of Fortune, he's a rich person.

Lord of the Northern Dipper: Waiting for the rich person to share the wealth!

Erlang Shen: God of Fortune, don't pretend to be dead, I know you're reading the chat.

God of Fortune: Even a rich person would starve to death after getting screwed like this by you guys. <Insert 3 eyeroll emojis>

Erlang Shen: Then are you going to send it or not!? If you don't, then my dog is going to stay in your home!

God of Fortune: Yes, yes, yes!

Dingdong.

Another red envelope appeared on the screen once again. At the very moment that the red envelope appeared, Ye Zichen directly pressed on it.

Ding.

His phone vibrated, causing Ye Zichen's shoulders to vibrate along with it for some reason as well.

10 ingots.

What the heck is this now.

Just as Ye Zichen was getting curious about what the heck an ingot was, the WeChat group exploded again.

Everyone all praised the God of Fortune for being generous, except Erlang Shen, who was acting the villain.

Erlang Shen: F*ck, God of Fortune, are you able to take anymore away?

God of Fortune: Erlang Shen, you were unlucky, how can you blame anyone?

Monkey King: Haha, my son, do you need your Grandpa Sun to transfer some to you?

Erlang Shen: Bastard Monkey, you're asking to get beaten!

Under the influence of his curiosity, Ye Zichen clicked open to

see everyone's luck, then noticed that Erlang Shen had only gotten 1 ingot.

With Erlang Shen's lead, everyone in the group, who happened to be carrying the title of various deities, all started flaming each other. Ye Zichen ignored them. He was merely curious about what exactly this ingot was.

Ye Zichen clicked open his wallet, and found that he had an additional function of a Treasure Chest.

After clicking on the Treasure Chest, he saw the shining ingots inside.

Extract.

Ding.

Extract the God of Fortune's God ingot? 1 Gold Ingot = 10 thousand yuan

... 10 thousand!

Ye Zichen sat there in a daze, if this is real, then didn't that mean that he'd gotten a hundred thousand just now!

F*ck, this must be a lie, right?

Ye Zichen pressed 'extract' with a trembling hand. A withdrawal notification appeared on his phone's WeChat not long afterwards.

It was actually real!

Before Ye Zichen could react, another withdrawal notification appeared.

Withdrawal successful. Withdrawal of ¥100,000

Bank withdrawn to: Industrial Bank 9467

F*ck!

Ye Zichen immediately dialed his bank's number without thinking, and checked his balance according to the instructions of the notifications.

Current balance available, RMB 100,000.59.

Plop.

His phone slipped from his hands onto the bed.

Real money!

Ye Zichen trembled. All of a sudden, the scene of Guo Qiang

throwing several thousand yuan onto him appeared in front of his eyes.

In the next moment, he quickly shoved on his shoes, then ran furiously out of the dormitory with his bank card.

He, Ye Zichen, was going to pay him back for the shame he had received several times over!

Chapter 2 – Does It Feel Good To Be Smacked By Money

“Yao Yue, I want to see you...”

Ye Zichen stood outside the girl’s dormitory, while holding two suitcases.

“We already have no relationship to each other, can you not... Aiya, Qiang-ge, don’t mess around...”

The panting coming from the other side of the phone caused Ye Zichen’s expression to turn terrifyingly dark. However, once he looked at the suitcases in his hands, a smirk once again appeared on the corner of his mouth.

“It’s the last time, I just want to give you a present...”

“Present! Just wait a bit.”

Ye Zichen only saw Yao Yue walk out of the girl’s dormitory after a good half an hour.

From the flushed look on Yao Yue’s face, it seems like the two people had just enjoyed themselves not too long ago.

For some reason, Ye Zichen felt that he had been so stupid. He hadn’t even dared to hold Yao Yue’s hand after dating her for more

than half a year.

The people at the dorm called him a coward, yet he had replied with a laugh and said that it was true love!

True love!

True love, what is true love!

“What, you feel like the money Qiang-ge gave you wasn’t enough, so you want some more for your breakup fee?”

Yao Yue took a card out from her wallet and threw it at Ye Zichen with a laugh of contempt. The card fell onto the ground with a sound that induced heartbreak.

“Here’s ten thousand, Qiang-ge said to stay away from me in the future.”

Ye Zichen, who was standing in place without moving, suddenly laughed. He playfully picked up the bank card on the floor and played around with it before throwing it back in Yao Yue’s face.

“You think you’re amazing because you have some money?”

“Don’t be dumb when we’re trying to give you face...”

Yao Yue cursed him with a sullen expression, but stopped halfway when she saw Ye Zichen open his suitcases.

Two suitcases that were full of money.

However, there was a bit of problem with this money. This was underworld money that Ye Zichen had specifically spent twenty thousand kuai ordering at a funeral store.

“Just f*cking rich, right? Ah!”

Ye Zichen opened his eyes wide and casually threw out several stacks of money onto Yao Yue’s face.

Yao Yue had completely been stunned at the moment Ye Zichen opened the suitcases.

All of the students in the area surrounded them as they watched stacks of money get slapped onto Yao Yue’s face.

They had never actually seen someone using money to literally smash others.

All of them silently wondered which family’s young master Ye Zichen was for him to actually act in such an oppressing manner. Quite a few girls had already secretly memorized Ye Zichen’s face in their heart in order to try and find a chance to create a ‘coincidental meeting’.

“You like money, right? Does it feel good to get smacked with money? Hehe, what the hell are you?”

After pouring the suitcases of money onto Yao Yue’s head, Ye Zichen turned around to leave with an ice-cold expression.

As the students in school saw the money covering the entire ground, they immediately started to get riled up as they fought over it. At this moment, Yao Yue also returned to her senses and shouted towards the surrounding students.

“Nobody move, this is laoniang’s money!”

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen’s roommates had all finished eating and returned to the dorm. There was even a box of food that they had brought back for Ye Zichen.

“Why isn’t Fifth Bro’s number going through, he couldn’t have gone to commit suicide, right?”

Zhu Yunbai was the youngest in the dorm. His words never went through his brain first, and so he had no filter for what he said. Hearing that, Kang Peng raised his hand and smacked his head, then cursed at him.

“Can’t you f*cking wish for something better.”

“What Ol’ Six said might just be possible. It’s not like you guys don’t know Ol’ Five’s personality. Don’t think about how he’s pretty cheerful normally, he was completely sincere towards Yao Yue.”

Bai Yu sighed lightly with a frown, while everyone else in the dorm turned silent.

“How about calling the police?”

The youngest Zhu Yunbai suggested. After thinking about it for a while, Kang Peng also nodded.

“Let’s call the police!”

“Wait, look at what this is?”

Just when everyone was about to call the police.

“Huge, huge news...”

Zhang Rui, who was on the top bunk, suddenly stuck his head out. He was Ol’ Three in the dorm, and wore a glasses frame without any lenses to affect a scholarly, elegant air. He was outwardly cold but passionate in private, and was yet the person that was most concerned with the gossip in the school.

“What’s up?”

Kang Peng and co. went over, while Zhang Rui pointed at the title shown on his phone...

“Do you see that. Some overbearing rich second-generation appeared in a shocking manner, he actually used money to smash someone at the girl’s dorm!”

Hearing that from the doorway, Ye Zichen momentarily blanked. Aren’t they talking about me? Why is it on the school forum already?

“Oh wow, he really is using money to smash people. This retard is too cocky,” Zhu Yunbai shouted and swore. “Laozi hates this sort of rich second-generation the most.”

The surrounding people also nodded in agreement. The people in the dorm were all from normal families, what they hated most was this sort of young master that used their parents’ money to get pretentious.

“What rich second-generation, look at the person in the photos.”

Only then did everyone notice who the person was in the photo. All of a sudden, the dorm became terrifyingly quiet.

“It seems to be like Fifth Bro,” Zhu Yunbai swallowed.

“It really does seem like Ol’ Five...”

“You don’t say, it really does.”

Kacha.

Ye Zichen, who had used money to smash someone, just casually walked into the dorm. The moment he entered the room, everyone surrounded Ye Zichen as if they saw a rare animal. Zhang Rui also jumped down from the bed and held the phone up to examine the photo carefully.

“Ol’ Five, the person on here is you, right.”

Hearing that, Ye Zichen took the phone from Zhang Rui. When he saw that eye-catching title, he couldn’t help but shake his head and smile wryly.

“What rich second-generation, what I threw was f*cking underworld money.”

“Underworld money? Then why is there a bunch of people fighting over money in the photo?”

“I ordered it, it cost me quite a lot!”

The people in the dorm exploded into chatter once more.

“Ol’ Five, you’re evil enough.”

Bai Yu gave a thumb up towards Yi Zichen. Using underworld money to slap people’s faces was very unlucky. This brat didn’t think that although Ye Zichen rather kept under the radar normally, when he turned bad, he would be really that bad.

Ye Zichen ignored them and walked to the side of his bed, then took out his phone.

He opened the deities’ WeChat group and saw that the fight between Erlang Shen and the Monkey King had already stopped. The deities were all chatting about stuff like how much cultivation they earned the previous month, or that they had to pass through a trial or something.

The miracle of the ingots had already made Ye Zichen feel the uniqueness of this group. He wasn’t an idiot, if he really couldn’t feel it, then he can just go and commit suicide.

Could it be that it really is a group of deities?

Although it seemed rather unbelievable, it truly did happen to him.

Hearing the praises of his brothers in the dorm, Ye Zichen touched the bank card in his pocket.

“Everyone, quiet down a bit.”

Everyone in the dorm instantly quieted down. Ye Zichen raised up the bank card in his hand and smiled.

“In order to celebrate me successfully becoming single again, I’ll treat everyone to go out to eat at Latte.”

The room went completely silent.

Everyone in the dorm looked at him as if they were looking at a idiot, causing Ye Zichen to feel very uncomfortable.

“Why are you guys looking at me like that for?”

“Ye-zi, when have you treated us to a meal? It’s already good enough when you don’t try to get a meal off us every time. I can’t be hearing things, right?” Bai Yu said with an expression of disbelief.

“I feel like Fifth Bro’s gone crazy,” Zhu Yunbai also shrugged.

“Ol’ Five, I know you’re in a bad mood because you just broke up, but you don’t need to say this sort of crazy stuff, right. The cost of Latte is at least several tens of thousands, right?” As the big bro of the dorm, Kang Peng was a bit more rational in what he said.

“I’m just asking if you’re going or not,” Ye Zichen replied forcefully.

“Going.”

Everyone in the dorm answered together. Damn, aren't you an idiot if you don't go when someone's treating you!

“Then let's start the night at Latte!”

Chapter 3 – Old Lord Taishang's Great Recovery Pill

Latte Business Club.

Ye Zichen and co. sat in a middle-sized room. The expensive cost of this place was not something that students like them could normally afford. Even though Kang Peng and co. are already trying to save money, the table of food still cost more than fifty thousand.

“I wonder where Ol’ Three went, he isn’t answering my call either. That brat...”

Kang Peng shook his head with a sigh. Ol’ Three was called Su Yiyun. He was a rich second-generation, and was the most dissolute person in the dorm.

The main reason was that he had a good dad. Every day, he would just skip class and hang out outside. Although he was a rich second-generation, his relationship with the others in the dorm was okay, since he didn’t have that sort of normal young master temper.

His only flaw was that he was stingy.

Meanwhile, it could be said that Ye Zichen completely ignored everything around him and merely thought about snatching red packets.

You couldn't help but to say that the speed of people snatching up the various red packets in this deity group was really quick. Quite a few deities had given out red packets already, but he didn't manage to get anything at all.

Especially when the fairy maiden that managed the Heavenly Peach Garden gave out red packets. The red packets were the celestial peaches from the Heavenly Peach Garden.

Ye Zichen was too slow, so he didn't get it, causing him to feel silently regretful.

Just at this moment, Old Lord Taishang, suddenly spoke up in the group.

Old Lord Taishang: My celestial friends, how are you doing?

There was no reply.

Old Lord Taishang: Cough, cough. I saw you guys chatting quite energetically earlier, why did you all start lurking when I appeared? <Insert 3 awkward emoji>

Monkey King: I, Old Sun, is here, which one of them dares to speak to you? I'm telling you geezer, Old Sun remembers all about you trying to refine Old Sun!

Old Lord Taishang: Insolent monkey, you are actually still bearing a grudge after so long?

Erlang Shen: Just ignore that damn monkey.

Monkey King: My son, did your dog starve to death yet?

All of a sudden, a flaming contest between deities appeared once again. Upon seeing that, Ye Zichen chuckled.

“Fifth Bro, what are you doing?” Zhu Yunbai went over, ever since they had arrived in the room, Ye Zichen had been playing around with his phone.

“C’mon, Ol’ Five, since we came to play, can’t you stop messing around with your crappy phone?”

“The hell do you guys know, laozi is snatching red packets.”

All of his roommates let out sounds of contempt. My god, he already used several tens of thousands, yet he was still snatching red packets.

Dingdong.

Just as the Monkey King and Erlang Shen were flaming each other, a huge red packet suddenly appeared in the group.

The person that had sent it was Old Lord Taishang.

Ye Zichen saw it and quickly reacted, immediately snatching it up.

Great Recovery Pill x1

Erlang Shen: Damn, laozi didn't get it again.

Monkey King: My son, it's karma.

Just who was the Monkey King? He was an existence that could create several tens of thousands of monkeys by blowing on a few hairs that he plucked off his body. While he was flaming Erlang Shen, several tens of thousands of monkeys could have been holding phones in order to snatch up red packets.

These two people had held grudges for several thousand years, both of them were war gods of the celestial realm, so nobody dared to stop them.

Ye Zichen didn't have the time to watch the two of them flame each other. He clicked open the Treasure Chest and saw a black pill lying there.

Great Recovery Pill – Old Lord Taishang refined it for fun when he had nothing to do.

“Tsk, Old Lord Taishang is too petty.”

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes, but when he saw the effects, he instantly was astonished.

Effect: Can save someone from the brink of death.

Deities were truly amazing, even something that they refined for fun could save a person's life.

What's the most important thing in a person's life? It's not money, not power, it was their life!

Without your life, what the hell can you do with money and power.

Had you never heard of those words, the greatest depression in life was that you died without spending all your money.

"Ol' Five, stop f*cking snatching it, come and drink a bit with us bros," Kang Peng also walked over with his wine glass. Thinking that he had gotten enough rewards for the day, and the fact that he came here to play with his brothers, he put his phone away and started drinking cheerfully with his roommates.

After drinking three rounds, they were unable to hold the water in any longer, so they walked towards the toilet together.

"Why are you guys here?"

Ye Zichen and co. saw the Ol' Three in the dorm, Su Yiyun, letting out some water just after they had entered the toilet.

“F*cking hell, laozi was looking for you, and yet you are f*cking hiding here. Are you afraid of us making you pay?”

Kang Peng wrapped his arm around Su Yiyun's neck, while everyone else also smiled evilly.

Su Yiyun scratched his head rather awkwardly. To be truthful, it really was like that.

“Tsk, I'm telling you, we aren't going to screw you over, from now on, we have Fifth Bro,” Zhu Yunbai scoffed, just as Su Yiyun was getting curious about why they had come here.

Hearing Ol' Six's words, Su Yiyun exclaimed.

“Ol' Five, what happened, did you win a lottery?”

“Something like that.”

Ye Zichen answered ambiguously.

“Good brat, I never would have thought that you were an amazing person after you cheated food and drinks from us for so long.”

After chatting a bit more, Su Yiyun looked at the time and said.

“Alright, bros, just go and play, I came here with my dad to host some people, I still have to go back to accompany them, so I’ll leave first.”

“See ya.”

Everyone chuckled softly. Just at that moment, a figure frantically ran over from outside the toilet door.

He spoke a few words beside Su Yiyun’s ear, causing Su Yiyun’s expression to immediately change. He quickly left them behind with that person, causing Ye Zichen and co. to raise their eyebrows.

“Ol’ Three ran into some trouble, right?”

“How about we go and have a look?”

“Let’s not, he’s hosting, what would it be like if we went over?”

“But something seems to have happened over at Third Bro’s place.”

“Ol’ Five, what do you think?”

Everyone set their gazes on Ye Zichen. At this moment, he became everyone's decision maker.

“Go and have a look.”

...

“Did you bring Chief Liu's cardiac medications?”

The room was in a complete mess, with the man sitting in the very middle showing the face of suffering.

“Nope.”

“Then call the ambulance quickly.”

At that moment, Ye Zichen and co. also appeared in the room. Seeing that, a man, who looked pretty much identical to Si Yiyun, asked with a frown.

“Who are you?”

“Dad, these are my classmates.”

Su Yiyun was also completely confused, he quickly walked over to Ye Zichen and co.'s side and said with his eyebrows raised.

“Why did you guys show up?”

“I felt like you ran into trouble just now, so we came to have a look.” Kang Peng frowned, then said while raising his eyebrows towards the man on the sofa, “What’s the situation?”

“Chief Liu had a heart attack, but we didn’t bring any medication. We were just about to call the ambulance. Don’t stay here, if something really happens, that’ll drag you guys into it.”

Su Yiyun pushed them out towards the door forcefully. At the same time, Ye Zichen’s expression moved slightly as he touched his phone in his pocket.

Seeing that the person on the sofa was more or less dead, Ye Zichen thought to himself, it should be fine if I use the Great Recovery Pill, right?

He quietly moved off to the side, then clicked on Treasure Chest in his WeChat.

The Great Recovery pill was still lying calmly in the Treasure Chest. Ye Zichen had already wanted to use this Great Recovery Pill to save a life, but when he was truly about to withdraw it, he hesitated.

This was just something could only be gotten by chance, if he sold it, wouldn’t he be able to get an astronomical amount for it?

“Damn, something’s going to happen to my bro, and I’m still thinking about money...”

He clenched his teeth.

Withdraw Great Recovery Pill x1.

Zoom.

An exquisite jade bottle appeared in Ye Zichen’s hands.

F*ck, it really got withdrawn.

When he opened the bottle, the faint smell of the pill rushed into his nostrils. However, with but a smell of the aroma, Ye Zichen already felt like he was really refreshed.

This product of Old Lord Taishang was truly exceptional.

Ye Zichen held the jade bottle in his hands and ran over quickly.

“Wait a moment, I can save Chief Liu’s life.”

Chapter 4 – My Occupation Is A Vet

Not only were the people from the dorm were amazed, even the people in the room blanked out.

“Ye-zi, this isn’t a place for you to just say random things.”

Su Yiyun lowered his face and warned Ye Zichen in his ear. He knew that Ye Zichen did study medicine, but it was veterinary medicine.

“If I say that I can save him, then I can. Don’t you trust me?”

“It’s not that I don’t trust you. Chief Liu is the police chief of the city’s police department, your entire life will be screwed if you just arbitrarily blurt things out.”

Don’t just think that Su Yiyun was only stingy and unruly, he was truly good to his brothers at the dorm.

“Believe me, I really can save him.”

Ye Zichen patted Su Yiyun’s shoulders and walked towards the middle of the room, stopping right in front of Chief Liu, who was on the brink of death.

Everyone in the room was in a state of unease, because all of them would get dragged into it if anything happened to Chief Liu

here.

The General Manager of Latte, who was covered in sweat, also stood in the room while being unsure of what to do. Ye Zichen reached out his hand to lift Chief Liu's eyelid briefly. Seeing that, the policeman beside him immediately grabbed his hand.

“Who are you?”

“If you don't want your Chief Liu to die, then stop it and stand on the side!”

Ye Zichen roared, shocking the policeman with his imposing vigor, and causing him to not be able to utter a single word.

“Great Recovery Pill, it's all on you now.”

Ye Zichen clenched his teeth and poured the Great Recovery Pill out of the jade bottle. The moment that the pill came out, the fresh scent of the pill diffused through the room.

“Find a way to make your Chief Liu swallow it!”

Ye Zichen yelled at the policeman beside him. That policeman frowned then immediately interrogated him.

“What the hell is this? Is Chief Liu someone who you can try your medicine on?”

“Then what can you do, it was a sudden heart attack. By the time the ambulance gets here, you’ll have to go to the funeral parlor to show your loyalties towards your Chief.”

Ye Zichen’s words were terrible to the extreme, because this puny policeman had stopped him over and over again, making him very unhappy.

Damn, laozi is reluctant to use Old Lord Taishang’s heavenly pill!

“What do you think you are saying!?”

The policeman immediately stepped up to slap him. However, Su Yiyun’s father Su Qilong grabbed hold of the policeman’s arm.

“Office Zhang, what this child says is the truth, you might as well let him try.”

“Try?” Officer Zhang snorted, “He said he can save Chief Liu’s life after taking out a crappy pill, who knows if he has any ill intentions.”

“He is my classmate, be more respectful when you speak.” Su Yiyun also became annoyed, although he didn’t know what Ye Zichen was planning, he did trust Ye Zichen’s personality.

“Little fellow, how certain are you?” Su Qilong also asked with a

worried expression. He already felt the extraordinariness of the pill the moment it appeared.

“A hundred percent,” Ye Zichen said with certainty.

“A hundred percent, I cannot possibly let Chief Liu take this sort of risk,” Officer Zhang laughed coldly once again.

“I think you are the one to have ill intentions, right?” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and said, “You say that you don’t want Chief Liu to take the risk, but is his situation not dangerous right now? You have been continuously wasting time with us, could it be that you want to use this chance to get promoted? It’s true that Chief Liu probably brought you over in this sort of situation because you are pretty close to him, but at the same time, you are also his direct subordinate. If anything really happens to Chief Liu, then wouldn’t you get promoted?”

Ye Zichen’s words were deadly, and this accusation caused Officer Zhang’s face to turn green.

He roared at Ye Zichen, saying that he was making a baseless accusation, but Ye Zichen merely responded with a cold laugh, “Stop f*cking bullshitting here, laozi needs to save him! Third Bro, control this Officer Zhang.”

“Alright.”

Su Yiyun immediately wrapped his arms around Officer Zhang,

while Ye Zichen put the pill into Chief Liu's mouth.

Then, he took a cup of water from the tea table and directly helped the pill to go down Chief Liu's throat.

“What you're doing is murder!”

Officer Zhang swore with anxiousness and anger, while Su Qilongn said with squinted eyes.

“I'll take responsibility if anything happens.”

“Can you take responsibility?!” Officer Zhang shouted at the room. Everyone in the room became extremely worried, Ye Zichen's earlier actions had tied everyone down onto the same line.

After a minute.

Cough, cough.

Chief Liu, who was on the sofa, suddenly coughed intensely and opened his eyes. Seeing that, everyone in the room let out a long sigh of relief. Chief Liu also muttered and patted his chest, “I barely escaped from the jaws of death again.”

“Chief Liu, you're alright!”

Officer Zhang escaped from Su Yiyun's restraint and ran over. Chief Liu laughed out loud and replied, "Haha, I live."

The moment he finished, he touched his chest and felt that it was warm.

"Who saved me?"

"It's him," Su Yiyun pointed at Ye Zichen and smiled lightly. His brother had actually saved Chief Liu.

"Oh, it's actually this young man?" Chief Liu stood up from the sofa and nodded. "You're a doctor?"

"Mhmm, a vet."

"A vet!" Chief Liu momentarily blanked. As Ye Zichen was afraid of him misunderstanding, he immediately explained, "I didn't save you using any medical knowledge, I relied on a Great Recovery Pill."

"Great Recovery Pill, interesting."

Chief Liu shook his head and looked meaningfully at Ye Zichen, before taking out a name card from his pocket to hand to him.

"Old bro owes you a life. This is my private number. Great Recovery Pill sounds like something rather important, but old bro

doesn't have much to give to you. If you need anything in the future, then call this number, old bro will try his best to help you."

"Thank you, Chief Liu."

"What Chief Liu, I'm just a few years older than you. If you don't mind, then call me Liu-ge."

"Liu-ge."

"Haha, good."

Chief Liu laughed loudly, then looked towards Su Qilong, who was standing on the side.

"Old Su, you've seen how my body is. Let's hang out next time."

"Sure."

When Chief Liu and Officer Zhang left, Su Qilong looked at the young men in the room and smiled.

"I won't get in the way of you young people, go and enjoy, I'll go back first. Oh yeah, I wonder what you are called?"

"Uncle Su, I'm called Ye Zichen."

“Ye Zichen, good name. Yiyun, thank your classmate properly.

“Alright.”

Su Qilong looked at Ye Zichen with a significant gaze, then left the room.

The moment he left, everyone else in the room surrounded Ye Zichen.

“Ye-zi, what miraculous medicine was that? It was actually so great!”

“Ye-zi, you can’t have heart disease and just gave Chief Liu an [Instant Cardio-Reliever Pill](#), right?”

Instant Cardio Reliever Pill is a Chinese pill that works by increasing blood flow to reduce heart pain.

Everyone laughed as they smoked, while Su Yiyun held a glass of red wine and walked in front of Ye Zichen.

“Ye-zi, thank you.”

Then he drank the entire glass of red wine. Ye Zichen patted his shoulders and said.

“We’re all brothers, no need to treat me in such a foreign manner!”

“True that,” Su Yiyun chuckled, then called the waiter over and ordered a bunch of famous wines. “Tonight, we’re not going back till we’re drunk.”

Chapter 5 – Great Sage Sun's Fiery Eyes Of Truth

Ye Zichen crawled out from his dormitory bed, while rubbing his throbbing head.

He had gotten terribly drunk due to Su Yiyun the previous night. He was so drunk that he couldn't even remember how he returned to the dorm the previous night.

He quickly picked up his phone. The chat group was full of deities, it was only a coincidence that he, a mere mortal, could even enter it. It would be terrible if he got kicked.

He was fortunate that the chat group was still there. The deities were still chatting tirelessly. Ye Zichen scrolled up, and saw that they had sent a few red packets in the middle of the night, but since Ye Zichen was drunk to the point of being unconscious, he naturally didn't manage to snatch any.

Ye Zichen felt a slight sadness for that, but he still smiled.

There were still plenty of days left in the future. The red packets were sent every day, did he need to be worried about not getting any?

Just when he finished washing up, a bunch of people in police clothing appeared at the dorm.

“Who is Ye Zichen?”

“I am.”

Ye Zichen was confused, he didn't do anything bad, why did the police come to look for him?

Could something have happened to Chief Liu?

F*ck, but that was the Great Recovery Pill from Old Lord Taishang, there shouldn't be any issues!

“We received a report suspecting you have committed fraud. Come with us to the station.”

Yao Yue sat on the sofa in the police station. She was the person that had reported him.

She had crazily snatched back all of the underworld money. The scratch marks on her were proof of how much she fought for it.

She had thought that she finally managed to rise, but when she looked at the money, she found out that it was actually underworld money.

It could be said that she had wasted her time and got nothing out of it.

Since she was unable to accept that, she called the police.

“I guessed that it was you.”

Just when Ye Zichen walked through the door, he couldn't help but raise his eyebrows.

Yao Yue stood up from the sofa and screamed with a sullen expression.

“Ye Zichen, you actually tricked me!”

“Aiya, that's weird, what did I trick you out of?”

“You actually tricked me with two boxes of underworld money.”

“Girl, be more careful when you speak. I did smash you with underworld money, but I merely smashed you. What did I get from you? Did I take any cash away from you?”

Ye Zichen revealed a cold expression. This sort of women that was so obsessed with money couldn't even tell the difference between underworld money and real money.

He truly was blind before.

“The police station isn't a place for you two to argue, come in

with us.”

The policemen took Ye Zichen towards the interrogation room, while Yao Yue also walked in behind them.

Just after entering the building with the interrogation room, Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and smiled.

“Officer Zhang, how have you been?”

“Comrade Little Ye, why are you here?”

Officer Zhang was actually a pretty nice person, he just merely didn’t want Chief Liu to take the risk the previous day, causing him to seem a little aggressive.

When Ye Zichen had saved Chief Liu, he had wanted to thank him, but he just never found the opportunity.

Just at this moment, Yao Yue also walked in from the outside. Officer Zhang instantly blanked and asked.

“You’re the swindler?”

“Officer Zhang, don’t make fun of me. Do you think I look like a swindler?”

Ye Zichen shrugged helplessly.

“He is a swindler, he is...”

Yao Yue got so worked up, like she was about to eat someone. Officer Zhang frowned and slammed his hands down on the table.

“Shut up.”

His actions freaked Yao Yue out. She immediately stopped daring to make a scene, and merely sat quietly down on a chair.

“Tell the me situation...”

Ye Zichen spoke about the entire situation, including the relationship between him and Yao Yue.

Hearing that, Officer Zhang’s gaze towards Yao Yue turned a bit hostile. When Ye Zichen finished, he added.

“Officer Zhang, smashing someone with money is my mistake, but it doesn’t reach the level of fraud, right? Look, can I leave now? If you can’t solve this, then I’ll just call Chief Liu?”

“Don’t bother him, Chief Liu is still resting. I can handle this.”

Thus, Ye Zichen walked out of the police station without any

harm. Just after he walked out of the entrance, he saw a red Ferrari 458 parked at the entrance, with Su Yiyun pacing with his head down just outside the door.

“Ol’ Three, why are you here?”

Su Yiyun immediately raised his head and ran over to Ye Zichen’s side, then patted his shoulders.

“You alright?”

“Tsk, can something small like them trouble me?” Ye Zichen smiled in contempt. Yao Yue and co. were a bit too immature trying to deal with him.

“I knew that you would be fine,” As Su Yiyun spoke, he took out a bank card from his pocket. “There’s two hundred thousand in this card, it’s my dad’s thanks for you.”

“I can’t accept the money.”

“Stop pretending, my dad said that your pill was definitely worth more than that. We already got an advantage by giving you two hundred thousand. Just hurry and put it away. Don’t you like to rip off rich people? My dad is one.”

“Then, I suppose it would be rude of me to decline.”

Su Yiyun only smiled when Ye Zichen put the card in his pocket.

“Come, older brother will bring you to see something.”

As Ye Zichen sat in Su Yiyun’s sports car, he kept on watching the chat group.

What was strange was that nobody actually sent red packets through the entire morning, they were all chatting about something like reformation of the Heavenly Court.

Since Ye Zichen couldn’t understand it, he just put his phone away and checked out the car.

“Ol’ Three, what exactly does your family do?”

“My dad just a little bit of trading.”

“Little bit of trading?” Ye Zichen showed an expression of disbelief.

Su Yiyun shrugged and smiled, “Don’t not believe it, I’m going to bring you somewhere later, the people there are all super rich people.”

Dingdong.

When Ye Zichen's phone suddenly rang, he used the quickest speed possible to take out his phone. Su Yiyun at his side smiled and said.

“Girlfriend?”

“It's not like you don't know it was just finished.”

“Then couldn't you have gotten a new one?”

Su Yiyun did not comfort Ye Zichen like the other people in the dorm. The main reason was because they had different ways of living, so they also thought differently.

Ye Zichen ignored him and focused on watching the chat group.

Just now, the [Immortality Peach Fairy](#) had sent out a red packet, and obviously, when Ye Zichen went to snatch it, they were already gone.

The Immortality Peach Fairy is the fairy that guards the Immortality Peach Garden in the Heavenly Court.

He clicked to see the luck of other people, and found that the Monkey King had the best luck.

At the same time, the group was also chatting about this.

Immortality Peach Fairy: Great Sage, you snatch red packets

every single time, but I haven't seen you send any. That isn't good, right? <smirk>

Monkey King: Why should Old Sun send any?

Zhu Bajie: Senior Martial Brother, don't be so stingy. Even the fairy sent some, it's not good if you don't.

Erlang Shen: This monkey is so stingy.

Without saying anything, a red packet was sent with a ring, as if Erlang Shen's words had angered the Monkey King.

Snatch.

Fiery Eyes of Truth Secret Scripture Level 1 x1

Fiery Eyes of Truth.

Ye Zichen momentarily blanked, then felt his heart beat.

This can't f*cking be Great Sage Sun's Fiery Eyes of Truth, right? The godly ability that can identify demons and monsters.

When he took a look at everybody else's luck, he found that everyone else had gotten a peach.

Did I get the grand prize?

Ye Zichen couldn't help but to laugh idiotically. Hearing his maniacal laughter, Su Yiyun couldn't help but chuckle.

He's still saying that it's not his girlfriend?

But this is good as well, Ye Zichen can soften his heartache with a girlfriend, so he doesn't need to go and find one for him.

Ye Zichen, who was still fantasizing about having the Fiery Eyes of Truth like the Monkey King, suddenly found a friend request in his contact list.

Monkey King.

When he saw this friend request, Ye Zichen's hands shuddered, causing his phone to nearly fall out of his hands.

Crap, was he about to be found out?

Chapter 6 – Giving A Private Packet To Great Sage Sun

Su Yiyun saw Ye Zichen's strange reaction.

Thus, he parked the car by the side of the road and asked with raised eyebrows.

“What happened?”

“Nothing, just drive.”

Ye Zichen waved his hand towards him, but his eyes continued to stare at the friend request on the screen, while he was unsure of what to do.

He had a pretty much had a good understanding of this group, they were definitely a group of deities.

It was already a bug that a mere mortal like him had gotten in. Does the Monkey King suddenly adding him as a friend mean that his good days were coming to an end?

F*ck, if it's something good, then it isn't trouble; if it's trouble, then it can't be avoided.

Ye Zichen clenched his teeth and chose to accept it.

Dingdong.

Just after accepting the friend request, the Monkey King sent a message over.

“I, Old Sun, have been paying attention to you for quite a while. You snatch red packets everyday without saying anything. What, are you afraid of them making you send red packets?”

He even added four smirk emojis behind it.

Ye Zichen’s heart jumped as he looked at the words.

If he didn’t reply in a satisfying way, then it might be over for him!

Just as he was hesitating about how to reply, the Monkey King sent another message over.

“Hehe, I, Old Sun, am not someone that would do something that would take a loss. You just got the secret scripture for my Fiery Eyes of Truth. Although you definitely won’t successfully learn it, you should clearly know that I, Old Sun, relies on this to be like a fish with water in the Heavenly Court. Shouldn’t you show some goodwill?”

After this, he showed two smirk emojis again.

Some goodwill!

Does it mean that Great Sage Sun found him to get a private packet?

Ye Zichen felt rather helpless. He didn't know what he should send at all. He can't exactly send a hundred kuai to Great Sage Sun.

Great Sage Sun wouldn't be able to use it!

Dingdong.

Intimacy Mode activated.

Intimacy Levels: Cold, Friendly, Trusted, Respect, Worship.

Monkey King's current intimacy level: Friendly.

Ye Zichen saw that there was "Intimacy Level: Friendly (100)" behind the Monkey King's name on their chat. He was 100 from Trusted.

What the hell was this intimacy level?

However, judging from the way the Monkey King was talking to him, it was friendly, so it means that it probably wouldn't be found

out.

The most important thing right now was how he was supposed to send a private red packet to the Monkey King!

“Are you pretending to be AFK with I, Old Sun? Fine, Old Sun will @ you in the group.”

Ye Zichen definitely knew about Great Sage Sun’s bad temper, due to watching Journey to the West since he was young. If he doesn’t satisfy this monkey, this “Friendly” might become “Cold”.

He definitely had to calm him down right now.

“Great Sage Sun, wait a moment, this little deity will immediately send it to you.”

“That’s more like it, hurry up!”

The Monkey King pretty much replied instantaneously with three sunglasses emoji behind it.

Ye Zichen clicked on “send red packet” with the mindset of just trying.

Ding.

It was different from him normally sending red packets, after clicking on it, the screen immediately showed a square like the one used to scan QR codes.

Slap.

Ye Zichen slapped his thigh with force. F*ck, after thinking about it for so long, it's actually like this.

There wasn't anything he could really send to Great Sage Sun at the moment. Judging from Great Sage Sun's personality, Ye Zichen thought that he probably likes some nice things to eat or fun things to play with.

“Stop at the store in front of us.”

“What is it?”

Su Yiyun was completely confused. Ye Zichen had been weird even since he got in the car. Su Yiyun really would have been freaked out by Ye Zichen's sudden actions if his mentality wasn't that good.

“I want to buy a bit of stuff to eat.”

Not long later, Su Yiyun parked the car in front of the store. Ye Zichen hurriedly ran inside, then ran out again a short time later.

When he came out, he held a row of Wahaha Calcium Milk.

“What did you buy this for?”

Su Yiyun asked with a surprised expression the moment Ye Zichen got on the car.

“Don’t mind me.”

At this moment, the Monkey King’s temper rose again. In just three minutes time, there were ten-odd messages all hurrying Ye Zichen to send to the red packet.

He clicked on “send red packet”, and the scanner appeared once again.

“Buddha, bless me, this has to succeed.”

Scanning. Successfully recognized.

Dingdong.

A pure red packet immediately appeared on the screen.

Haha, it really worked!

The Monkey King received your red packet.

“What is this?”

Seeing that the product arrived, Ye Zichen swallowed. That is so f*cking amazing, it really could send it over.

However, the most important thing right now was to explain to Great Sage Sun about how Wahaha should be drunk.

Using approximately three minutes time, Ye Zichen explained about how Wahaha should be drunk. To which, the Monkey King replied “I’ll give it a shot”, then disappeared.

Dingdong.

“Daoist friend, what kind of treasure is this?”

As Ye Zichen looked at what the Monkey King asked, the corner of his mouth slowly lifted.

He had truly judged correctly, this Monkey King really likes this sort of stuff.

“This is something that this little deity found from a certain secret place.”

“Do you have anymore, send Old Sun a bit more.”

“Treasures are naturally rare. The ones sent to Great Sage was all that this little deity had left.”

“Tsk, petty.”

The Monkey King added three contempt emojis behind it, clearly showing that he didn't believe what Ye Zichen said.

“Alright, Old Sun is going to leave some to drink. Old Sun is very satisfied about your red packet, so Old Sun won't @ you in the group.”

“Thank you, Great Sage.”

Ding.

Monkey King's intimacy level with you has increased by 30, you still require 70 to reach Trusted.

Although Ye Zichen didn't know what exactly intimacy level was used for, but it looked like a high intimacy level was definitely useful.

This encounter with the Monkey King allowed Ye Zichen to learn how to send private red packets, so it seemed like his life in the WeChat group would be even more interesting in the future.

Of course, the most important thing was the secret scripture for the Fiery Eyes of Truth.

Treasure Chest, withdraw.

Do you want to learn the secret scripture – Fiery Eyes of Truth?

Yes.

A light flashed in front of his eyes, then immediately afterwards, Ye Zichen felt that his eyes were much more clear. However, there didn't seem to be anything else that was special.

He turned towards Su Yiyun and looked.

Zoom.

Flowered boxers.

No no.

Why can he see the boxers he was wearing.

Ye Zichen quickly opened his eyes and clenched his fist. Damn, this Fiery Eyes of Truth is really amazing!

If he can use it on the school beauty, Su Yan...

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen had a lecherous look on his face.

The place Su Yiyun brought Ye Zichen to was an antique street. This street would sell antiques all year long, but most of them were fakes.

“What did you bring me here for, I can’t afford anything!”

“What do you mean you can’t afford it, these are all counterfeits, if you like something, then I’ll give you an entire truck of them.”

Su Yiyun replied indifferently. Hearing that, Ye Zichen momentarily blanked.

Counterfeits.

When he glanced over these antiques with his Fiery Eyes of Truth, he was unable to tell if they were real or fake due to never seeing the difference between them before.

“Look around here for a moment, I’m going to get a friend. I’ll introduce you later.”

“Sure, go.”

After Su Yiyun left, Ye Zichen started wandering around on the antique street.

Since Su Yiyun had told him that these were all fakes, he merely looked around from an appreciation angle.

“Boss, have a look to see how much this vase can sell for?”

A foreign accent caught Ye Zichen’s attention. To be more precise, it was the vase in his hands.

This vase was different from the other products on the antique street. There was a faint purple aura surrounding it.

Chapter 7 – The Painting In The Vase

The person that brought the blue and white porcelain vase over was a suspicious looking young man, he didn't look like anyone proper.

On the other hand, the pawn shop owner looked rather kind with a beard in the shape of “八”.

Hearing the young man's question, the owner walked over and took the blue and white porcelain in his hands, then carefully examined it with a magnifying glass.

The blue and white porcelain was about a meter tall. When it appeared, many people came over to watch, but those that were more experienced quickly shook their heads and left.

It was clear that it was a fake.

The pawn shop owner was naturally someone who could tell. After looking at it a little and noticing that it was a fake, he lost interest.

“Shop owner...”

“Your blue and white porcelain is a modern forgery. Such a large fellow would just take up space in my shop, so please take it away.”

“Shop owner, you can’t be wanting to intentionally push the price down. Just name the price, if I think it’s suitable, then I’ll sell it.”

The shop owner clearly wasn’t a petty person. He didn’t get angry, and instead laughed when he heard the young man say that.

“I, Liu Yong, rely on trust to stay in the antique street for ten odd years. You can casually take it to anyone with a bit of experience, ask them if I lied to you.”

All of a sudden, many people that were a bit more experienced all sounded out their agreements.

Actually, the young man also clearly knew that this blue and white porcelain was fake, he merely wanted to try his luck to see if he can scare anyone.

However, his brain might be offline, since he actually came to the antique street to try and trick people.

“Wait a sec.”

Ye Zichen stopped the young man, and pointed at the blue and white porcelain.

“How much do you want for it?”

The young man's eyes shone, it seems like his luck wasn't bad, there really was an idiot that fell for it.

“Little fellow, his blue and white porcelain is a fake, it is also rather crudely made. It would take up a lot of space in the living room. It isn't worth collecting at all.”

Liu Yong couldn't help but make a reminder out of good will. When the young man heard that someone wanted to destroy his business, he shouted out.

“You evil businessmen! You worked together with the bystanders to trick me. Right now, someone that understands the industry wants to buy it and you want to accuse me. Do you believe that I won't pour a bucket of black dog blood onto your shop at night?”

The moment he finished speaking, Liu Yong's expression blanked.

Businessmen did avoid this sort of stuff. What's more, he wasn't related to Ye Zichen at all, so all he could do was make a simple reminder.

He sighed lightly, then shook his head and returned into the shop. The young man also rubbed his hands with a smile.

“Boss, how much are you preparing to pay?”

“The pawn shop owner said that yours is a forgery just. It isn't

really fake, right?”

Ye Zichen pretended like he didn't understand anything and asked carefully.

He really doesn't understand!

The young man was really happy. It seems like no one can stop the fortune coming!

“Tsk, that old fellow just wanted to push down the price to take my vase. I'm telling you, boss. This porcelain was passed down from my ancestors, it definitely isn't a fake.”

“I think so too.”

Ye Zichen nodded like he was convinced. Hearing their conversation, the pawn shop owner let out a long sigh again. He wanted to speak up, but chose not to when he saw the young man's stare.

“My grandpa really likes blue and white porcelain, and I think yours is pretty good, so I want to buy it to for him. How much are you looking to sell it for?”

The young man raised three fingers.

Three hundred thousand. He really is greedy.

Ye Zichen laughed coldly in his heart.

“That-That’s too expensive, right. I don’t have that much pocket money. Never mind, I’m not going to buy it.”

Ye Zichen pretended to turn his head in pity and left. Seeing that scene, the pawn shop owner actually let out a sigh of relief for him.

However, that young man got anxious.

How could it be okay for my prey to just leave.

“Boss, say, how much can you pay. My mother is ill and urgently needing money for the treatment.”

The young man was disrespectful enough, he actually said this sort of stuff to con some money off people.

Ye Zichen’s eyes flashed with coldness for a brief moment, then raised five fingers.

“I only have fifty thousand.”

“Fine, it’s sold to you, boss.”

The young man acted like he was forced to give it up. Ye Zichen

did not hesitate at all, and withdrew fifty thousand kuai from the bank to hand to the young man.

Once the blue and white vase was in his hands, Ye Zichen touched all over it like he treasured it a lot.

“Hehe, look at that poor and pedantic look, he’s treating a fake vase he bought as treasure.”

A mocking laugh sounded out from the crowd. When Ye Zichen raised his head to look, he saw Guo Qiang standing at a place not far away, while holding Yao Yue’s waist.

Ye Zichen didn’t pay any attention to him, and looked towards the mouth of the vase.

There was no doubt that this vase was fake. The purple aura should be from something within the vase.

Actually, he couldn’t be sure of what sort of treasure was in the vase, he was betting.

If he lost it, then he’ll just treat it as paying for a lesson; if he won...

Hehehehe!

“Ol’ Five, I’ve been looking for you for a while, why are you

here!”

At this moment, Su Yiyun walked over with a dignified looking man.

“You bought this blue and white porcelain vase?”

Su Yiyun asked weirdly as he looked at the large case beside Ye Zichen.

“I just bought it.”

“For how much?”

This time, the person that spoke wasn't Su Yiyun, but the man beside him.

Su Yiyun also chuckled lightly and introduced him.

“Ol' Five, let me introduce you. Xiao Hai, he's definitely a super rich person.”

At the same time, he also smiled towards Xiao Hai.

“This is my bro, Ye Zichen.”

After both people nodded towards each other, Xiao Hai spoke

once more, “How much did you buy this blue and white porcelain for?”

“Fifty thousand,” Before Ye Zichen said anything, Guo Qiang already replied with a cynical tone. “The poor is poor, treating a fake blue and white porcelain that you bought with fifty thousand kuai as treasure...”

“Fake?”

Su Yiyun raised his eyebrows, he completely did not understand anything about it. However, Xiao Hai, who was beside him, was an expert.

“Mhmm, it’s fake. Just treat fifty thousand kuai as paying for a lesson, it’s not expensive.”

Xiao Hai nodded without denying anything. Yet, Guo Qiang smiled cynically once again.

“Fifty thousand kuai indeed isn’t much for Young Master Xiao, but he earned a long time for him to get fifty thousand kuai.”

Su Yiyun frowned. He didn’t want to pay any attention to Guo Qiang at all.

Guo Qiang was known around school, and he also knew him as well. However, Guo Qiang only had just his dad’s tiny factory, so he wasn’t in his sights at all.

Xiao Hai also felt the strangeness in it, and raised his eyebrows.

“You have a grudge?”

“Kind of, the woman beside the guy is my ex.”

Ye Zichen was rather carefree about it. Xiao Hai nodded like he understood, while his gaze towards Ye Zichen changed a bit.

“Lil’ Yun’s friend is also the friend of mine. It seems like you’re about the same age as Xiao Yun. I’m a few years older than you, if you don’t mind, then you can call me Hai-ge. Just this blue and white porcelain as something I gifted to you. Old Huang, bring me fifty thousand kuai.”

“Thank you, Hai-ge, but I can afford fifty thousand. A fake is fake, just treat it as me buying it to hear it be smashed.”

Ye Zichen smiled carefreely, and picked up a rock from the ground to smash towards the blue and white porcelain.

Neither Xiao Hai and Su Yiyun momentarily blanked, not having expected Ye Zichen to not mind it at all.

However, Xiao Hai quickly smiled.

This Ye Zichen was an interesting person.

However, Guo Qiang was different...

“What are you pretending for, you must be really hurting, right.”

The continuous mocking even caused Xiao Hai to be a bit unhappy. Ye Zichen had already called him Hai-ge just now, isn't this not giving him face!

Crack.

At this moment, the blue and white porcelain also cracked.

As the shattered china scattered onto the floor, the pieces once again proved that it was indeed a fake.

Yet...

The blue and white porcelain was indeed broken.

But the scroll of a painting was revealed from within the shattered remains.

Chapter 8 – Painting Of Astronomical Value

Everybody was momentarily dazed the moment that the painting appeared.

The owner of the painting clearly didn't want other people to know of its existence, since he had stuck the painting to the inside of the vase.

Ye Zichen also smiled, the purple aura was coming from this painting.

He took the painting out and unrolled it...

“Real.”

Liu Yong and Xiao Hai pretty much said it at the same time.

“Young Master Xiao, let's go and admire the painting together within the store?”

Liu Yong invited Xiao Hai inside.

Guo Qiang's face nearly turned purple. He stayed in the antique street through most of the year, so he could naturally tell that the painting was real.

A real work by [Bada Shanren](#) cost at least five million based on

current market prices.

Damn, that was really bullshit luck.

“Qiang-ge, that painting...”

“What painting, let’s go!”

Guo Qiang replied angrily and left the antique street with Yao Yue.

“I really didn’t think that there was actually one of Bada Shanren’s real works within this fake blue and white porcelain.”

Liu Yong couldn’t help but exclaim, yet, his face also revealed a wry smile.

The young man had gone to him to sell the blue and white porcelain first, if he had bought it, then the painting would naturally be his.

However, Liu Yong was someone that could accept things, what is meant to come will arrive, what is not meant to be should not be forced. This was something that he understood.

While Xiao Hai and Liu Yong, the two art lovers admired the painting within the store, Su Yiyun and Ye Zichen smoked outside as they chuckled.

“Ye-zi, you’re rich.”

“What?”

“Did you see Hai-ge’s expression? I’m telling you, Hai-ge is a lover of paintings, if he wants to buy it, he would definitely give you an astronomical price.”

“Is that so...”

Ye Zichen replied absentmindedly. Of course he could tell that Xiao Hai was someone who loved paintings, but at the same time, he could tell that the pawn shop owner was the same.

If both of them wanted to buy it, what should he do...

Just at that moment, Xiao Hai and Liu Yong walked out of the shop.

Liu Yong carefully placed the painting back in Ye Zichen’s hands, then looked towards him with something to say, before stopping himself.

Xiao Hai also did the same.

“Little bro, can I talk about something with you?”

Liu Yong was the first to be unable to resist speaking up.

“Please speak.”

Ye Zichen sighed in his heart, it really happened....

“Are you selling this painting? I want to buy your painting at the market price. However, I promise you that I definitely will not sell this painting, I just like it that much!”

“I actually let you say it first,” Xiao Hai shook his head and smiled. “Actually, I also want to buy this painting. The market price for this painting is about five million, I can give you seven million!”

Hearing Xiao Hai’s price, Ye Zichen suddenly raised his eyebrows.

Damn, seven million!

On the other hand, Su Yiyun was much calmer, he clearly understood Xiao Hai’s ability after knowing him for so long.

“Boss, how much can you give me?”

“What can I say when Young Master Xiao already said seven million. I’m not afraid of you making fun of me, but the most I can

give is five million to buy it at market price.”

Liu Yong had a troubled expression. He was someone that loved calligraphies and paintings, when he saw the real work of Bada Shanren, he naturally thirsted for it.

Unfortunately, his opponent was Young Master Xiao...

“Sure, then I’ll sell this painting to the shop owner for five million.”

Ye Zichen hesitated momentarily, then placed the painting in the shop owner’s hands. At the same time, he also tried to explain his choice to Xiao Hai with a wry smile.

“Hai-ge, just now...”

“No need to explain to me, Boss Liu is someone that is famous for loving paintings like his own life within the circle. Selling it to him is the same as giving the painting a good home. I merely collect them, I don’t mind whether I have it or not.”

Xiao Hai waved his hands with a light smile.

After leaving the antique street, Ye Zichen couldn’t help but exclaim in his heart, while sitting in Su Yiyun’s car.

He had easily earned five million just by going to the antique

street once.

However, he clearly understood that this was only brought to him by that miraculous WeChat group.

Yet, he still felt a bit troubled. That Xiao Hai was clearly an impressive person. Someone that could pay seven million to buy a painting wasn't someone that he could just mess with.

“Ol’ Three, Hai-ge isn’t going to get mad over this, right?”

“You’re thinking too much,” Su Yiyun snickered. “Hai-ge isn’t someone that petty. I’m telling you, when you sold the painting to Liu Yong, Hai-ge even told me that you were an interesting person.”

“Interesting person? It’s not a derogatory term, right?”

“Yes, it is. Just wait for death. Hai-ge is someone with a reputation in Bingcheng, you actually sold it to Liu Yong instead of him. He is very angry, hurry up and let me safeguard your phone, bank card and stuff. If you die, then at least I can still hand it to auntie.”

Su Yiyun swore in annoyance. Hearing that, Ye Zichen actually smiled happily in his heart.

“Maniac.”

Buzz...

Ye Zichen's phone rang. When he picked up his phone, he raised his eyebrows. The person calling him was actually Chief Liu.

"Liu-ge, is your body fine?"

"Haha, it is," Chief Liu smiled happily. "Lil' Ye, thank you so much for yesterday."

"Liu-ge is too courteous."

"Haha, Lil' Ye, the reason Liu-ge called you this time is to beg something of you. Do you have time to come over to Liu-ge's?"

Ye Zichen was very nervous.

Chief Liu was the chief of the city's police department. He was merely a poor university student, Chief Liu begging him to do something didn't seem right.

However, since he said that, Ye Zichen couldn't very well refuse.

"Sure, then tell me the address Liu-ge, I'll come over now."

Su Yiyun asked after Ye Zichen hung up the call.

“A call from Chief Liu?”

Ye Zichen nodded without denying anything and thought about the contents of the call just now.

“Chief Liu told me to go over to his place, so take me over there.”

They decided to meet at a high-class business club. The moment he arrived, Ye Zichen saw Chief Liu and Officer Zhang standing outside the club, as if they were waiting for him.

“Lil’ Ye.”

“Chief-Chief Liu?”

If it wasn’t for him hearing Chief Liu’s voice, Ye Zichen really wouldn’t be able to recognize him.

Chief Liu was a normal middle-aged man over forty years old the previous day. Yet, as of right now, Ye Zichen would have suspected him of having plastic surgery if they had not met the previous day.

“You don’t recognize me?”

Chief Liu chuckled. His chuckle was full of power, then he nodded when he saw Su Yiyun, who stood off to the side.

“Isn’t this Old Su’s child?”

“Chief Liu.”

Su Yiyun nodded with a smile, but was very shocked in his heart.

When everyone sat down, Ye Zichen was still drowning in the shock that Chief Liu had brought him.

How did a person change like this after a day!

“Lil’ Ye, Liu-ge waited here for you for so long.”

“Chief Liu...”

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen didn’t know how to reply. Making the city’s police department’s police chief wait in person for him was definitely something he could brag about for a year.

“Don’t be courteous with your Liu-ge,” Chief Liu patted Ye Zichen’s shoulders. Then, a light flashed in his eyes, “Lil’ Ye, your family should be from there, right?”

“Ah?”

Ye Zichen was completely confused!

From there?

From where?

Seeing Ye Zichen's reaction, Chief Liu shook his head and smiled lightly.

“You're still playing dumb with Liu-ge, isn't it all thanks to your pill that Liu-ge can be like this.”

Chief Liu's heart disease could only be said to be a lifelong problem, yet, he found out his heart disease was completely cured after his checkup today. Even his metabolism had returned to what it was when he was thirty years old.

From Lil' Zhang's words, he was certain that Ye Zichen was definitely someone from there.

“Ah?”

Ye Zichen continued to be confused.

“Never mind! Liu-ge is also someone that knows the rules, so I won't ask too much.”

Chief Liu shook his head with a smile. Hearing that, Ye Zichen asked while he was completely confused.

“Chief Liu, what did you ask me to come here for?”

“I’m bringing you to see a friend.”

Chief Liu patted Ye Zichen’s shoulders and replied with a smile.

Chapter 9 – Peach Of Immortality From The Immortality Peach Garden

Ye Zichen found out from Chief Liu's explanation that there actually was someone else that wanted to invite him there.

As Ye Zichen walked along the shiny corridor until he reached the end, he continuously looked around.

This sort of business club was obviously not just a single level higher than the Latte he went to previously.

“Chief Liu, Director Xiao has been waiting inside for quite a while.”

At the entrance to a room at the end of the corridor, the manager of the club smiled and pushed the door open for Chief Liu.

Ye Zichen was immediately shocked just after entering the room.

The person was not just anyone else, it was Xiao Hai, with whom they had just separated paths with not that long ago.

“Liu-ge.”

The moment Chief Liu entered the room, Xiao Hai went over. When he saw Ye Zichen and Su Yiyun, he clearly was dazed for a moment, then he asked Chief Liu in confusion, “Liu-ge, the Lil' Ye

you were talking about couldn't be Zichen, right?"

"You know him already?"

Chief Liu was also stunned for a moment, then shook his head with a smile.

"Yep, the Lil' Ye I was talking about was him."

"Hai-ge," Ye Zichen and Su Yiyun called out to him at the same time. Xiao Hai shook his head with a light smile, the moment he had met Ye Zichen earlier, he already felt that Ye Zichen was different from other people.

After calling everyone to sit on the sofa, Xiao Hai spoke directly without cutting any corners.

"Zichen, Hai-ge is not going to beat around the bush with you. This time that I asked Chief Liu to get you to come, I want to ask whether you still have that Great Recovery Pill. I can buy it from you with a high price!"

Great Recovery Pill!

Ye Zichen was momentarily speechless. It seemed like Xiao Hai had found out about the effects of the Great Recovery Pill from Chief Liu and wanted to buy one.

Yet, it didn't seem like he had any diseases. Could it be just for emergency? Or was it for someone else?

However, he had only managed to get just that one Great Recovery Pill.

Recently, Old Lord Taishang had not gave out any red packets, where was he supposed to get one from...

“Hai-ge, I don't have anymore Great Recovery Pills.”

Ye Zichen answered honestly.

“Are you afraid of us not paying you for it or what?”

At that moment, an unfriendly voice sounded out in the room.

Ye Zichen looked over in the direction of the voice, and saw a young man about his age was standing in the corner of the room.

He was covered from head to toe in luxury goods. It was clear that he was a typical rich second-generation.

“Huang Ming, apologize to Zichen,” Xiao Hai said with a frown.

“Biaoge, this fellow clearly just wants to raise the price. Why are you being so courteous with him!”

Huang Ming was Xiao Hai's biaodi. Due to having a big brother like Xiao Hai, he couldn't see anyone straight.

"The thing my biao ge lacks least is money. Brat, just name how much you want for that thing."

Huang Ming ignored Xiao Hai's warning and walked over in front of Ye Zichen.

To be honest, Ye Zichen was very displeased about his high and mighty attitude.

Due to giving face to Chief Liu and his relationship with Xiao Hai, he didn't explode, and merely answered him patiently.

"I really don't have any left."

"Ten million, how about that?"

Huang Ming's shamelessness especially and his look of "laozi is rich" disgusted Ye Zichen.

Being rich is amazing?

Being rich allows you to look down on people?

“No Great Recovery Pill!”

The atmosphere in the room immediately turned frigid. Everyone could feel Ye Zichen’s displeasure.

Huang Ming still wanted to act out, but Xiao Hai stopped him before he could make things worse.

“Shut up!”

Xiao Hai roared, causing Huang Ming to immediately shrink his neck and walk off to the side.

“Zichen, Hai-ge really needs this Great Recovery Pill...”

Seeing the earnestness in Xiao Hai’s eyes, Ye Zichen touched the phone in his pocket due to his unwillingness to see that kind of expression, and stood up from the sofa.

“Wait a moment.”

Ye Zichen quickly ran off to the club’s bathroom and promptly sent a message to the Monkey King.

“Great Sage Sun, are you there?”

“What did you call me, Old Sun, for?”

The Monkey King pretty much replied instantaneously.

“Do you still have any of those Great Recovery Pills from Old Lord Taishang? Send me a few.”

“How could Old Sun have the shitty pills from that geezer!”

The Monkey King replied instantaneously once again with three contempt emojis.

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen felt rather troubled. However, the Monkey King sent another message.

“What do you need the Great Recovery Pill for? It isn’t anything special, that geezer gets several hundred of them when he refines a single furnace of it. He gives them to the heavenly soldiers as candy.”

.....

Ye Zichen was speechless, the people in the Heavenly Court were truly luxurious.

“This little deity ran into some trouble and needs a Great Recovery Pill. If Great Sage doesn’t have any, then this little deity will go and figure something else out.”

Ye Zichen couldn't do anything if the Monkey King didn't have any Great Recovery Pills

He wasn't at all familiar with the other deities in the group, so he couldn't exactly add Old Lord Taishang as a friend just to ask for private red packets.

God knows what their intimacy level was. What if he was found out?!

He could only say that Xiao Hai was very unlucky. All of a sudden, Ye Zichen felt that he couldn't bear to face him.

He didn't sell the painting to him, and now there was nothing he could do when Xiao Hai wanted to buy a Great Recovery Pill.

"I, Old Sun, don't have the geezer's Great Recovery Pills, but the peaches from Old Sun's Mount Huaguo aren't any worse than his pills."

Just when Ye Zichen was about to give up, the Monkey King had sent another message over.

"Then hurry and send it to me, Great Sage!"

"Hehe, you want Old Sun's peach? Shouldn't you do something first?"

Great Sage Sun sent three finger hooking emojis. It seemed like he still wanted more Wahaha Calcium Milk.

However, Ye Zichen could only make him a promise for the future since he didn't have anything on hand.

“This little deity is outside right now. How about this, Great Sage send the peach over to this little deity now, and this little deity will send something to you later.”

“You couldn't be tricking, I, Old Sun, right?”

“How would little deity dare.”

“I knew you wouldn't.”

Dingdong.

When a red packet appeared on his screen, Ye Zichen clicked on it without thinking.

You have collected the Monkey King's red packet.

Peach x1

Ye Zichen quickly clicked open his Treasure Chest.

He clicked “withdraw” on the peach in the Treasure Chest.

A peach that wasn’t any different from a normal one appeared in Ye Zichen’s hand. He looked at the pinkish peach sitting in his hand.

Gulp.

This was a peach from the Water Curtain Cave. Ye Zichen wanted to be able to eat it as well.

“Never mind, never mind, I will have a chance to eat one in the future.”

Ye Zichen suppressed his desire to eat it and walked back to the room with the peach.

After Ye Zichen had left the room, Xiao Hai was rather worried. This Great Recovery Pill was extremely important to him, the old man back home was relying on his getting this Great Recovery Pill.

“Big bro, that brat just wants to get more money out of you, we’ll raise the price a bit later, then it’ll be fine. What’s more, do you really believe that Great Recovery Pill would even work?”

The moment Huang Ming finished, Chief Liu’s expression turned dour.

What's this supposed to mean, was Huang Ming implying that he was lying?

“Liu-ge, don't mind him too much.”

Xiao Hai looked towards Huang Ming with a frown, his biaodi was truly only good at messing stuff up.

Just who was Chief Liu? Wasn't Huang Ming putting it that way clearly making Chief Liu look bad!

“Heh, Little Bro Xiao, Liu-ge isn't that sort of petty person. The reason I brought Lil' Ye over is purely because you begged me to and our relationship was pretty good. You also seem to know Lil' Ye, so you should be clear about just what sort of person he is.”

Xiao Hai's expression turned serious for a moment, as he thought back to incident at the antique street...

This Ye Zichen is truly a master!

Although the Great Recovery Pill was a bit too shocking, he was willing to try to get one for his family's old man.

At that moment, the door to the room was pushed open. Xiao Hai's eyes also brightened at hearing the door, while Huang Ming's mouth showed nothing but contempt.

If he was going to leave, then just leave, yet he came back.

After doing so much, didn't he just want to con them for more money!

Chapter 10 – The Peach Of Immortality Shows Its Effects

“Lil’ Ye, just now, you went to...”

Xiao Hai’s expression was filled with anticipation. Ye Zichen handed the peach over with a shrug.

“There aren’t anymore of the Great Recovery Pill, please take this peach.”

“Ah?”

Everyone in the room pretty much drew a blank as to why he came back with just a peach. Huang Ming even swore.

“Brat, what do you mean by this?! We came to ask for a Great Recovery Pill, and now you’re trying to fool us with a crappy peach?”

Crappy peach?

Ye Zichen’s expression immediately turned ugly. Huang Ming had been causing trouble from the start. Even a person with very good temper would get angry.

“How’s it your business when I’m speaking to your biao?”

“Say that again?”

Huang Ming angrily stood up from the sofa. Nobody had dared to speak to him like that while he was in Bingcheng.

“Huang Ming!”

Xiao Hai also became upset, they had come here to ask for someone else to do things for them. Was this the attitude they were supposed to have?!

All of a sudden, he started regretting it, he really shouldn't have brought Huang Ming over.

“Hai-ge, I think I'll take my leave first. If you don't want that peach, then just throw it away.”

Ye Zichen turned around and left. Seeing that, Su Yiyun also followed behind him.

That brat, Huang Ming, was far too cocky, so he didn't much like him either.

“Lil' Hai, I'll leave as well.”

Chief Liu smiled coldly and left with Officer Zhang in tow, in an instant only Xiao Hai and Huang Ming were left.

“Biaoge, that brat didn’t view you properly at all. He’s purely messing with us.”

“Shut up!”

Xiao Hai was mad.

The situation wouldn’t be like this if it wasn’t for Huang Ming!

Xiao Hai hesitated for a few moments after looking at the peach on the tea table, then decided to bring it back anyway.

“Ye-zi, what exactly are you doing? Why do I feel like I don’t really get you?”

Su Yiyun asked with curiosity written all over his face on the way back.

“I’m just merely a poor student!”

“Pfft, you really are shameless. I’ll believe it if you had said you’re a poor student before, you actually dare to say you’re poor now?”

Su Yiyun twitched his mouth. Ye Zichen already had a card with five million inside. If he was still calling himself poor, then what about other people?

“Don’t say anything back at the dorm.”

Chief Liu’s situation was too shocking. If the people at the dorm found out, then they would definitely spread it with their big mouths.

“Don’t worry, I will definitely stay silent. What’s more, you also know that I don’t live at the dorm.”

“That’s good.”

Back at the school, Ye Zichen felt the way the students at school looked at him was a bit weird.

The finger pointing of everyone around him caused him to feel rather uneasy, so he could only walk even quicker to get back to the dorm.

“Su Yan, look, isn’t that the guy that smashed people with underworld money!”

Two girls stood at a distance not far away from Ye Zichen and looked him over.

“Mhmm, it really is.”

Su Yan, the school beauty of Polytechnic University.

She was at a height which caused people to look up to her for she was thrice blessed, family background, her academic achievement and her appearance. She was the dream girl for countless men at Polytechnic University.

“When the news came out on the school forums, I had thought that he was a rich second-generation.”

“What, you like rich second-generations?”

Su Yan smiled playfully, while the girl beside her pouted.

“Pfft, I don’t like those rich second-generations.”

“Then that’s it!”

“But I feel like this person is mean, just how unlucky it was for the person who was smacked with underworld money!”

“Really? I feel like that guy’s rather interesting,” Su Yan smiled towards Ye Zichen’s back, then pulled on the girl beside her. “Keke, let’s go back.”

“Interesting? Why don’t I feel that?!”

Keke also looked towards Ye Zichen one last time before leaving with Su Yan.

“Ol’ Five, you are a celebrity in school now.”

Zhang Rui played with his phone as he laid on his bed. Ye Zichen also understood why the students looked at him so oddly.

The underworld money situation had been found out.

His candy coating of being a fake rich second-generation was discovered, so he naturally caught the attention of others.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but to twitch his mouth at the comments underneath the new thread.

A rich second-generation was found to be pretending to be poor was definitely something that people loved, but since it was the opposite was what people felt disgusted with.

Ye Zichen naturally did not care about all of this. He was the one who knew best about his current strength, and the most important thing right now was to satisfy the Monkey King.

“Great Sage!”

“Hurry and send it over to Old Sun!”

Great Sage Sun replied instantaneously once again.

Ye Zichen actually felt a little proud when faced with this kind of reply speed, it seemed like his position with Great Sage Sun was rather high.

“Alright, little deity will send it over to Great Sage now.”

Ye Zichen scanned a bottle of Wahaha Calcium Milk, causing a huge red packet to instantly appear on the screen.

“Why is there only one?”

The Monkey King replied with three angry emojis behind the message.

“Great Sage, this sort of treasure can only be gotten by chance. This little deity only had one left, originally I had wanted to keep it for myself to enjoy...”

“Stop pretending with Old Sun. Do you believe that Old Sun would not call out you in the group?”

He is threatening me!

The corner of Ye Zichen’s mouth raised in a smirk.

“Then go ahead say it, Great Sage. What this little deity said is all truth. If Great Sage doesn’t believe it, then that can’t be helped.

However, if you point this little deity out, then there will not only be Great Sage that is asking this little deity for private red packets!”

“Never mind, I, Old Sun, will let you go this time!”

“Thank you, Great Sage!”

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with the Monkey King increased by 10, 60 more is needed to reach Trusted.

Ye Zichen smiled as he looked at the intimacy level on the screen.

He understood the logic of rare goods will bring about a large profit.

He had only just gotten in contact with the Monkey King's interest in Wahaha. That's why he wanted to limit it, to make the Wahaha really rare. Only then, would it pique the Monkey King's interest and cause the Monkey King not to feel like he was taking a loss.

After lurking in the group for so long, he noticed that there was just a few people that actively chatted in the group every day, and they usually chatted about topics that Ye Zichen didn't understand.

Seeing that the people in the group had stopped handing out red packets, Ye Zichen threw his phone towards the side of his pillow and laid on the bed, while thinking about that peach.

I wonder what that peach actually tastes like!

Meanwhile, back at the Xiao family home.

Xiao Hai had brought Ye Zichen's peach back, but he couldn't get his grandpa to eat it immediately.

Ignoring the fact that his grandpa was so ill that he couldn't even open his mouth, he could only use liquids to maintain his metabolism; he needed a medical team to check the peach over first to see what effects it really did have.

When the door to the mansion opened, Xiao Hai ushered the medical team in. Yet, when he arrived in the living room, he found that the peach was already gone...

"Lil' Hai, you came back."

A young mistress walked down from the second floor. Xiao Hai didn't dare to speak when he saw her.

If he was judging only through the voice, it should be his mother, Cui Xuefang.

“Lil’ Hai, what are you spacing out for?”

“Mom!?”

Xiao Hai opened and shut his mouth like a carp, causing Cui Xuefang to reach out her hand to touch his forehead.

“Silly child, why are you acting like this?”

“Mom, do you know what changes have happened to you?”

“What changes happened to me?”

Cui Xuefang rolled her eyes at Xiao Hai, but when he glanced over at the living room’s mirror and saw her own face, she was instantly stupefied.

Then, she quickly walked over to the mirror.

“This...”

“Mom, did you eat the peach that was on the tea table?”

“Yeah!?”

Pa.

Xiao Hai slapped his thigh and screamed into his phone, which he had taken out from his pocket.

“Huang Ming, immediately go and apologize to Ye Zichen. If he doesn’t forgive you, then just wait to till he does!”

Chapter 11 – Huang Ming Apologizes

Just as Ye Zichen had returned after eating out with his roommates, an expensive sportscar blocked the space in front of them.

The sportscar that sped past them freaked Ye Zichen and co. out. Just as they were calming down, the owner of the sportscar got out from the car.

“It’s you!”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. The person in front of him was no other than Huang Ming, who was the biaodi of Xiao Hai.

“Ye Zichen!”

“What did you come here for?”

Ye Zichen didn’t like this guy much, and it was the same vice versa.

He was just out having fun with a few pretty girls at a nightclub, when Xiao Hai had randomly called him to go and apologize to Ye Zichen.

Although he was Xiao Hai’s cousin, he was still only his cousin.

Xiao Hai's hostile tone scared him, so he could only go apologize without any other choice. Yet, he was sure in his heart that Ye Zichen had said something to his biao-ge behind his back, causing his biao-ge to act like that towards him.

"I'm telling you, brat, don't you dare to use any tricks behind my back. Did you really think that calling my biao-ge, and telling him to force me to apologize would make me actually apologize? Dream on. I'm telling you, it's impossible for lao-zi to apologize to you!"

"Are you crazy?"

"Heh, I'm warning you, don't play tricks behind my back."

With this ruthless warning, Huang Ming left in his sportscar.

As Kang Peng and co. watched the retreating back of the sportscar, they raised their eyebrows and said.

"Ye-zi, how did you manage to piss off someone like that? His sportscar seems rather expensive, he definitely isn't anyone normal."

"He's just a maniac, ignore him."

Huang Ming's appearance also caused Ye Zichen to be confused. However, he guessed that it was because Xiao Hai must have given the peach to his family member to eat.

Thinking about the peach, Ye Zichen couldn't help but feel a bit of heartache.

Damn, even he didn't have a taste before giving it away!

Back at the Xiao family.

Xiao Hai specifically asked Cui Xuefang to have a full body checkup done, and they found that her bodily functions had returned to when she was thirty years old. Most importantly, all of the small issues with her body had all disappeared.

That news had completely shocked everyone in the Xiao family.

“Young Master Ming has returned.”

Huang Ming walked into the mansion, while sighing in annoyance, after leaving from Ye Zichen's school, he had only wanted to go chill at the nightclub, but he was told to immediately return.

Since there was no other way, he could only pitifully return to the mansion.

However, the moment he entered the door and saw the people inside the mansion, he was immediately astonished.

Everyone in the living room set their sights on Huang Ming. Huang Ming gulped, then slowly walked over.

“Did Ye Zichen forgive you?”

Xiao Hai interrogated him.

“I... Biaoge, did that guy say something to you behind my back? I’m telling you, that brat is only just greedy for money, you don’t need to care about him.”

I’m asking you! Did he forgive you!?”

Xiao Hai’s tone was irate to the point of being terrifying. Huang Ming had never seen his biaoge get that angry before.

Huang Ming licked his lips and replied with his head dipped.

“I didn’t apologize.”

Crack!

It was unknown whose cup fell to the floor. When it happened, Xiao Hai glared at Huang Ming for a time, while his fists creaked.

“Second Uncle, this is your good son!”

Xiao Hai left furiously, while Huang Ming looked towards his father in terror.

Slap!

This slap completely stunned Huang Ming.

“Dad...”

Huang Zhen was someone that had received his son when he was older, so he overly spoiled his son, Huang Ming. He had continuously allowed Huang Ming to do things, and had never beaten him for his actions.

“Bastard son, bastard son... I’m telling you, no matter what method you use, you have to make Ye Zichen forgive you. If you can’t, then I won’t have a son like you...”

Huang Ming was truly confused, he looked at his father in confusion. At this moment, Cui Xuefang walked over and spoke meaningfully, while holding Huang Ming’s hands.

“Ming, listen to auntie, go and apologize to Ye Zichen.”

“Auntie!?”

Huang Ming looked at the woman, who could essentially be his older sister, and couldn’t help but be shocked. All of a sudden, he

finally understood the reason in his heart.

“I understand.”

The next day, Ye Zichen’s brain was about to explode from the technical lessons throughout the entire morning.

It wasn’t the technical knowledge, but the gazes of the surrounding students that had caused him to feel like his head was about to burst.

The moment class ended, Ye Zichen quickly ran over to the dorm. During this process, he could still see the surrounding students pointing their fingers at him.

“Yo, isn’t that the fake rich second-generation Ye Zichen, Young Master Ye?”

Ye Zichen raised his head and saw Yao Yue holding Guo Qiang’s arms while they stood not far away. As he gazed at that familiar face saying such awful words, Ye Zichen shook his head and walked off to the side.

“You’re leaving just like that?”

“No matter what, we had a past together. Is there a need to do things to such extreme?” Ye Zichen stopped and smiled helplessly. “It seems like you did all this. Very good, it has indeed affected my life. Your goal has been reached, hasn’t it?”

“Stop pretending to be a good person with laoniang. Poor is poor, and yet you still try to pretend to be rich. During the six months or so laoniang had been with you, you never once bought a bag like this for me!”

It was unknown why Yao Yue’s ugliness was infinitely magnified to Ye Zichen at that moment. No matter what he did, Ye Zichen could not understand how he actually had a girlfriend like that.

It’s true that he was just a normal poor student. However, when had he ever held back when Yao Yue wanted to buy anything?

Seriously...

Ye Zichen shook his head and ignored Yao Yue, then walked straight towards the dorm.

Shuu.

Just as Ye Zichen was about to enter the dorm, a silver sportscar suddenly stopped at the entrance to the dorms.

“Young Master Ye, Young Master Ye...”

Huang Ming frantically ran from the car only to stop in front of Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen smiled falsely towards Huang Ming. He didn't really like this fellow.

“Isn't this Young Master Huang, what did you come to find a poor student like me for?”

Fa-thud.

Huang Ming promptly kneeled in front of Ye Zichen.

“Young Master Ye, Young Master Ye... You are a great person that I hope will not mind a petty person's mistake. A great person can accept a lot of things, please just treat it as the foolishness of my truth, please just pretend that I farted.”

Huang Ming definitely said this full-heartedly. The previous night had essentially been suffering for him.

His heart was filled with terror due to Xiao Hai's and his father's reactions. When you coupled that with Cui Xuefang's change, he completely understood that Ye Zichen really wasn't normal.

Being someone of the Xiao family, he did know a little about that that place.

The people there are all hidden masters. It wasn't much for Xiao Hai to get mad at him, but if he truly pissed Ye Zichen off, he was definitely screwed if Ye Zichen decided to do anything to him behind his back.

Just as they were about to drive away, Guo Qiang saw the scene occurring at the male dorm.

The two familiar figures caused him to look over quite a few times, but he really couldn't see clearly due to the distance.

“Qiang-ge, let's go.”

Yao Yue hugged Guo Qiang's arm coquettishly. Guo Qiang raised his eyebrows and touched Yao Yue's body with a smile.

“Let's go.”

Chapter 12 – The Handsome Monkey King’s Monkey Wine

Ye Zichen also spaced out the moment Huang Ming kneeled.

“Hurry and get up...”

Seeing that more and more students were surrounding them, Ye Zichen walked over to Huang Ming’s side in order to help him up.

However, he didn’t expect Huang Ming not to get up, and instead, he straightforwardly hugged Ye Zichen’s leg.

“Young Master Ye, I’m begging you, please just let me off.”

“Isn’t that the fake rich secondgeneration from the school forums!?”

“It really is, what kind of show is going on now!?”

“Look at that sportscar, Porsche 911!”

“Damn, it really is, what’s going on...”

Many students had already started to take out their phones to take photos. In an instant the school’s forums had exploded again.

Ye Zichen was already a recent hot topic, now that this new thread was posted, lots of people instantly appeared to follow the thread.

At the same time, in front of the school's dormitory.

Seeing the students around starting to take photos, Ye Zichen stopped getting angry. He tried his best to pull Huang Ming up, but he was just like an permanent sticker, unwilling to move at all.

“F*ck, if you don't want to die, then f*cking stand up to speak.”

Huang Ming immediately bolted up like it was a conditioned reflex.

“Young Master Ye...”

“I know the reasoning for you coming here. Go back to tell Hai-ge that I don't have anything that can save the old man currently. When I do, I'll contact him.”

“Young Master Ye, are you not forgiving me...”

Seeing that Huang Ming was about to kneel again, Ye Zichen was defeated by his shamelessness.

“I forgive you!”

“No, Young Master Ye, you didn’t forgive me!”

It seemed like speaking nicely was of no use. Ye Zichen licked his lips and pointed to Huang Ming’s sportscar, then swore.

“Immediately get on your car and disappear from my sight!”

“Young Master Ye!!”

“Do you need me to repeat myself?”

Ye Zichen frowned. Huang Ming clenched his teeth, then turned around and ran towards the sportscar. While he was leaving, he still relentlessly asked Ye Zichen for forgiveness.

After finally getting rid of that sticky nuisance, Ye Zichen quickly returned to the dorm.

“Ye-zi, you heated up the school website again...”

The moment he entered the dorm, Zhang Rui threw his phone towards Ye Zichen.

After catching the phone, Ye Zichen immediately saw the top thread on the forums.

Fake rich secondgeneration or real rich secondgeneration? A life

like a show, it's all thanks to acting!

On the thread were photos of Huang Ming hugging Ye Zichen's legs, as well as a close up image of Huang Ming's Porsche 911.

The speculations underneath the photos caused Ye Zichen to smile wryly, but what made him even more speechless were the various replies of the students.

There were two main parties in the replies.

One group of them believed that Ye Zichen was just a low-lying rich second generation. The other thought that Ye Zichen was simply trying to get famous.

The thread was like a battlefield and the flaming was continuous from both sides.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but praise the school website's advertisement capability. By that afternoon, Ye Zichen actually received a lot of invitations from girls to dine together that night.

That was something Ye Zichen had never experienced before. Although he was a bit handsome, this wasn't an era where he could live on just his looks.

What made Ye Zichen even more speechless was that the gossip journalist from the school website actually found him and wanted to do a private interview with him.

People truly were as afraid of being famous as pigs were of getting big. Ye Zichen didn't manage to catch a break through the entire day. Even his brothers at the dorm were interested. Without any other choice, Ye Zichen could only go outside the school to eat by himself.

Dingdong.

Great Sage Sun sent you a private red packet.

Ye Zichen's phone suddenly rang when he was sitting at the barbecue store. When he picked up his phone, he saw that the Monkey King had actually sent him a private red packet.

One who is unaccountably solicitous is hiding evil intentions!

Recently, he had chatted a lot with the monkey King. Ye Zichen understood very well that the Monkey just wanted Wahaha.

Click.

Monkey Wine x5

"Haha, I, Old Sun, knew that you were here!"

"Thank you, Great Sage Sun."

“You’re too courteous, these were brewed by my children when they were playing around. These five bottles were just brewed, so I thought of you.”

“Haha, this little deity is truly honored.”

They saw gifting should go both ways. Ye Zichen casually used his phone to scan the Sprite on the table and sent it over.

The Monkey King received your red packet.

“Nice, what kind of treasure is this now!?”

“This was gotten by this little deity recently. Good bros should share things, Great Sage can try it!”

“Good good, good bro, good bro!”

The Monkey King was clearly very excited, so he disappeared after his reply.

About two minutes later...

The Monkey King’s intimacy level with you increased by 30, the current intimacy level is 170, 30 away from Trusted.

“Great treasure, it truly is great!”

“It’s good that Great Sage likes it.”

Ye Zichen did understand Great Sage Sun thoroughly, so he had casually earned 30 intimacy points.

Seeing that Trusted was about to be reached, Ye Zichen wondered about what changes would happen after the level up.

After chitchatting for a bit, Ye Zichen closed the chat.

Ye Zichen clicked open the Treasure Chest, looked at the monkey wine, then at the lamb skewer in front of him, before revealing a smile.

Withdraw monkey wine.

A green gourd appeared in Ye Zichen’s hands.

When he opened the cork, the smell of alcohol rushed out.

“Good wine.”

At this moment, an old man sitting on the next table walked over as he had followed the smell.

“Little bro, can you let me drink a glass?”

“Of course!”

Ye Zichen wasn't a petty person, so he lifted the gourd and poured a cup for the old man.

The aroma of wine filled the barbeque store for a long time. Many wine-lovers looked over. Even some women that didn't drink wine couldn't help but sniff a few times.

“Monkey wine,” the old man said after having a taste. “But it is more aromatic than monkey wine. The alcohol level also seems lower. No, I have to sip again.”

The old man muttered to himself, while Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

That old man wasn't simple since he could taste it with a sip.

“Grandpa, you're sneakily drinking wine again!”

A beautiful voice rang out. The old man, who was enjoying it was shocked, and immediately drank all the wine without tasting it carefully. Then he crossed his legs and sang, while he pretended like nothing happened.

“Grandpa, the doctor said that you can't drink alcohol.”

“When did I drink?”

The old man played dumb.

“You’re still saying that you didn’t drink. I saw everything. What’s more, the smell of alcohol hasn’t dispersed yet. Even if you want to lie, you have to make something better up. What’s more, if you didn’t drink, then why did you come over to someone else’s table!?”

“There are so many people drinking in the barbeque store, why do you say I drank it?” The old man started acting shameless. At the same time, he twitched his mouth at Ye Zichen, “I saw that this young man was bored eating by himself, so I came to chat with him a few times. Aren’t I right, young fellow?”

The old man looked towards Ye Zichen, hoping Ye Zichen to lie with him. However, he saw that Ye Zichen had already blanked out.

The girl calling the old man wasn’t just anyone else, it was Polytechnic University’s school beauty, Su Yan.

Chapter 13 – School Beauty Su Yan's Red String Of Marriage

“I’m going to ask if it is or not.”

Su Yan pouted, then looked towards Ye Zichen.

“Just now, did my grandpa drink... Hey, why is it you?”

Su Yan didn’t know Ye Zichen before, but due to all of the controversy caused by Ye Zichen in school recently, it would be hard for her not to know him.

“Su-Su Yan!”

That was the first time that Ye Zichen had spoken to the goddess at such a close distance. Furthermore, the goddess was the one who started speaking first, causing him to stutter.

The old man was definitely a highly intelligent person at such an old age. Within only a few moments, he saw what was going on.

“You know each other.”

“He’s in the same university as me.”

Su Yan started to explain, while a light flashed across the old

man's eyes as he smiled towards Su Yan.

“Alright, Grandpa will tell you the truth, Grandpa did drink. But don't blame the lad, I was determined to bum a drink off him.”

“But the doctor...”

“What about the doctor, is my darling granddaughter going to tell on me? What's more, the doctor said that I can't eat barbeque, didn't you still sneak me here?”

The old man smiled and looked towards Su Yan with a hint of threat in his eyes.

“You're being unreasonable.”

Su Yan bit her lips in anger. She only brought Grandpa Su over was because she saw that he was too bored at home.

Her act of goodwill actually was taken advantage of by Grandpa Su.

“He, just pretend that grandpa is unreasonable. If you tell them about me drinking, then I'll tell them that you took me to eat barbeque, then neither of us will end up well.”

Su Yan instantly stopped getting frustrated.

“Then what do you want to do!?”

“That’s grandpa’s darling granddaughter. Go and buy grandpa two bottles of water to rinse my mouth, otherwise, it would be bad if your dad smells it on me when we get home.”

“Can’t we buy it here? You can’t be just wanting to sneakily drink again, right?”

“Is grandpa that sort of person, now go!”

“Heh, I’ll believe you this one time.”

Su Yan left the barbeque store with a frown. Meanwhile, Ye Zichen’s gaze continued to remain on her retreating form.

As expected of the number one beauty in school, she was so pretty even when she was angry.

What’s more, it seems like she didn’t put any makeup on!

She was so beautiful without any cosmetics; then how beautiful would she be if she put makeup on?

Old Man Su saw Ye Zichen’s reactions completely. He only waved his hand in front of Ye Zichen after Su Yan’s figure could no longer be seen.

“Laddie.”

“Ah!”

Ye Zichen returned to his senses at that point. As he saw Old Man Su’s playful smile, he was clearly apprehensive.

“What is your name?”

“Ye Zichen!”

“Ye Zichen,” Old Man Su raised his head slightly, then indicated towards the direction Su Yan left in. “What do you think about my granddaughter?”

“Ah?”

Ye Zichen was a bit confused by Old Man Su’s question, but he still replied honestly.

“Su Yan is a famous school beauty in our Polytechnic University. She’s pretty, kind and good at studying, basically, everything about her is good.”

“Is that so!?” Hearing that, a meaningful smile flashed across his eyes. “How about we make a deal?”

On the way back to the school, Ye Zichen walked very slowly, but his heart was racing. It was merely because the school goddess, Su Yan, was beside him.

However, despite both of them walking together, neither had said a word.

After a long while, Su Yan finally broke the silence.

“Did you reach some sort of agreement with my grandpa?”

Ye Zichen’s heart beat quickly. Su Yan had truly guessed it right. However, Old Man Su had warned him many times that he should not say anything, so he could only reply forcefully.

“Nope.”

“Tsk, stop helping my grandpa hide it, I know everything.”

Su Yan twitched her mouth and said.

“When he left, his waist was bulging so much. If I didn’t guess it wrongly, you probably bought alcohol for him.”

She was already really beautiful, and she’s also so smart, what are other people going to do.

Ye Zichen sighed heavily in his heart. He thought back to outside the barbeque shop and Su Yan's appearance in stopping Old Man Su from drinking, so he quickly explained.

“My wine is different from others, Old Man Su wouldn't have an issue even if he drinks it, it will only be good for the body.”

“Whatever, I never heard of any alcohol that is good for the body. But don't worry, I won't blame you.”

Su Yan smiled. Ye Zichen managed to see that smile, a simple smile from the goddess causing him to be awestruck all of a sudden...

“So pretty.”

Ye Zichen replied idiotically. Su Yan blushed randomly after hearing it. She already heard this sort of things many times, but for some reason when Ye Zichen said it, it actually felt different to her.

In order to hide the changes in her heart, Su Yan shouted.

“Hey, what are you spacing out for. My grandpa told you to make sure and escort me back to my dorm safely.”

“Oh, oh!”

Ye Zichen quickly caught up, but he continued to check out the side of Su Yan's face.

Su Yan blushed slightly. All of a sudden, the atmosphere between the two of them actually seemed a bit strange.

“Oh yeah, just what exactly is your identity? The school's gossip site has been filled with loads of news about you recently.”

Su Yan broke the silence once again. Ye Zichen patted his forehead helplessly and sighed.

“Why is even the school beauty so into gossips?”

“All girls like to gossip, is the school beauty not allowed to be human!?”

Su Yan complained strangely, causing Ye Zichen to chuckle.

As they chatted, the two of them had already returned to Su Yan's dorm. Su Yan pursed her lips and waved towards Ye Zichen as she walked towards the dorm.

“Erm...”

“Hmm?”

Su Yan suddenly turned around. Even she didn't know why she would have such a drastic reaction to him. What was much more terrifying was that she actually was looking forward to something happening.

“Good night.”

Ye Zichen finally said after hesitating for a long time.

Su Yan didn't know why, but there was actually a hint of sadness in her heart. However, she still replied with a smile.

“You too, get some rest. I'm going back.”

“Mhmm.”

Ye Zichen waved his hand towards Su Yan. When Su Yan's figure had finally faded from his sight, Ye Zichen slapped his thighs and cursed at himself.

“Damn pussy! Is it so hard to just get a phone number!”

Was the goddess so easy to get into contact with? It was such a good chance, that might be permanently missed now that he had missed it!

Just as Ye Zichen was getting annoyed with himself...

Dingdong.

Received Marriage String x1!

Marriage String?

Ye Zichen clicked open the Treasure Chest, and saw a red string in it.

Marriage String: Fate tied together by a string. Hand-made by Yue Lao.

Possessor: Ye Zichen; Possessed: Su Yan

Current affability level: 10.

What the heck is this thing?!

Ye Zichen was completely confused by the marriage string that had suddenly appeared. How did a marriage string appear when he and Su Yan had only just met?

Were he and Su Yan meant to be together?

But what's this affability level mean? It doesn't say how much is needed for them to be together!

Dingdong.

[Yue Lao](#) has sent you a friend request.

Yue Lao is the deity in charge of marriage and relationships in Chinese mythology.

Chapter 14 – It's All Yue Lao's Fault

Yue Lao sent a friend request!

This was the second deity that had sent Ye Zichen a friend request.

Ye Zichen thought about the marriage string in the Treasure Chest, it seemed like he had received it due to Yue Lao.

Add!

“Fellow daoist!”

Yue Lao instantly sent him a message after Ye Zichen added him as a friend.

“What did Yue Lao find this little deity for?”

Ye Zichen replied.

“I wonder if fellow daoist was able to receive the marriage string?”

It truly was Yue Lao's fault.

Ye Zichen thought silently in his heart, and gazed at the intimacy

level between him and Yue Lao.

100.

After seeing that, he put down the boulder of worry in his heart. Since their intimacy level was friendly, then Ye Zichen didn't need be worried about any issues.

“This little deity had already received Yue Lao's marriage string. Thank you, Yue Lao.”

“It's no big deal, this old man had merely tied the strings and established the affability between fellow daoist and her. It still requires fellow daoist to work hard.”

Yue Lao's manner of speaking was a complete contrast to the Monkey King. If the Monkey King was speaking like this, then...

Hehe, interesting!

“I still have to thank Yue Lao for tying the strings!”

There is a phrase that is very well said!

One who is unaccountably solicitous is hiding evil intentions.

Yue Lao had to tie so many strings together each day, he clearly

had a purpose by finding him.

As Ye Zichen expected, not long after he said that, Yue Lao replied.

“This old man had just returned from the Great Sage’s place...”

He wants a private red packet!

Although Yue Lao had said it in a very roundabout manner, since he mentioned the Great Sage, then he clearly knew a bit about Ye Zichen from the Great Sage.

Thinking about what he had on hand and Yue Lao’s age...

He scanned the packet of Yuxi cigarettes in his hand and sent it over.

Dingdong.

Yue Lao received your red packet.

“Fellow daoist, I wonder what kind of item this is!”

“This is something that this little deity...”

Ye Zichen blabbered to Yue Lao for a long while, then scanned

and sent a lighter over as well.

“Yue Lao, both of these items are rare items. You must not let the other fellow deities know. This little deity does not have any left to send to the other fellow deities!”

“That’s fine, that’s fine!!”

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Yue Lao increased by 50. Current intimacy level is 150, it is 50 away from Trusted.

A packet of cigarettes increased the intimacy level by 50 points, this was really a lot.

“They say gifting goes both ways, since fellow daoist has sent this old man such a valuable item, this old man naturally cannot be petty.”

Dingdong.

A red packet appeared on his screen.

Look!

This is what it means to be understanding. Just look at Yue Lao!

Gifting goes both ways...

Great Sage Sun just wanted some respect, this Yue Lao knows how to return red packets.

Ye Zichen clicked open on the red packet.

Received Yue Lao's red packet, Three Pure Blessed Jade Pendant x1.

“This is a jade pendant that this old man got the Three Pure Ones to bless earlier. It can keep fellow daoist safe.”

“Thank you, Yue Lao.”

Ye Zichen impatiently withdrew the jade pendant and put it on. All of a sudden, a freshness surged through his entire body, causing his pores to open up.

Good stuff.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but smile when he looked at Yue Lao and the Monkey King, who were listed in his WeChat contacts.

This is just the beginning, if a lot more people add him in the future...

Then wouldn't the Heavenly Court...

Drink soft drinks, smoke cigarettes and play mahjong...

It was very interesting just thinking about that!

When Ye Zichen had returned to the dorm, his roommates were playing League of Legends together. After refusing his roommates' invite, Ye Zichen washed himself simply, then laid on the bed.

He didn't say anything to anyone the entire night.

"Everybody get up!"

A lion-like roar sounded out through the dorm. All of the people in the room opened his eyes, and he saw Zhang Rui shout, while holding his phone.

"What are you screaming for, can't you let people sleep!?"

"Why should we sleep, the goddess cheated!"

"What!?"

All of a sudden, everyone in the room had lost their sleepiness.

The goddess Zhang Rui talked about was Su Yan. The meaning of cheated was referring to the fact their goddess was no longer single and cheated in their hearts.

“Damn, laozi wants to see who dared to chat up the goddess!”

Ye Zichen’s heart couldn’t help but beat wildly, the person there couldn’t be him, right?

Ye Zichen peeked at the picture, and the familiar scene caused him to feel troubled. He said a few words to his roommates before frantically running out of the dorm.

“Wait a minute, the person here...”

“It’s Fifth bro!”

“Chase after him!”

It was unknown who shouted it, but everyone in the room ran out to chase after Ye Zichen in only their boxers.

“Susu, there are rumors about you on the school net.”

Keke’s eyes burned with the flames of gossip, while she smiled at Su Yan as they walked towards the canteen.

“The man in that picture there is that controversial figure.”

“It’s all just rumors.”

Su Yan blushed for some reason, while Keke smiled playfully. Just at that moment, her eyes suddenly brightened and waved towards someone in front of them.

“Hey, Riche Bro.”

At that very moment, Ye Zichen’s roommates were attempting to kidnap him towards the canteen. He knew something bad was going to happen if he got caught by them, so he ran on ahead.

Unfortunately, Kang Peng was a sports student, so it was all too easy when they really wanted to catch him.

With no other choice, he could only be threatened by them into treating them to a breakfast.

“Ye-zi, it sounds like they’re calling you.”

Kang Peng suddenly hit Ye Zichen, while everyone else also looked over at the sound of the voice.

“School beauty Xia Keke. The one beside her is... the goddess!”

Zhang Rui pushed up his glasses frame without any lenses. Ye Zichen also raised his head and saw that Su Yan was looking his way.

Zoom.

Both of them randomly blushed.

“Riche Bro, what a coincidence.”

Xia Keke forcefully pulled on Su Yan’s arm and walked over. Ye Zichen sneaked a peek at Su Yan, but when he heard what Xiao Keke had called him, he was completely confused.

The heck was “Riche Bro”?

“Riche Bro is the nickname that the school’s site gave you. It was chosen by your fan group...” Kang Peng muttered by his side.

Fan group!?

Ye Zichen could only reveal an expression of helplessness. At the same time, he smiled towards Xiao Keke.

“Hello, I’m Ye Zichen.”

“Hehe, I’m called Xia Keke, I’m Su Yan’s best friend.”

Xia Keke reached out her pure white hands. Ye Zichen merely touched her hand for a brief moment before releasing it under the jealous gazes of his roommates. Then he greeted Su Yan.

“Morning.”

“You too.”

Su Yan smiled lightly, but there was still a hint of embarrassment revealed on her face.

Xia Keke saw Su Yan’s reaction, then when she looked towards Ye Zichen, the desire for gossip in her eyes became that much more intense.

The burning flames seemed set to burn Ye Zichen to dust.

“Riche Bro, you guys should be going to the food court, right? What a coincidence, Susu and I are going too, how about we go together?”

Xia Keke smiled craftily. Ye Zichen didn’t want to accept at all.

The rumors about him and Su Yan was already going all around school, who knows what sort of rumors would arise from them eating breakfast together!

However, the pack of wolves around him didn't agree with his thoughts!

School beauty Xia Keke and school beauty Su Yan!

It was an incomparable honor to eat with the two goddesses.

“Ol’ Five, agree!”

“Ye-zi, if you don’t, then it’s going to be the end of our brotherly bond of so many years.”

“Fifth bro, I won’t threaten you, since, if you don’t agree, then don’t blame me if your League account drops to bronze.”

Damn, isn’t this a f*cking threat!?

“Sure, then let’s all go eat together.”

Chapter 15 – Randomly Became A Father

The breakfast in the school's canteen was very simple food, it was just stuff like porridge and soybean milk.

Due to the goddess's words, the roommates beside Ye Zichen all hurried to buy their breakfast, leaving only Ye Zichen, Su Yan and Xia Keke.

“Riche Bro, how did you and our Susu meet?”

“We...”

Ye Zichen gazed over at Su Yan and saw that she had dipped her head in silence.

“Su Yan, I didn't think that I would meet you here.”

At that moment, a clear voice with a hint of surprise was heard.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen turned around and saw Fu Chengming quickly walking over towards their table.

Fu Chengming was definitely a celebrity in the school, and the school forums had a lot of rumors about him.

They say his father was the director of Illuminated Century Corporation, and they had so much money that they had to

transport it with a train. Furthermore, his handsome looks were also very popular among girls.

What's more, there was also a rumor saying that Fu Chengming had always pursued the goddess, Su Yan, they just didn't know what the actual relationship was between them.

Ye Zichen subconsciously looked towards Su Yan and noticed that Su Yan's expression was quite dark.

It seems like this Fu Chengming had failed when it came to Su Yan!

“Su Yan, why are you eating breakfast here?”

“Me eating breakfast here doesn't seem to have anything to do with you, right?” Su Yan said with a distant feeling. Xiao Keke also said, while twitching her mouth, “Young Master Fu, I would be very unhappy with you saying that. What, is it suffering for Susu to eat breakfast with me in the canteen?”

Fu Chengming tensed up upon hearing that.

Xia Keke was not someone that he dared to mess with. It wasn't because of how powerful her background was, rather, it was because her background was all too mysterious.

Back then, when they had just enrolled, there was a senior in his third year that wanted to date Xia Keke.

Apparently that third year's family was rather powerful. When Xia Keke refused him, he dared to use a more forceful method.

However, that senior's entire family went into jail right after that, and had not come out since.

Ever since then, the school no longer had anyone that dared to have ill intentions towards Xia Keke.

Although she was a beautiful rose as well, she had thorns.

“I definitely don't mean that.”

Fu Chengming revealed a smile that was like sunshine. Xia Keke snorted, then raised her eyebrows towards Ye Zichen.

“Riche Bro, someone wants to fight over Susu with you. Are you not going to do anything!?”

Ye Zichen was annoyed, this chick really wasn't scared of causing trouble.

However, they say a man gets completely enraged for a woman. This was just a saying.

Who cares what sort of background Fu Chengming has, what's wrong with laozi standing strong against him!

“Young Master Fu, let's get to know each other?”

Ye Zichen stood up and reached out his hand towards Fu Chengming.

Fu Chengming raised his eyebrows and ignored him. Instead, he looked towards Su Yan and asked.

“Su Yan, what's this?”

“What's do you mean, what's this? I came here to eat with him. Do you understand what's going on now?”

Ye Zichen didn't know why, but he was able to feel her disgust towards Fu Chengming from just her words.

Ye Zichen took the chance to scratch his neck with the hand that had been frozen in midair, then stepped forward between Fu Chengming and Su Yan.

“Young Master Fu, go...”

“The heck are you to finger point in front of me? Do you have the right to speak here?”

Fu Chengming was also a bit annoyed. Ye Zichen only twitched his mouth and shrugged.

“Are you deaf? Su Yan clearly told you that she’s eating with me, so of course I have the right to speak. Stop blocking the way here, I’m losing my appetite looking at your red undies.”

“You...” Fu Chengming’s expression darkened. “Say that again?”

“I said that I have no appetite while looking at your red undies. Say, are you without shame? You are a man, yet you’re wearing red underwear. Moreover about that, you even had to wear triangular ones. What? Do you want to show that you are good in bed? Or do you want to say that you want to be Superman?”

“If you want to be Superman, then you should wear it on your head, what are you doing wearing it inside? Ahh, I understand, you didn’t transform, right? How about I give you an opportunity to transform?”

With that being said, Ye Zichen shouted loudly.

“Big bro, someone wants to hit me...”

All of Ye Zichen’s roommates rushed over in an instant and stood beside him.

“Come, transform, if you don’t, then Superman’s about to get beaten up.”

“Ye Zichen, you’ve got guts.”

“Yo, you may know me. However, don’t try to get close with me. I’m asking if you’re transforming or not, because if you’re not, then you’re going to get beaten up!”

A man doesn’t mind taking a bit of losses right now.

The reason Fu Chengming could be oppressive in school as all thanks to his underlings, now that they’re not by his side, and Ye Zichen and co. were looking at him with hostility...

“I’ll remember you.”

Fu Chengming turned around to leave after looking at Ye Zichen with a sullen look.

“Take care, bye bye.”

After sending Fu Chengming away, Ye Zichen sat down in the chair once more.

What he didn’t know was that Xia Keke’s eyes were already sparking as if they were about to let out electricity.

“Wow, Susu is so lucky, what Riche Bro did should count as a man getting enraged for a woman, right?”

“Shut your mouth,” Su Yan knocked on Xia Keke’s head, then looked towards Ye Zichen worriedly. “You have to be careful of Fu Chengming, that guy does tons of things in the dark.”

“Are you worried about me?”

The corner of Ye Zichen’s mouth raised slightly, while his dark eyes stared into Su Yan’s.

“Who would want to worry about you.”

Su Yan rolled her eyes at Ye Zichen, but it wasn’t any different than normal flirting between a couple.

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Su Yan increased by 30. Current affability level: 40.

This reminder caused Ye Zichen to smile. An increase in affability level was a good thing, he just didn’t know how much did it have to increase until the two of them...

Hehehe...

Ye Zichen’s table was filled with the aura of love, but at the stairs in front of the canteen, Fu Chengming was about to smash his

teeth in his hatred.

“Yellow hair, help me teach a person a lesson. Ye Zichen from Polytechnic University! I’ll send the photo to your phone later!”

This breakfast wasn’t for nothing, I was even able to get Su Yan and Xia Keke’s WeChat.

Ye Zichen had wanted to take the chance to ask Su Yan out, but the goddess had a lesson in the morning, so he could only give up and wait.

The people from the dorm all went back to play games. Ye Zichen was the worst in terms of gaming in the dorm, there were times his roommates didn’t want to play with him even if he was support.

Without any other choice, he could only go stand by the side of the road.

Then he quietly took out a cigarette and held it in his mouth, and gazed towards the road.

At that moment, a girl only about five or six years old ran towards the center of the road, while a truck was driving towards her.

Judging from the speed of the truck, even if the driver braked, it wasn’t going to be in time.

“Damn...”

Ye Zichen didn't have any time to think. He threw the cigarette onto the ground and ran towards the girl at the center of the road.

Dong!

The truck hit fiercely Ye Zichen's back, sending him flying for five or six meters, while he held the girl tightly in his arms.

Crack.

The jade pendant around his neck cracked. Ye Zichen did not have the time to consider the pain on his back, he merely squatted at the center of the road and put the girl down in front of him.

“Are you alright?”

Ye Zichen touched the girl's head. The girl blinked and looked at him several times, before revealing an expression of surprise and joy, then leaped into his arms while muttering.

“Daddy!”

Chapter 16 – Ore Auction

Ye Zichen's act of saving the child attracted the attention of a large number of folks for an audience. The truck driver also frantically jumped down from the vehicle.

However, when he saw that Ye Zichen was completely unharmed, he stood there, unsure of what to say, it as if he saw a ghost.

He had been sent flying for five or six meters, yet he was completely fine.

Was this person superhuman!

Ye Zichen was also confused, what did this girl call him just now?

Daddy!

The little girl snuggled into his arms tightly. At this moment, a woman with a frantic expression also ran over from the shopping mall on the other side of the road.

“Tiantian...”

Hearing the woman's call, the little girl in Ye Zichen's arms jumped off him and ran towards the woman.

“Mommy!”

“Tiantian, you scared mommy to death.”

The woman squatted in front of Tiantian and continuously checked her all over in fear of anything happening to her.

When Ye Zichen saw the woman’s face, he was completely astounded for a moment.

The woman in front of him was extremely beautiful, so much that the goddess Su Yan could not compare to her. Most importantly, there was an allure to her that only mature women would have. There was incomparable sexiness in her even just normal gestures.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but think, if anyone marries this woman...

Then the man would be a cold person if he doesn’t let her squeeze him dry!

After repeatedly ensuring that Tiantian was unhurt, the woman stood up and walked towards Ye Zichen.

“Thank you so much for saving Tiantian. This is my card, I wonder what I should call you?”

Ye Zichen received her namecard.

Beauty Jewelers, Xiao Yumei.

“Ye Zichen,” Ye Zichen shrugged and said as he played with the name card in his hand. “I’m just a poor student, so I don’t have anything like a name card to give you.”

“Daddy.”

Tiantian leaped into Ye Zichen’s arms once more.

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen and Xiao Yumei both revealed a hint of awkwardness.

“Tiantian, don’t call people so indiscriminately.”

Xiao Yumei pulled Tiantian back to her side and took out a card to hand to Ye Zichen.

“Although this is a bit distasteful, but I really am unsure of how to repay you. There is a hundred thousand in this card, just treat it as...”

Before Xiao Yumei finished, Ye Zichen had already pushed the card back.

“I don’t need the card, it seems like you should be Tiantian’s mother. What I want to say is that don’t let Tiantian cross the streets by herself again, although she’s still young, it’s too dangerous. I saved her since I saw her, she might not be so lucky next time.”

Ye Zichen pinched Tiantian’s cheeks a little, then patted away the dust on his clothes, before turning and leaving.

“Mommy, Daddy left.”

Tiantian’s face frowned, as she pointed her delicate little hand towards Ye Zichen’s figure.

Xiao Yumei pulled the little girl’s hand down and shook her head.

“That isn’t Daddy, you can’t just call anyone that, okay? If you see him in the future, you have to say gege.”

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen took off the jade pendant from his neck and saw that the originally sparking green jade pendant was already covered with cracks, devoid of any light.

That old man Yue Lao truly didn’t lie to him. That jade pendant really could save a person’s life. As he thought back on the situation just now, if he didn’t have this jade pendant, then he really might have died.

At that moment, Ye Zichen’s phone rang.

“Ye-zi, location.”

As soon as Ye Zichen told Su Yiyun his location, the other person immediately hung up. Then, not even three minutes later, a fiery red sportscar appeared in front of him.

Su Yiyun pushed open the door and waved his hand towards Ye Zichen.

“Get in.”

Ye Zichen was wondering why Su Yiyun called him, then he found out that this guy was invited to a Ore Auction. He thought that he would be bored alone, so he decided to bring Ye Zichen to experience it.

“Are you interested in testing your luck?”

Ye Zichen shook his head as he looked at the piles of ores in the trading hall.

“You better not touch these rocks. Even if you want to bet, tell me, only buy when I tell you to.”

“You know about stone gambling?”

Su Yiyun was shocked.

“Kind of.”

Ye Zichen nodded without denying it.

Although most of these rocks looked pretty good, he, who had the Fiery Eyes of Truth, could tell whether jade would come out of it with a glance.

Stone gambling was essentially a slice of heaven and a slice of hell all in one place.

However, judging from the appearance alone, most of the people buying things would go to hell in this convention.

Within the huge ore convention, there was suddenly an ore that someone was willing to pay over twenty million for.

Su Yiyun was instantly interested, and pulled Ye Zichen through the crowd.

“Xiao Yumei, your company should really need this ore, right?”

“Heh, there is no need for Director Bai to worry about whether I need this ore.

Xiao Yumei, whom Ye Zichen had just met a short time before, was one of the ones bidding. As a jewelry shop owner, she

naturally would not miss out on the bidding of ores.

Most importantly, her jewelry shop was being viciously attacked. In order to help the jewelry shop stand back on its feet, she need a piece of ore that had a lot of jade in it in order to make up for everything.

“Elder Liu, are you sure that this stone can give me a lot of jade?”

Xiao Yumei looked at the elder beside her. This elder was their jewelry shop’s consultant and was an expert with a reputation within the circle of stone gambling.

“Is Director Xiao not confident with my choice? This stone will definitely give out jade.”

The elder replied impatiently, while his shameless reaction caused Xiao Yumei to frown.

Although this elder was an expert, he wasn’t helping her out for free, she was paying him a hundred something thousand per month.

They were employer and employee, since the elder was working while receiving payment, his attitude caused Xiao Yumei to be very unhappy.

However, there was no helping it, she could only restrain herself with her jewelry shop company’s current situation.

“This ore requires a lot of money, I can’t help but to be more careful,” Xiao Yumei replied with a light smile, then spoke up once again. “Twenty-three million.”

“Ye-zi, do you think that ore will give out jade?”

Su Yiyun looked over at the extremely large ore. This ore looked very clear and its patterns were clear. From the outside, you could see the faint green moss within.

This rock would definitely give out jade without any surprise. Furthermore, its quality would also be very high.

“No.”

Ye Zichen shook his head, although this rock looked like jade would come out of it, it was only in appearance.

“Are you sure?”

“Don’t be fooled by its appearance, the more it looks like it can give out jade, the less it actually would. In the end, you’ll lose everything.”

“Twenty-five million!”

The bids for that ore increased gradually, so Xiao Yumei could

only call out again with a clench of her teeth.

“Thirty million.”

At the very moment this astronomical value appeared, everyone present sucked in a breath of cold air, whether they were stone gamblers or owners of jewelry stores.

Ye Zichen was also attracted by this slightly-oppressive price calling. However, when he saw the person, he instantly went into shock.

“Why was she here?”

From Xiao Yumei’s appearance, she was determined to get this rock.

However, thinking about the truth about this rock, Ye Zichen hesitated a bit, then decided to tell Xiao Yumei the truth.

It was her problem whether she believed him or not.

Chapter 17 – So-Called Expert

“Director Xiao, you’re going all in?”

A mocking laugh rang out. Xiao Yumei frowned, then gave the person a cold stare.

The reason her jewelry chain’s state was like that was mostly due to the man in front of her.

“Hey, in my point of view, what’s the point of a woman being so strong? Might as well follow me, wouldn’t it be better if the two of us became one?”

“Dream on!”

“Heh, how long do you think you could possibly last against me?” The man with a dark expression sneered and snapped his fingers. “Thirty five million!”

It seemed like he was determined to oppose her.

Xiao Yumei looked at the very promising looking ore in front of her and clenched her teeth.

“Four...”

“Director Xiao!”

Before she was able to call out the price, Ye Zichen hurried over.

“Mr. Ye?”

Xiao Yumei first revealed a hint of surprise in her eyes, then she very quickly smiled. He had saved her daughter, but didn't ask for anything in return. She wanted to use her contacts to search for him, yet she actually bumped into him here.

“Does Director Xiao want to buy that ore?”

“Yeah, you also know that I own a jewelry business. The chance of this ore giving out jade is extremely large and it should be a huge amount. I won't hide it from you, my jewelry chain is currently in danger, and this ore is needed to stand back up.”

Xiao Yumei told him everything about her current situation. Originally, she shouldn't speak about this sort of thing to an outsider, but she didn't know why...

When she was facing Ye Zichen, she felt like he had some sort of magic about him, causing her to be unwilling to hide anything from him.

Ye Zichen nodded after hearing it and whispered in her ear.

“Director Xiao, if you buy this ore, then I feel like you might

never be able to stand up again!”

Xiao Yumei’s expression tensed up. What did Ye Zichen mean by this?

Was he trying to tell her that this ore would not give out jade?

“Mr. Ye also knows about stone gambling?” Xiao Yumei asked in a testing manner. Ye Zichen chuckled lightly, “Director Xiao, don’t call me mister, it feels weird. You can call me Ye-zi or Zichen. As for stone gambling, I do understand a bit.”

“If it’s just a bit, then don’t bullshit. This ore has a clear patterns and it shows a faint greenness from within, meaning that there is moss inside. These are the signs of a lot of jade. What are you trying to accomplish by running over and saying that this rock would not give out jade?”

Xiao Yumei’s consultant, Elder Liu, suddenly got pissed. Ye Zichen frowned, then glanced over at the old man.

“Who’s the old man?”

“Zichen, this is our company’s stone purchasing consultant, he is an expert at selecting stones.”

“Expert!?”

Nowadays, regardless of what industry was, a bunch of experts and masters would always pop up. They didn't have any true capabilities and merely said stuff.

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth in contempt, then said to Elder Liu.

“Elder Liu, you said that this ore would definitely give out jade, right?”

“Of course!” Elder Liu said with certainty.

“Then what if it doesn't?” Ye zichen suddenly asked.

Elder Liu raised his eyebrows, “It's impossible for this rock not to give out jade.”

“Don't care about if it will or not. I'm just asking you what happens if it doesn't!”

Ye Zichen stared at Elder Liu closely. Elder Liu smiled after a glance at that ore.

“Buying ores has always been something where the risks are proportional to the rewards. Nobody can promise that all of the stones will give out jade. If it doesn't, then all that can be said is that the appearance of this stone tricked everyone.”

“In the end, you’re just saying things without shouldering any of the risks, right?” Ye Zichen sneered. He pointed at that huge ore and said. “This is an ore worth several tens of millions, just by saying that it will give out jade, you made Director Xiao do everything she could to compete for it. If it gives out jade, you gain a large amount of commission. If it doesn’t, then you took no risks. Why do you get all the good stuff and none of the bad?”

Seeing that Ye Zichen and Elder Liu were arguing, Xiao Yumei quickly comforted them.

“Zichen, these are the rules of buying ores. I do need this ore...”

“Rules, rules my ass,” Ye Zichen snorted. “Director Xiao, if you believe me, then don’t touch this rock.”

“Xiao Yumei, do you want this rock or not?”

When Director Bai saw Ye Zichen, who was by Xiao Yumei’s side, his dark gaze turned even more sinister.

“Heh, no need for Director Bai to worry. Several tens of millions is not a small amount, can I not consider the matter a little?”

Xiao Yumei retorted coldly, then looked towards Ye Zichen with a questioning gaze.

“Zichen, why are you not letting me take this rock?”

“This rock would not give out jade.”

Ye Zichen replied to her quickly. Xiao Yumei clenched her teeth and bit her lips, then looked closely at that really promising-looking ore, then finally chose to believe in Ye Zichen.

The rock fell into Director Bai's hands. He glanced coldly at Xiao Yumei, who was not far away, and said.

“Director Xiao, this rock is a rock for you to stand up again. You actually gave it up so easily? What, do you not have enough funds?”

“I truly am out of money, I hope Director Bai gains and wins the bet.”

Xiao Yumei's expression was as cold as frost. When Director Bai looked towards her, a hint of greed flashed across his eyes.

“It's a certainty that I will win, it's just that how pitiful it is for Director Xiao. It's such a good rock.”

As he spoke, Director Bai paid for the rock. The stonecutter, who stood by the side, also asked.

“Director Bai, do you want to cut it here or take it back to cut it yourself?”

“Cut it here.”

That rock looked extremely promising, it was highly likely to give out jade or even a large piece of jade. Xiao Yumei had given up halfway. If it really did give out jade, it would be a good way to attack her.

“Heh, Director Xiao will regret it when that happens.”

Elder Liu also laughed darkly at her side.

Xiao Yumei did not even notice Elder Liu’s comment. She merely stared straight at the ore. Although she believed in Ye Zichen’s words, she was still a bit nervous in her heart.

If there really was jade, she would definitely regret giving up halfway.

The cutting of an astronomically priced ore at the scene immediately attracted a large amount of viewers in the hall.

The stonecutter looked at Director Bai respectfully, “Director Bai, how do you want to cut it?”

Director Bai casually picked up a stick of chalk and drew three lines on the rock.

“Cut it along these lines.”

The ore was very large, and since it was inconvenient to move the rock, they could only move the machine. The stonecutter machine was finally placed on the line Director Bai drew after the hard work of three stonecutters.

Zzzzz.

A white mist covered everyone's gaze as the ear-deafening sound rang out.

At that moment, everyone's hearts were tense.

The crowd instantly turned silent. Only the humming of the stonecutter could be heard in the hall.

Crack.

The ore was split into two as the saw cut deeply in.

At that moment, the grey and white face was extremely eye-catching. Director Bai's face instantly turned pale.

This isn't right, they should have saw green when they cut across the line he had drawn.

“It lost, it lost!”

It was unknown who had laughed out at his misfortune. Meanwhile, Elder Liu also frowned.

The happiest person in the all was Xiao Yumei, it was clear through this cut that even if this ore gave out jade, it wouldn't be worth the price it was bid for.

Director Bai looked at that piece of rock with a pale expression. Losing money wasn't a big deal, his losing face was.

What's more, this ore was extremely big, even though a section was cut right now, a judgement couldn't be made that easily.

“Cut-Cut it again!”

Chapter 18 – Buying A Useless Piece Of Rock

“Expert Liu, didn’t you say that this ore would definitely give out jade?”

As Ye Zichen looked at the grey and white face that had been cut, Ye Zichen revealed a mocking smile.

“No one will know what the result will be until the very end.”

Elder Liu replied forcefully. Meanwhile, Director Bai had also started the second cut.

It was still showing a grey and white face without a single hint of green.

“He lost, definitely lost.”

“Cut again!”

It was still a grey and white face.

“Cut again!”

During the second cut, the many experienced people already knew that he had definitely lost the bet on this ore.

However, Director Bai didn't believe it, he couldn't believe that such a promising ore was actually a piece of useless rock.

After six cuts, the huge ore fell into pieces.

Only at this moment did Director Bai looked at the pieces on the floor with a dark expression without saying anything.

“Director Bai is truly bold, actually spending several tens of millions to buy a useless piece of rock. He definitely is a prime example for our industry.”

When Xiao Yumei saw that the rock really didn't give out any jade, she did not forget to verbally attack Director Bai, that one who had been opposing her everywhere, who was being shocked about Ye Zichen's ability.

“Heh, Xiao Yumei, don't be so full of yourself. I did lose when gambling on this stone, but I can afford it. But you? If you don't manage to buy good jade, then your jewelry chain can sit and wait for its closure.”

Director Bai snorted, then left from the crowd. Due to his words, Xiao Yumei's originally good mood was ruined.

True, if she doesn't manage to buy some good rocks, then...

“Expert Liu, why did the rock not give out any jade?”

Ye Zichen didn't know why, but he just didn't like the look of this expert, so walked in front of him and mocked him a little when the rock had been completely cut...

“Stone gambling relies on luck, by the appearance of that rock, it should have given out jade, but who could have known that it was just on the surface and that it tricked everyone.”

“Don't find so many excuses if you just aren't educated enough. Why did this rock not trick me?” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth. “Just now I said that the rock would not give out jade, I wonder who it was that retorted against me so angrily!”

“Young man, this old man had been in the circle for ten-odd years, I've seen more ores than the number of grains of rice you have eaten. You only got it right once, don't be so cocky.”

Elder Liu replied with the tone of a senior teaching a junior a lesson. Ye Zichen shrugged, then looked around at the different ores.

A piece of black and square ore caught Ye Zichen's eye. This rock wasn't small and was at least a hundred kilograms.

However, it had no patterns and did not show any greenness. It had clearly become a useless rock in the eyes of everyone.

“What does Elder Liu think about this rock?”

“A mere piece of useless rock.”

Elder Liu replied with a careless glance.

“Director Xiao,” Ye Zichen waved towards Xiao Yumei.

“Zichen, I didn’t manage to thank you yet. It was fortunate that you told me not to buy that piece of rock, otherwise, I really would have lost everything.”

“Director Xiao is too courteous.”

“Stop calling me Director Xiao. It seems like I’m a bit older than you. If you don’t mind, then call me Mei-jie.”

Ye Zichen truly had helped her out a lot, she only had a bit more than forty million in liquid assets, if she bought and lost the bet on that rock, she might have already committed suicide.

“Mei-jie.”

Ye Zichen wasn’t a fool, other people couldn’t even begin to wish for such a beautiful older sister.

“Ha, look and see if there is any ores you like here. Older sister will buy one for you.”

“Sis, buy this one.”

Ye Zichen pointed at that square and black rock.

“This one?” Xiao Yumei frowned. Although she didn’t know how to select rocks, she did understand some of the basics.

This rock was clearly an useless piece of rock. If they bought it, they would definitely lose on it.

“That rock is clearly an useless piece of rock. How about sis helping you pick another one? Don’t worry, sis will pay for you,” Xiao Yumei said in goodwill. Ye Zichen helped her out many times, and had refused money in return, so she wanted to repay him through other means.

“No need, it looking promising doesn’t mean that it will give out jade. Wasn’t the one just now a good lesson?”

The moment Ye Zichen said that, Director Bai and Elder Liu, who were not far away clearly tensed up.

Xiao Yumei also nodded with a smile. Since Ye Zichen wanted to buy this one, then she’d buy it.

“I’ll take this piece of rock.”

Xiao Yumei handed the card over. When Elder Liu saw that, he couldn't help but shake his head.

“It would be weird the company doesn't go bankrupted when you don't use money in the right places.”

“Elder Liu, watch your tongue,” Xiao Yumei said coldly. She didn't have time to deal with this old man yet.

His random picking nearly caused her to lose everything. However, she didn't cause trouble for him, she never would have thought that he would say these sort of depressing things in front of her again.

Director Bai, who had lost a lot of money just now from stone gambling, also laughed coldly.

“Director Xiao, the jewelry stores couldn't have given you too much pressure, causing you to go mad, right? You are actually buying a piece of useless rock?”

“Director Bai, right?” Ye Zichen glanced at Director Bai and said. “Director Bai was quite right in the head just now, you used several tens of millions to buy a useless piece of rock. Truly bold!”

“Say that again?”

Since Ye Zichen mentioned his sore spot, Director Bai nearly coughed up blood due to his anger.

He raised his finger and pointed at Ye Zichen's nose, but then he heard a cold laugh beside him.

“If you don't want your finger to leave your hand, then take your hand back.”

“Young-Young Master Su!”

The person that spoke up for Ye Zichen just now was of course Su Yiyun. When Director Bai saw him, it was like a mouse seeing a cat, since his entire forehead was quickly covered in sweat.

“My bro can buy whatever he wants to buy, how is it any of your business? You think you have a good judgement after using several tens of millions to buy a piece of useless rock? I'm telling you, even if my bro bets wrongly, I can afford the loss!”

“Young Master Su is right!”

“F*ck off!”

Su Yiyun chased Director Bai away. Seeing that, Xiao Yumei was still in shock as she looked at Su Yiyun, who was walking towards them, and said.

“Young Master Su.”

“Director Xiao!”

Su Yiyun’s attitude towards Xiao Yumei was also very friendly due to Ye Zichen.

“I didn’t think that Zichen was actually Young Master Su’s friend, it seems like older sister was stupid, I actually wanted to help you buy an ore. You could easily buy the ore yourself.”

Xiao Yumei took a step back, but Ye Zichen shook his head.

“Mei-jie, I’m just a poor student. I definitely cannot afford such a large piece of ore. You buy it for me.”

A strange look flashed across Su Yiyun’s eyes. He did understand Ye Zichen.

Although Ye Zichen liked to con people, he definitely wouldn’t do it to people he was familiar with.

What’s more, he had at least five million in his card, this unpromising looking rock was at most four thousand per kilogram, he could easily afford it.

Yet, Ye Zichen chose to get Xiao Yumei to buy this rock. Could it be that this rock would give out jade?

“Alright, then older sister will buy it for you.”

Xiao Yumei did not hesitate and directly bought the ore for Ye Zichen.

“I think that you deliberately came to con Director Xiao’s money.”

Elder Liu said darkly once again. Ye Zichen merely smiled in reply and called the stonecutter over.

“Cut the rock!”

Chapter 19 – Xiao Yumei's Red String Of Marriage

Since the ore price was six hundred and sixty thousand, the price was rather nice.

Hearing someone asked for the stone to be cut, a bunch of jewelers surrounded them. Yet, when they saw Ye Zichen's rock, they all lost interest.

“Which idiot bought this rock?”

“Yeah, it would be a wonder if this crappy piece of rock gives out jade.”

All of the comments were for one side. Everyone felt that this rock would not give out jade. Elder Liu also smiled coldly.

If this rock could give out jade, then it would be fine if he ate the crappy piece of rock that Director Bai cut just now.

“Director Xiao, how do you want to cut it?”

The stonecutter took the rock down, while Xiao Yumei got Ye Zichen to come over with a smile.

“Ask him.”

Ye Zichen's eyes flashed with a gold light. After a brief moment, he picked up the chalk, but was unsure of how to draw the line.

“What are you drawing for, just cut it down the middle to show that it's a loss.”

“Ol' Three,” Ye Zichen suddenly called Su Yiyun over. “If the surface is so close to the jade that it can't be cut, what should be done?”

“Rub!”

“Why are you cursing me?”

“I said rub!” Su Yiyun rolled his eyes and make the gesture of rubbing the stone.

Only then did Ye Zichen understand. He turned around and shouted at the stonecutter.

“Rub it.”

Ha.

The entire crowd instantly sneered.

Does this sort of rock need rubbing? Does he really think that the rock is pure jade?

“He must have gone mad wishing for money.”

Elder Liu also them mocked off to the side.

The customer is always right, since he was asked to rub the rock, the stonecutter naturally had to follow their instructions.

The stonecutter took out the sandpaper board and furiously rubbed on the ore.

White powder fell from the rock.

“Green, it’s green...”

When the people with sharp eyes saw the green, the stonecutter also was amazed.

“Pour water.”

A bucket of water splashed down, causing the jade-green to become even more clear.

Imperial green!

Everyone on the scene went wild, such a bad-looking rock actually gave out jade, and it was an imperial jade.

Elder Liu's face looked like he ate fly crap...

This was a blatant smack to his face.

“Sir, would you like us to continue?”

“Continue!”

Ye Zichen smiled. The stonecutter immediately rubbed even harder.

This sort of imperial jade could only have been found by chance, they don't see much of this sort of gemstone even though they cut stones every day, so they worked even harder.

“He won, he won a lot!”

Everybody exclaimed continuously. Xiao Yumei also covered her mouth on the side and opened her eyes wide.

“He actually won.”

When another bucket of water was splashed down, the shade of green on the ore was already extremely sharp.

“Sir...”

“Continue!”

Ye Zichen revealed a confident smile, he knew very clearly whether this rock’s green was just a layer or if it was completely green.

“Little bro, don’t rub anymore, what if you lose! How about selling it to me for ten million?”

“Bastard, you want to buy Imperial Jade with ten million, do you think you’re buying leftovers! I’ll pay twenty million...”

The price continuously rose. Xiao Yumei bit her lips and looked towards Ye Zichen.

“Zichen, can you sell this ore to me?”

“Mei-jie, you really know how to crack a joke, you bought this rock, this rock is yours.”

Ye Zichen shrugged, then smiled towards Xiao Yumei.

Xiao Yumei looked at the carefree Ye Zichen in shock. All of a sudden, she didn’t know what to say.

This imperial jade could make so many pieces of jewelry, it was worth at least billions.

But he...

Hearing Ye Zichen and Xiao Yumei's conversation, the surrounding jewelers all stopped calling their price.

Xiao Yumei was kind of famous in the circle, everyone in the industry felt a bit jealous of her for betting on such a great gemstone, but what they felt more of was congratulations.

Ye Zichen walked over to Elder Liu. At this moment, Elder Liu's expression was already terrible to the max.

Jade had appeared, and it was a complete imperial jade.

"Elder Liu, what do you think?"

"This old man did make a mistake," Elder Liu snorted, while clenching his teeth. However, Ye Zichen twitched his mouth and said, "If you aren't good at it, then stop conning people. Expert? What a joke."

Despite having a lot of retorts, Elder Liu was unable to say any of them. He could only leave his annoyance buried in his heart.

Ye Zichen smiled as he saw Elder Liu's annoyance. At this moment, Su Yiyun also came over.

"Ye-zi, what's going on? Did it really give out jade?"

"What do you think? If it doesn't, then would I tell Mei-jie to buy it?"

"But that imperial jade is worth at least eighty or ninety million. Since you know that it would definitely give out jade, why didn't you buy it? It's not like you can't afford it."

Su Yiyun said curiously. This was no small amount, even he would be moved by this.

"Alright, let me give you an example. If you desperately need this jade to keep your business afloat, and I gift it to you after buying it with my own money. Would you take it?"

"No, it's too valuable."

"Then if it was with your money?"

"That would seem to be better."

Su Yiyun thought about it, then very quickly understood.

“You were intentionally helping Director Xiao.”

“You aren’t that dumb.”

“But, Ye-zi, you really are generous, giving out a gemstone worth billions just like that,” Su Yiyun raised a thumb towards Ye Zichen.

“Just giving her a helping hand, do you understand? Mei-jie’s company is in trouble, since I can help, then why not?”

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at Su Yiyun. What they didn’t know was that Xiao Yumei had heard everything.

Xiao Yumei has always showed an image of a strong independent woman in front of other people, but no one understood just how fragile her inner self was.

When she heard that Ye Zichen thought so much for her, her heart instantly had a different feeling.

Dingdong.

Received Marriage String x1.

Another marriage string?

Ye Zichen momentarily blanked. He didn’t do anything, why did

another marriage string appear?

He clicked open his Treasure Chest on his phone, then saw two marriage strings.

One of them belonged to Su Yan and him!

The other one...

Possessor: Ye Zichen, Possessed: Xiao Yumei

Affability level: 100

Damn!

Ye Zichen was very confused, how did he get a marriage string with Xiao Yumei, and the affability level was so high as well.

It was actually 100.

Su Yan and his was only 40.

Ye Zichen sneaked a peak towards Xiao Yumei and found that she was looking straight at him.

The gentleness in her eyes was about to melt him.

No, no!

Ye Zichen quickly turned around.

Xiao Yumei had a daughter, that clearly means that she is married.

Then what was this marriage string?

The third person?

At that moment, Xiao Yumei walked towards Ye Zichen.

“Zichen.”

“Mei-jie.”

Due to the existence of the marriage string, Ye Zichen clearly understood that Xiao Yumei held some feelings for him, causing him to feel weird even when he was only speaking.

“This ore is truly too important for older sister, you truly helped older sister a lot.”

“It is my honor to help Mei-jie.”

Xiao Yumei felt more and more moved, while the gentleness in her eyes became clearer.

Even Su Yiyun, who was on the side, felt the strangeness in the atmosphere. He immediately revealed a meaningful smile.

“Zichen, you saved Tiantian and helped older sister out so much. Older sister doesn’t know how to repay you. How about this, come to older sister’s home so that she can make you a meal personally?”

All of a sudden, Xiao Yumei’s eyes sparkled with anticipation.

Chapter 20 – Level Six Celestial Pill – Body Strengthening Pills

It was hard to refuse eagerness.

Thus, Ye Zichen had followed Xiao Yumei home.

When Tiantian, who was watching anime on the sofa, saw Ye Zichen, she directly jumped down from the sofa.

“Daddy.”

Ye Zichen looked at Tiantian, who was hugging his leg and looking at him with a smile, completely unsure of what to do.

Making a mistake once was fine, but he was going to be in trouble if she kept on making that mistake.

Xiao Yumei also heard Tiantian’s way of addressing Ye Zichen, but this time, she didn’t correct her immediately.

“Auntie Tang, go back first. It’ll be fine for me to watch over Tiantian, I don’t have anything to do tonight.”

“Alright.”

The fifty-something year old woman in the mansion smiled, then

left the mansion after taking off her apron.

“Mommy, did Daddy come to see Tiantian?”

“Mhmm, he came to see Tiantian.”

Xiao Yumei pinched Tiantian’s cheek, while Ye Zichen stared at what had happened in front of him blankly. He didn’t understand why Xiao Yumei would reply Tiantian like that.

“Good Tiantian, go and watch TV. Mommy has something to say to Daddy.”

She patted Tiantian’s head, then Tiantian very obediently ran over to the sofa.

Ye Zichen looked at Xiao Yumei blankly, while she spoke up.

“Tiantian actually has severe autism.”

“?”

Ye Zichen was momentarily confused. Xiao Yumei sighed.

“Actually, Tiantian is a child I adopted, she has had severe autism since a young age. She has always lacked fatherly love, so she might be desperate for a daddy. I hope you will not mind her acting

like that.”

“I won’t, Tiantian is very cute. What’s more Mei-jie is so pretty. It seems like I got lucky since Tiantian calls me daddy.”

Ye Zichen shook his head with a light smile. Hearing that, Xiaomei instantly blushed.

“Zichen, you really know what to say. That’s that. Play with Tiantian for a moment, I’ll go and cook for you.”

“Alright, I’ll be troubling Mei-jie.”

Xiao Yumei got changed into her clothes at home and walked towards the kitchen, while Ye Zichen arrived at Tiantian’s side.

It was unknown why Tiantian really liked sticking with Ye Zichen, the moment he sat down, Tiantian hung on him like a koala.

“Daddy...”

Tiantian only ever said that one word to Ye Zichen. All of a sudden, Ye Zichen felt a bit sad.

He really didn’t expect that the cute girl in front of him actually had severe autism.

Mei-jie was rather pitiful, being a woman that was fighting out there alone...

Ye Zichen caressed Tiantian's head slightly. Since this child needed fatherly love, then he'll just treat it as a white lie and not expose the truth.

All of a sudden, Tiantian actually fell asleep in his arms.

At that moment, Xiao Yumei was in the kitchen.

She felt a lot of things as she watched Tiantian getting along happily with Ye Zichen.

Actually, Tiantian had seen a lot of men before meeting Ye Zichen, but Tiantian would stay far away from them regardless of who they were.

Only Ye Zichen...

Perhaps, the heavens were pitying them, so they stuffed a man into their lives.

This man was truly far better than her ex, but...

Was she really worthy of him?!

Xiao Yumei sighed slightly and suppressed the strange thoughts in her heart, then walked into the kitchen.

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Xiao Yumei decreased by 5. Current affability level: 95.

The affability level dropped!

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, just what action did he do to tick off Xiao Yumei, causing her affability level with him to drop?

No matter how he thought about it, Ye Zichen could not understand, so he just took out his phone.

He opened the WeChat group. The WeChat group was very busy twenty-four hours a day as if the deities didn't need any rest at all.

The situation was completely different to the calmness when Ye Zichen had just entered the group. He couldn't help but think silently, was this the butterfly effect of him entering?

He scrolled up through the chat history and saw that several red packets had appeared.

They were sent by Erlang Shen and Taibai Jinxing. Judging from the chat, they seemed to be playing a game of red packet sequence.

Immortality Peach Fairy: @Old Lord Taishang, send red packets!

God of Thunder: Old Lord, stop hiding, you got the most cultivation from this old man's red packets. It's your turn to send some.

Erlang Shen: Even I sent them. Don't think about escaping, my Howling Celestial Dog is watching!

.....

The deities continuously pestered Old Lord Taishang to send red packets. Without any other choice, Old Lord Taishang sent three sighing emojis.

Then...

Dingdong.

F*ck!

Ye Zichen has already been waiting for a long time, so he clicked down with his readied finger the moment the red packet appeared.

Collected Old Lord Taishang's red packet.

Body Enhancing Pill x1.

What is this for?

Ye Zichen clicked open the Treasure Chest, and saw a gold pill sitting in the square after the marriage strings.

Body Enhancing Pill: Level Six Celestial Pill

Old Lord Taishang refined it using 49 days. There are 49 per furnace.

Effects: Improves bodily functions by a large margin.

Wow, this is good stuff.

Ye Zichen sneaked a peek at the group, since it was a red packet sequence, then someone else would naturally send more. However, what made people helpless was that the luckiest person last time was the God of Thunder, who was the best at being shameless.

Thus, this red packet sequence ended there.

Ye Zichen lost interest in the group without any red packets to snatch. He threw his phone to the side and hugged little Tiantian with both of his arms so that she could sleep more comfortably.

The dinner Xiao Yumei cooked was very simple, there were three dishes and a soup.

Tiantian sat in the middle of Ye Zichen and Xiao Yumei, making the scene like that of a family of three.

However, Ye Zichen could feel while they were eating that Xiao Yumei was trying to intentionally distance herself from him.

After dinner, due to the drop in affability level, Ye Zichen did not think that she would tell him to stay overnight.

What's more, he wouldn't accept it if they moved too quickly after just meeting.

“Zichen, thank you so much.”

Xiao Yumei took Ye Zichen to the mansion entrance. There, she thanked Ye Zichen earnestly.

“Mei-jie, you really don't need to be so courteous.”

“Older sister has a request, I wonder if I can say it?”

Xiao Yumei hesitated for a moment before biting her lips and speaking up.

“Of course.”

“Can you come to the mansion often? Tiantian seems to really like you.”

Although Xiao Yumei wanted to distance herself from Ye Zichen, she subconsciously did not want to just let Ye Zichen go like this.

Especially since Tiantian liked him.

“Of course it isn’t a problem. As long as Tiantian wants to see me, you can find me any time.”

“Mhmm, Tiantian is still in the room by herself, so I won’t send you off.”

“Alright.”

After saying his farewells to Xiao Yumei, Ye Zichen casually stopped a taxi.

In the middle of the journey, the car slowly stopped.

“Ye Zichen, right?”

The driver suddenly asked. At the same time, Ye Zichen also noticed that the place that the taxi stopped was not his school.

“Yeah, what do you want?”

“What do I want?” The driver laughed coldly, then opened the car door. “Get out, someone paid to buy a leg off you.”

Chapter 21 – Pure Dragonball Fanboy

They were in the suburbs of the city.

Ye Zichen didn't think that the driver had already drove this far. It's all because he was just playing with his phone in the car and didn't look at the road.

Clap, clap.

As the yellow-haired driver clapped, six or seven young men, who had dyed their hair with all sorts of colors, walked out from the bushes.

“Hey, bro, you earn quite a bit of money doing what you do, right?”

Ye ZIchen smiled with a cowardly look. Although he was a bit confident with his ability, it was hard for one person to fight against multiple people.

If he really fought these people, he might not be able to win.

What's more, this was the f*cking suburbs, he still needed these people to send him back to school.

“Don't f*cking waste laozi's breath. Choose it, which leg?” The yellow-hair pulled out a baseball bat from somewhere and put it on

his shoulders.

“Big bros, don’t get so irritable! Why must we get violent in such a peaceful society. Am I right?”

As he dragged the time on, Ye Zichen put his right hand in his pocket and opened WeChat using his familiarity with his phone.

But he couldn’t click open that Treasure Chest even after opening WeChat.

“Brat, what are you doing in your pocket?” Yellow-hair pointed Ye Zichen’s arm a few times with his baseball bat.

Pa.

The phone fell onto the floor, while the yellow-hair roared.

“F*ck, you want to call the police!? Beat him!”

The ones with green and red hair immediately surrounded Ye Zichen. They say when a person was in danger, they would often be able to use the infinite potential of their bodies.

Ye Zichen was no exception to that.

With a flip, he grabbed the phone in his hands and opened the

Treasure Chest.

Withdraw Body Enhancing Pill.

A delicate jade bottle appeared in his hands, but Ye Zichen didn't have time to appreciate it.

He poured out the golden pill from the bottle and directly chucked it in his mouth.

Bang.

A wave of power surged through Ye Zichen's body, while his eyes also released a faint golden light.

“Super Saiyan!”

It was unknown which one of them shouted that, but Ye Zichen couldn't help but snort coldly for fun.

“I actually let you discovered the secret of me being a Namekian. It looks like I can't let you live.”

Transform! Super Saiyan!

The yellow-hair's baseball bat directly snapped with Ye Zichen's punch.

Ye Zichen did not hesitate at all, and with only a few punches and kicks, he was able to all beat those delinquents to the floor within a minute.

Putong.

“Big Bro, I didn’t know that you were a Super Saiyan. I promise I definitely will not leak the news of you being a Namekian. Please let me off.”

The yellow hair prostrated on the ground, while his face was covered his mucus and tears. Ye Zichen had truly shocked him.

Although his subordinates hadn’t received any kind of systematic training, they were all masters at fighting and definitely hit hard.

But damn, just how long did it take...

All of his subordinates were lying there, while screaming in pain!

Ha.

Ye Zichen nearly laughed out loud because of this yellow hair. This child’s intelligence is truly worrisome. It seems like he watched too much Dragonball.

He really treated me as a Super Saiyan.

But, messing with him seemed rather fun.

“Are you sure you will not reveal it? Don’t think about lying, I have my ways to know about your thoughts!”

His eyes flashed with a gold light, causing the yellow-hair to shudder.

.....

He peed himself.

“I really won’t say it, I definitely won’t say it, I swear...”

Even though he peed himself, yellow-hair still acted like he didn’t know and solemnly swore while raising three fingers.

Ye ZIchen twitched his mouth in contempt, then pointed towards the clothes of the red-hair, who was beside him.

“Mhmm, you truly didn’t lie. Go and change, then take me back to Polytechnic University.

As they took the taxi back to the road, yellow-hair had already changed his clothes, but the smell was still a bit...

Ye Zichen rolled down the car windows. Even though he couldn't take it, he still had to.

There were no other cars here!

“Bro, are all you Namekians Super Saiyans?”

He's still mentioning it...

Although Ye Zichen couldn't bear to do this anymore, he still had to continue the act.

“Yes,” Ye Zichen said with a cold expression. Yellow-hair peaked at Ye Zichen and said, “Big Bro, can you accept me as your underling? I never missed any episode of any of the Dragonball franchise, I have always had a dream of becoming a Super Saiyan in my heart!”

He truly was a Dragonball madman, he completely went dumb from watching!

“It is alright, but let me ask you something first.”

“Please say it, big bro!”

Yellow-hair nodded furiously.

“Was it a person called Fu Chengming that called you to come find me?”

Ye Zichen thought about it after getting in the car, it seemed like the only one with a grudge and the motive was him.

“Yeah, big bro, how did you know?”

Yellow-hair was completely shocked. Ye Zichen twitched his mouth, then grabbed yellow-hair’s shoulders and said solemnly.

“If you really want to follow me, then the organization will give you a mission right now.

“Big bro, say it!”

“Fu Chengming is actually an android sent by the evil forces, he has always wanted to destroy the friendship between Namek and Earth. Your mission is to watch him, and report the situation to me any time there’s a change!”

Yellow hair’s expression turned serious.

He didn’t think that the organization would give him such an important mission.

Androids!

He hated them the most!

“For the tribe!”

“Bro, you’re in the wrong show!”

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes.

After yellow-hair sent Ye Zichen back to the school, he drove the taxi away. Before leaving, he promised Ye Zichen that he would watch the android closely.

Ye Zichen didn’t know whether he should laugh or cry for meeting someone as foolish as that.

However, he couldn’t help but take to note that Old Lord Taishang’s Body Enhancing Pill was really amazing.

After that pill entered his body, Ye Zichen felt like all of his bodily functions were being developed.

For example, his current reaction speed was at least twice as fast as a normal person’s.

After returning to the dorm, it was no surprise that his roommates were all fighting on Summoner’s Rift.

“F*ck, Ol’ Five returned. Hurry up and help me play a bit, my stomach is really hurting.”

The moment Ye Zichen entered the room, Big Bro Kang Peng held his own stomach and ran out.

Ye Zichen sat down in front of Kang Peng’s computer while everyone else greeted him.

Solo top Riven.

Ye Zichen had always played support in the dorm. The main reason was because he was too terrible, the people at the dorm wouldn’t let him play any of the other positions.

Even though he was just playing for Kang Peng, Zhu Yunbai couldn’t help but lower his confidence.

“Fifth Bro, if you really can’t, then just hug the turret and farm. Just don’t feed the enemy Fiora.”

“Yeah, Ol’ Five, please don’t feed the enemy Fiora. The enemy’s Fiora has an extremely high win rate, it might even be an Elo Booster.

“Don’t feed!”

Everybody in the room pretty much said the same thing. As Ye

Zichen thought back to his own match data, he couldn't retort, and could merely twitch his mouth.

“Alright.”

Before the minions were there, Ye Zichen stayed under the turret and thought about reading some Riven guides, but the enemy Fiora directly stood in front of him and started taunting him.

F*ck, he definitely couldn't accept that.

Ye Zichen immediately leaped over after leveling Broken Wings.

Fiora brought Ignite. She did not back down against Ye Zichen's Riven and fought directly.

After a trade in abilities, the Fiora nearly lost her entire HP bar. The enemy also realized that it was looking bad, so she turned around and ran.

Ran!

Ye Zichen flashed.

First Blood!

Chapter 22 – A Grey For The Booster Goddess

A light-speed first blood.

Everyone in the dormitory was shocked as they watched Ye Zichen, who was relaxing completely naturally.

When they were playing LoL before, they were terribly thankful if Ye Zichen didn't give up first blood. The fact that he actually got first blood completely shocked them.

“The Fiora on the other side is too crappy, right? Ol' Five got first blood!”

“Is his biaodi playing or something?”

“My god...”

Ye Zichen also showed a shocked expression. Indeed, he had never met this sort of situation before.

Could what they said be true? It really was the cousin playing on the other side?

At the same time, in the voice chat for LoL.

“Goddess, what happened, how did a Master give first blood to a Gold?”

Shocked exclamations sounded out across the voice chat. They were a set elo-booster team from all over the country.

The one playing Fiora was the only female on the team. Her main account was Master on Ionia, people in the circle all called her Booster Goddess.

“I got distracted.”

The Booster Goddess answered vaguely. When she said this, she blushed a little.

Actually, she was concentrating fully when she was fighting just now, she just didn’t know how the other person dodged all her abilities.

Their manipulation of the champion could be only described as completely fluent. It didn’t seem like a Gold player at all.

“Could the other person be an elo booster as well?”

The Booster Goddess had her suspicions. But so what, as a Master player, even if she meets other elo boosters, she wasn’t afraid.

“This time I’ll play properly and destroy him.”

The Booster Goddess laughed coldly, causing the people in voice chat to instantly cheer.

These people had played together for a very long time, they understood each other's strengths very well. The Booster Goddess was the best in terms of controls on the team.

The team had utmost confidence in her.

But...

An ally has been slain.

The Booster Goddess was slain once again in less than three minutes of laning.

“Ye-zi, what happened. You solo-killed her again!”

“Damn, it can't be. Could it be that Fifth bro has a talent for top...”

Everyone in the dorm raised their eyebrows. At the same time, the booster team also exploded in voice chat.

“Goddess, have you been drinking?”

“Goddess, don’t worry, wait for me to gank him!”

The Booster Goddess turned silent as she stared at the dark screen.

That shouldn’t have happened!

She was Master!

“I don’t believe it!”

Booster Goddess turned completely serious. At the same time, Kang Peng also returned from the bathroom. Right after entering the room, Ye Zichen returned Riven to him.

“Wow, not bad, Ye-zi. You killed two? The biaodi is playing on the other side, right?”

Ugh.

Ye Zichen was speechless, he truly had no way to stand up in the dorm when it came to LoL.

With two kills, Riven against Fiora was a huge advantage.

Kang Peng swore that he would wreck the other side...

“Big bro, what happened?”

“Even Ye-zi wrecked him, you still got killed even when you are an item ahead?”

The entire dorm mocked Kang Peng, while a round of laughter sounded out in the booster team’s voice chat.

“The Goddess is back.”

Booster Goddess also smiled a bit. Like she thought, how could she, a Master, be unable to defeat the other side.

She just had been careless early on.

After that, Booster Goddess solo-killed Kang Peng’s Riven four more times. The entire dorm groaned, while Kang Peng also got angry, as he swore while pushing his keyboard to the side.

“F*ck, the other side is definitely an elo booster.”

“How about I give it a go?” Ye Zichen got a bit excited, he clearly felt that the speed of his hands and his reaction speed had improved greatly when he was playing Riven just now

It was obvious that the Body Enhancing Pill was taking effect.

“Then give it a shot.”

Kang Peng’s mood was sullen, so he just decided to let Ye Zichen play for him.

“Goddess, what happened again?”

Within a minute of Ye Zichen playing, he directly killed Fiora.

“An accident.”

However, before a minute has passed, when the Booster Goddess had just reached the lane...

She died again.

Like this, Ye Zichen killed the Booster Goddess a few more times, then went to help mid and bot a few times.

Solo-top Riven became their dear papa.

Then the game ended.

Ye Zichen essentially carried the entire game by himself.

If you had to say it in one phrase, it would be a god carrying four trolls.

After the game ended, the amazing score showed everything, and Kang Peng got crushed by the other side.

No matter how dumb everyone was, they could guess that Ye Zichen was truly good, and the other side definitely wasn't being piloted by a noob.

“C'mon, start another game. Ye-zi, continue playing top.”

Coincidentally...

Although the booster team lost, no one blamed the Booster Goddess, they merely thought that the goddess was not in her proper conditions.

They cheered each other up in voice chat a bit, then started another game.

“We crashed, it's them again...”

Room 2016 and the booster team said at the same time.

“So what if we crashed, let's wreck them...”

Ye Zichen was completely confident in his capabilities.

At the same time, the Booster Goddess also smiled when she saw Ye Zichen's number.

This time, she was still top. She played Irelia, who was definitely a strong champion in this patch.

Ye Zichen used Pantheon. If there was no surprises, then he would definitely get wrecked.

“I must wash away the shame from the previous game!”

The Booster Goddess silently swore in her heart. She directly started off with Doran's Blade. What surprised people was that Ye Zichen's Pantheon did the same.

A fight between powerhouses must have a death....

Yes, the Booster Goddess was wrecked by Ye Zichen once again.

Ye Zichen carried his team to victory was again, while the Booster Goddess, who was wrecked twice, directly said in voice chat.

“I'm not playing anymore. I'm not in the proper condition, find someone else to carry.”

With that, she quit the voice chat.

As she looked at her pitiful score, she clenched her teeth and chose to add Ye Zichen as a friend.

Old Friend as sent a friend request.

Accept.

Ye Zichen: What, you want to curse me?

Old Friend: Do you dare to tell me your WeChat? I feel like you hacked, I want to solo you offline.

Ye Zichen: You're so childish? What? You want to pretend to be a mob on the internet now?

Old Friend: I'm just asking if you dare!

Ye Zichen: Nope!

After sending that, Ye Zichen directly deleted the Booster Goddess as friend and added her to the ignore list.

“What did he say to you just now?”

Kang Peng asked curiously, while Ye Zichen rolled his eyes.

“Idiot wants to solo me offline, I can tell that he's underaged, so I

just ignored him.”

“Haha, that’s pretty dumb. Play a bit more?”

“Play your ass, just what time is it? Let’s sleep.”

Ye Zichen pushed the keyboard to the side, then jumped into his bed to lie down.

While Ye Zichen did that, at the same time, in a certain girl’s dorm in Polytechnic University...

A very sweet-looking girl with a bit of baby fat sat cross-legged on a chair and looked at the account that disappeared from her friend list, as well as the conversation that she didn’t close...

“This is pissing me off, pissing me off...”

Chapter 23 – Picking Up A Dog From Leftovers

While the professor continuously spoke at the front of the room, Ye Zichen slept at the back of the classroom.

There really was no helping it. He was going to sleep the previous night, but the animals in his room had dragged him off to a network café near school to play an entire night of games.

To be honest, he was rather energetic while he was playing, but the sleepiness instantly came when he arrived at school.

This was a sleep that lasted for the entire morning.

“Ye Zichen.”

Just as Ye Zichen was sleeping soundly, he felt someone carefully nudge his arm.

Ye Zichen blurrily opened his eyes, and saw a girl that could barely get an eighty standing quietly beside him.

“You’re looking for me?”

Ye Zichen didn’t think that he knew this girl, but the girl nodded with certainty.

“Yes.”

“What for?”

“I...” A faint blush appeared on the girl’s face. “Can I have lunch with you?”

A girl was asking him out!

Ye Zichen was very confused!

This sort of situation has never appeared before. All of a sudden, Ye Zichen was actually unsure of how to reply.

“No, Riche Bro has a date at noon.”

The weird Xia Keke popped out from somewhere and immediately hugged Ye Zichen’s arm, then blinked towards the girl with a smile.

“Then at night...”

“Night time is no good either, Riche Bro has a date at night.”

The girl bit her lips and stared at Xia Keke before running away from the classroom. Meanwhile, Ye Zichen looked at the arm that

Xia Keke had been hugging awkwardly.

Don't think that Xia Keke was just a loli due to her face, she developed very well in the areas that should be developed.

She wore rather little during the summer, so Ye Zichen was able to clearly see the outline of Xia Keke's chest.

"Riche Bro, you're really popular recently," Xia Keke acted like there was no one else as she chatted while hugging his arm.

"Shouldn't you let go?"

Ye Zichen glared at her. A hint of craftiness flashed across Xia Keke's eye, then she rubbed really hard before letting go.

This damn girlie.

Ye Zichen swore silently in her heart, he shamelessly had a reaction due to her action just now.

"Riche Bro, it's no good as a man if you don't have self-control."

Ye Zichen's expression darkened upon hearing that. If it wasn't because you teased me, would I have reacted like that?

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at Xia Keke and said unhappily.

“What did find me for?”

“Hehe, Riche Bro is so petty, I’m just kidding!” Xia Keke smiled, then crossed her arms and said, while dipping her head, “I want to treat Riche Bro to lunch, I wonder if Riche Bro will give me the honor...”

“Say the truth...”

Ye Zichen couldn’t roll his eyes anymore. When Xia Keke noticed that she couldn’t trick him, she could only twitch her mouth with boredom.

“An old uncle wants to pay to date me. I told that guy that I have a boyfriend, but he didn’t believe it. So, help me pretend.”

“Pay to date you? How much?”

“Riche Bro, that isn’t the point, okay?”

Xia Keke revealed an expression of helplessness, causing Ye Zichen to quickly apologize.

“Sorry, sorry. But, just how much did the old uncle want to pay? I’m just curious about how much you’re worth!”

“How much would you pay if it was you?” Xia Keke revealed a

cute expression once again, causing Ye Zichen to shutter. At the same time, he raised two fingers.

“Two hundred thousand?”

Ugh.

Ye Zichen nearly spit.

“Twenty, no more than that.”

“Go and die.”

Since Ye Zichen was unable to put up with this girl's begging, Ye Zichen ended up going with her to a coffee shop.

“How much longer is he going to take?”

Ye Zichen asked as he looked at the WeChat group.

The WeChat group seemed to fallen into a quiet phase. The time of the last message sent was 10 in the morning.

Ye Zichen scrolled up, and saw that three deities had sent red packets.

Ye Zichen habitually clicked all of the red packets. Although he

knew that there definitely wasn't any left at the moment, he was still willing to do it.

He might get some leftovers!

Speaking of which, Ye Zichen really did get one.

You received Howling Celestial Dog's red packet.

When Ye Zichen saw that he could still get a red packet, his heart beat wildly, but when he saw that it was from the Howling Celestial Dog...

No wonder no one wanted it, a dog sent it.

Eliminated Dog from the Celestial Dog Show x1

F*ck, eliminated!

Ye Zichen's face nearly covered in distaste.

"Should be quick. He said he was on his way when I called him just now."

Xiao Keke was clearly not interested in that uncle. She held her head with her hands and blinked, while staring straight at Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen, who was just about to check his friend's statuses, felt the gaze from opposite him. He subconsciously gulped, then put his phone away and backed away a bit.

“What! What's with your gaze?”

“I'm just curious, why would Susu like someone like you? You aren't really handsome, and don't seem to be really rich. You seem to be trash at academics as well, why is it that I can't see your good points?”

Xia Keke tilted her head and looked at Ye Zichen curiously.

Ye Zichen knew that Xia Keke couldn't say anything good, so he just ignored the second half of what Xia Keke said.

“You said Su Yan likes me? She told you?”

“Don't think too much, I'm just speculating,” Xia Keke rolled her eyes at Ye Zichen. “I just noticed that Susu has never went out with any guy, then you suddenly popped up, so I got curious.”

“Tsk!”

Ye Zichen looked at her with an expression of despise.

“Oh yeah, why didn't you just find a boyfriend? What's me

pretending supposed to be?”

“If I find a boyfriend, then I have to find one who’s better than me at League.”

“Isn’t that simple?”

Ye Zichen shrugged, most of the girls playing League were in Silver or Gold, it’s really hard to find one in Platinum or Diamond.

There were so many talented people in Polytechnic University, it was all too simple to find one who was Diamond or above.

“Easy? This girl is Master on Ionia, okay?” Xia Keke raised her delicate chin and said coquettishly. “There hasn’t been any that could pique this lady’s interest in Polytechnic University.”

Ye Zichen instantly spaced out.

He looked at Xia Keke like he was looking at a monster.

Master.

And it was such a pretty girl.

“What rank are you?” Seeing Ye Zichen’s shocked expression, Xia Keke felt an indescribable pride.

“Gold,” Ye Zichen answered honestly.

“Noob. When this lady is in a good mood, I’ll help you climb. Boy, you can only get girls if your rank is high!” Xia Keke patted Ye Zichen’s shoulders a few times like an older brother, causing him to be unable help but smile wryly.

“Then carry me tonight!”

“No, I’m not in the mood recently. I got wrecked yesterday, so I have to relax.”

The moment Xia Keke mentioned that, she revealed an expression of depression. Ye Zichen couldn’t help but snicker when he saw that.

Girls were moody, the people they meet in Master were definitely people around the same skill level, isn’t it normal to get wrecked?

Just as he wanted to say a few words to comfort her, Ye Zichen saw the corner of Xia Keke’s lips raise.

“Riche Bro, he’s here. Don’t give it away later, ‘kay?”

Chapter 24 – Take Him Away

Ye Zichen turned his head back to look.

There was a spherical object that had appeared at the entrance of the coffee shop.

His forehead would be covered in sweat after only a few steps, it also looked like his body was weak, so it seemed like he needed some medicine to help with his kidney function.

“Beauty, I came.”

That Fatty had the accent of a foreigner, when it was accompanied by the large golden necklace and the large golden ring, it couldn't help but cause Ye Zichen to think of the word “upstart”.

“Boss, didn't you want to see my boyfriend? He is my boyfriend.”

Xia Keke blinked her large and cute eyes, and reached out her white finger and pointed. At the same time, Ye Zichen also stood up.

The main reason of the fatty looking like a ball was due to his height.

From the looks of it, he was only approximately 1.65 meters. Ye

Zichen was 1.86 meters, so he was a head taller.

“Fatty, I heard that you want to pay to date my girlfriend? How much are you going to pay? Let me see if it’s worth it.”

The moment Ye Zichen finished, Xia Keke pinched his waist.

You came to help me stop him, what are you saying that for!

When Ye Zichen stood up, the fatty was a bit worried. However, after hearing what he said, his green pea-like eyes flashed with contempt.

A poor student is always going to be a poor student!

“Brat, you want money, right?”

“Don’t worry if I want money or what. I’m just asking you, how much are you paying?”

The fatty raised five fingers.

Fifty thousand!

Ye Zichen subconsciously glanced at Xia Keke, he didn’t think that this girlie was worth so much, fifty thousand...

That was the price of a not very famous escort.

Xia Keke bit her lips, did this guy actually listen to what she had said?

Why did she feel like she jumped from a skillet into a fire pit.

As expected...

“You want to pay to date my girlfriend with fifty thousand. Just look at her body, her curves, what’s more, she’s a talented student in Polytechnic University, she is an existence of both beauty and intelligence, you actually want to pay only fifty thousand.”

“Then how much do you want?”

“Five hundred thousand. If you can pay five hundred thousand for my girlfriend, then I’ll let you have her.”

Ye Zichen waved his hand generously, but the fatty’s eyes turned green upon hearing that.

“Impossible.”

“If it’s Impossible, then f*ck off, don’t try to pay to date a university student. Idiot.”

Ye Zichen showed an expression of contempt. The fatty squinted his eyes, “Alright, little bro, don’t you just want money? To be honest, I pity this beauty quite a bit, she actually had a boyfriend like you. How about this, I’ll pay two hundred thousand, that was the price of a third-rated celebrity.

“Two hundred thousand...”

Ye Zichen hesitated a bit. When the fatty saw this, the despise in his eyes became even more obvious.

A poor student was a poor student indeed.

After a long time...

“Deal!”

Ye Zichen directly agreed. This caused Xia Keke to go completely blank.

She was just sold like that!

The fatty took out a card from his pocket with a face full of contempt.

“There is 1.2 million on that card, that is enough money for half a year!”

“Hehe, boss is truly generous,” Ye Zichen put on a money-loving look and picked up the card, but Xia Keke slammed down on her hand.

“What are you doing?” Xia Keke grabbed onto Ye Zichen’s arm with a nervous expression.

“Girl, it’s two hundred thousand, be happy.”

“Yeah, beauty. Say, what use is it to be with a man like this? You might as well be with me, I can ensure you that you will be rich at least.”

As the fatty tried to persuade her, Xia Keke’s entire face turned dark.

Ye Zichen rubbed his hands and picked up the card.

“This money is mine, right!”

“Yeah!”

The fatty nodded.

“Then...” Though Ye Zichen had picked up the card, he directly threw it onto the table again. “You’re bringing my girlfriend away, so you have to let me have a woman, right? How about this, I’ll pay for your daughter, fifty thousand per month, here is the money for

2 years!”

“Brat, you were f*cking messing with me.”

The fatty stared with his tiny eyes. Ye Zichen shrugged and smiled without denying it.

“You just noticed?”

“Do you believe that I won’t find someone to kill you?” The fatty’s tiny eyes shone with a murderous light. Ye Zichen shrank his neck and pretended to be terrified. “Ya, I’m so scared!”

Slap!

Ye Zichen slapped the fatty’s mouth, causing him to spin around, then Ye Zichen kicked his stomach.

Bang.

The fatty hit the coffee shop’s wall, letting out a loud sound.

This sound startled everyone in the coffee shop.

“Young Master Ye.”

A figure suddenly walked out from the crowd of customers, Ye

Zichen looked over.

It was Bai Dahai, Director Bai from the stone gambling place.

The fatty that had hit the wall also shouted out when he saw Bai Dahai.

“Bai-ge, save me.”

“Lil’ Zhao.”

Bai Dahai was momentarily confused, then looked over the fatty and Ye Zichen.

“What, you want to be a busybody?”

Bai Dahai did want to calm the two of them down, but when he saw the coldness in Ye Zichen’s eyes, he directly swallowed his words.

“I don’t dare.”

That was Young Master Su’s friend. He wasn’t someone he could mess with.

“If you don’t dare, then scuttle off to the side.”

Ye Zichen pushed Bai Dahai to the side and walked towards the fatty.

As Ye Zichen approached him, the fatty's calls to Bai Dahai became more and more anxious.

Bai Dahai shook his head and said.

“Lil’ Zhao, Young Master Ye is Young Master Su’s friend. Although I don’t know how you managed to offend him, but older brother can’t help you.”

Young Master Su!

The fatty's looks instantly turned like a round eggplant. They all knew who Young Master Su was.

All of a sudden, the fatty prostrated on the ground to ask for forgiveness.

“Young Master Ye, just let me go once.”

Slap!

Ye Zichen mercilessly slapped the fatty's face.

“Now you know about calling me Young Master in order to get let

off? Just now when you were fighting over laozi's woman, why didn't you call me Young Master Ye? Oh yeah, weren't you going to find your underling to kill me? Where's your fierceness now?"

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, while wearing a devilish smile on his face.

The fatty's eyes jumped, while he gulped and begged to be let off.

The siren of a police car was heard from outside. Ye Zichen looked out the window and saw two police cars parked outside the coffee shop.

It seemed like someone in the coffee shop had called the police.

Ye Zichen looked at the fatty that was heavily beaten up by him, then slapped his face.

"The police are here, you're safe. But, do you know what to say later?"

"Ye-s."

The fatty couldn't really speak properly due to Ye Zichen's beating. However, hearing that, Ye Zichen sat down.

"How is it, my wife, are you satisfied with what I did?"

The moment Ye Zichen made a move, Xia Keke was completely shocked. She brought him here to help her stop the fatty, but she didn't think it would turn out like this.

However, she didn't seem to dislike it at all, and even found that he was now a bit handsome!

“Police!”

At that moment, the police also rushed in from the outside.

When they saw the fatty, whose face was swollen, one of the female officers roared.

“Who hit him?”

Ye Zichen whistled and looked at the ceiling, while the fatty's little eyes flashed with a hint of struggle, before he clenched his teeth and said.

“Officer, I tripped.”

Even a three year old could tell that it was a lie. The officers glanced around the room.

Then, the blood on the corner of Ye Zichen's trousers immediately caught the officers' eyes.

“Capture him and take him away!”

Chapter 25 – Let Him Go

The lights of the interrogation room fell onto Ye Zichen's face. Since the light made him a bit uncomfortable, Ye Zichen blinked a few times.

Slam..

The female officer walked in from outside the interrogation room and slammed her notebook onto the table.

“Admit it.”

Hearing that, Ye Zichen looked up, he didn't think that the female officer would bring him here just like that.

He glanced at the female's officer's face. The officer was rather pretty.

She had a slender face and long black hair that was tied into a ponytail. The coldness of her expression did not affect her beauty at all.

“Officer, I have nothing to admit.”

“Alright, you're being troublesome,” the corner of the officer's mouth rose. Then she opened the notebook and took out her pen to start an official interrogation.

“Name.”

“Officer, when you are asking for someone’s name, shouldn’t you say yours first?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and smiled, causing the female officer to slam down on the table try to shock him a little.

“Do you not believe that I will throw you into prison in the name of the obstruction of justice?”

“Why so angry!?” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth. “At least tell me your surname.”

“Lin.”

“Hehe, Officer Lin, I’m called Ye Zichen.”

“Age.”

“Twenty.”

“Gender.”

“...” Ye Zichen stopped. He couldn’t help but think of that answer that people were already sick of.

“How about I take it out for you to see?”

“Take it out yourself to see.”

Officer Lin didn't answer at all. Ye Zichen had thought that he could cause her to be angry just like in novels, but she just directly hit the ball back into his court.

“Male.”

“Why did you hit him?”

“Officer Lin, you really are sort of falsely accusing me. The fatty already told you personally that he tripped, what right do you have to be framing me, and saying that I hit him?” Ye Zichen said with a helpless expression.

“Heh, don't pretend to be innocent. The reason the victim said that might very well be due to being threatened beforehand. Don't try to go around circles with me, just directly admit it,” Officer's Lin's eyes stared straight at Ye Zichen, as if it was going to go through his heart.

“I didn't hit him,” Since he was going to resist, Ye Zichen planned resist to the end. If he admitted it, he would have to be detained for at least half a month.

“How long do think you can pretend for? We have already sent the victim to the hospital, with our protection, the victim will

point you out in no time.”

“I just didn’t do it,” Ye Zichen decided to act shameless with her, and stared at Officer Lin’s chest. “36C, they’re very big.”

“You...”

Officer Lin slammed the notebook onto the table and stood up. Ye Zichen also opened his eyes wide then shrank backwards.

“What, the police are going hit people?”

“Heh, hitting you is hitting scum at most!”

Officer Lin cracked her knuckles, and approached Ye Zichen with a cold expression.

“The police are going to hit someone...”

...

“Susu, sorry, Riche Bro was brought to the police station since he was helping me.”

Xia Keke pouted pitifully as she called. The person on the other side of the call momentarily blanked out, then said worriedly.

“Then how is he?”

“I don’t know, but that police lady looked so mean, I don’t know if Riche Bro will suffer inside.”

“Alright, I understand.”

Slam.

The call ended. Xia Keke stood outside the police station and looked inside a few times. Then, after a bit of hesitation, she dialed a number.

“Officer Lin, don’t forget your identity. Even if I am a suspect, you can’t use violence against me, otherwise, I’ll get my lawyer to file a lawsuit against your police station.

Ye Zichen gulped and warned with an intent of threatening her. God only knows what this crazy woman was going to do to him.

He was still handcuffed, even if he got beaten, he could only take it forcefully.

“Don’t worry, we have a lot of ways to make you hurt, but unable to get any wounds that can be detected,” Officer Lin was like a little devil as she approached Ye Zichen step by step.

At the moment she raised her hand, Ye Zichen suddenly

submitted.

“I’ll admit it!”

“Heh, wouldn’t it be fine if you admitted it from the start,” Officer Lin sat back down with a proud smile. “Say it.”

Bang.

Just as Officer Lin picked up the pen, the door to the interrogation room was banged open.

“Captain Lin, there’s a call.”

“I’m interrogating a suspect.”

“The chief called.”

Officer Lin threw the pen to the side angrily and snorted, “Wait for me to deal with you when I get back.”

“Chief.”

“Lil’ Lin, did we arrest a gentleman with the surname Ye?”

Officer Lin’s expression tensed up after hearing that.

“Yes.”

The tone of the other person clearly stopped a bit, then said anxiously continued, “Hurry up and let that Mr. Ye go.”

“But he intentionally...”

“Nothing, Lil’ Lin, this is the orders from the higher-up. Furthermore, the military had also just asked us to release that very same Mr. Ye, do you understand!?”

Officer Lin hesitated a long time as she held the phone, then she couldn’t help but sigh.

“Understood.”

Officer Lin hung up the call and looked at the police officer beside her.

“What did the victim say?”

“The victim is determined to say that he tripped and that it has nothing to do with the suspect.”

Crack.

“Let him go!”

Ye Zichen walked out of the room in a carefree manner, then before leaving, he ran in front of Officer Lin in a low manner.

“Beauty, I’m going. Don’t miss me.”

“Don’t let me catch you again.”

“Hehe, don’t be so angry. They say if a woman gets angry easily, then she’ll bleed too much in her time of the month.”

Ye Zichen made a face at Officer Lin, causing her to clench her teeth in anger.

As she looked at Ye Zichen’s cocky image, Officer Linn couldn’t help but clench her fist.

“Find all the information we have on Ye Zichen and bring it to my office.”

Ye Zichen’s mood could only be described by one word after leaving the police station.

Amazing!

“Riche Bro.”

Xia Keke, who had been waiting outside the police station, leaped into Ye Zichen's arms. Ye Zichen subconsciously caught her, and saw that the loli in his arms was already crying.

"You scared me so much..."

"It was no big deal, why is your mental capability so weak? I really don't know how you got into Master."

"This lady... did it... through skill!"

Xia Keke instantly put on a strong and tsundere face when LoL was brought up, but she still stuttered as she wept.

"Alright, alright, it's through skill. Keke's League skills are the best."

"Of course."

Xia Keke sniffed and looked up. She looked blankly at Ye Zichen's smiling face, then tipped up on her toes.

Smooch.

A pair of warm and wet lips landed on Ye Zichen's cheek. When he turned around in shock, he saw Xia Keke giggling as she wiped away her tears.

“This is this lady’s first kiss. We don’t owe each other anything now. No blackmailing me with this in the future.”

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen’s heart jumped.

Thinking about the girl’s kiss, Xia Keke can’t have also gotten a marriage string with him, right?

Chapter 26 – The Broken Marriage String

Your affability level with Su Yan has decreased by 40. Current Affability level is 0. The marriage string snapped.

It actually wasn't Xia Keke's marriage string showing up.

Ye Zichen was a little disappointed for some unknown reason. This loli was rather good looking and her strange appearance also made people like her alot...

No!

That wasn't the main point, alright?

Su Yan's marriage string snapped.

Ye Zichen hurriedly opened his phone's Treasure Chest. It really was as he expected, there was only a marriage string with Xiao Yumei left.

Su Yan's marriage string had already disappeared.

Just what exactly happened, why did Su Yan's affability level with him suddenly decreased to 0?

Could she have seen Xia Keke...

Ye Zichen quickly searched around to find Su Yan. At this moment, on the street opposite the police station...

Su Yan stopped a taxi and got in.

“Su Yan...”

Ye Zichen shouted loudly, but the taxi door had already closed, and it was getting ready to drive away.

“Susu came?” Xia Keke, who didn’t know what happened at all, looked around. “No, I don’t see Susu, you hallucinated, right?”

“I... Su Yan saw you kiss me just now, so her affability level towards me turned to 0.”

“Affability level turned to 0?” Xia Keke was completely confused. Meanwhile, Ye Zichen rubbed his throbbing head, unsure of what to say.

He couldn’t exactly tell her that he had Yue Lao’s marriage string and knew of the affability level between Su Yan and him, right?

“Never mind, let’s go back to school.”

“Oh.”

Back at the dorm, Ye Zichen's roommates were still fighting on Summoner's Rift. Just after they entered the room, they invited him excitedly, only to be faced with his refusal.

Play games my ass.

The goddess was going to leave me, okay?

He opened the chat with Yue Lao on WeChat, and directly sent a row of angry emojis.

"My celestial friend, what happened?"

"My marriage string with Su Yan snapped. Yue Lao, can you connect us again?"

"Allow me to go and check."

Not long later, Yue Lao sent another message.

"The marriage string did snap, but it only has the effect of linking you two. It snapping means that it isn't time yet, being forceful isn't going to end up well. I can't exactly..."

"Okay, okay, okay, I get it."

Ye Zichen couldn't be more annoyed. However, Yue Lao sent another message over.

“The treasure that celestial friend sent me is nearly gone, I wonder...”

Scan.

Send.

Yue Lao received your red packet.

“Take it to smoke, don't bother me.”

After sending Yue Lao away, Ye Zichen blanked out on the bed.

He finally got linked with Su Yan with much difficulty, but it snapped so randomly.

The goddess left him, just like that.

At that moment, Ye Zichen's heart was in shambles.

At the same time, in Su Yan's room.

Xia Keke skipped into the dorm and saw Su Yan zoning out on the sofa.

“Susu, what are you doing?”

“Keke, you came back,” When Su Yan saw Xia Keke, a flash of light flashed across her eyes.

“Yeah, I had been waiting for Riche Bro at the police station just now. I’m so tired.”

Xia Keke casually kicked away her shoes, then laid down on the bed. After rolling around the bed a bit, she asked.

“Riche Bro said to me that he saw you at the police station. Did you go just now? Why didn’t I see you?”

“Nope,” Su Yan shook her head.

“I was saying, Riche Bro must have had a hallucination,” Xia Keke sat up and stretched, then walked and sat down in front of the computer. “I have to continue to fight. There are so many jobs that I haven’t finished.”

“Keke!” Just at that moment, Su Yan spoke up, but then went silent again.

Xia Keke looked at her in confusion. Su Yan also bit her lips and asked, “What do you think about Ye Zichen?”

“Mhmm,” Xia Keke blinked, then suddenly smiled. “He’s great. I feel very safe with him.”

“Is that so...”

Hearing Xia Keke’s reply, Su Yan’s face suddenly turned pale, while she forced a smile.

Should I explain to Su Yan or not?

Ye Zichen hesitated for a long time after clicking open the chat with Su Yan. However, he didn’t manage to send anything.

Argh!

Ye Zichen rubbed his temples and frowned on the bed. After countless struggles, he chose to close the chat.

So what if he explained? Explaining was hiding things.

There was a clear red “1” on his contact list.

Ye Zichen clicked on it, the new friend...

Howling Celestial Dog wants to add you as a friend.

Why did this dog add me!?

He ignored this friend request. Yet, just at this moment, his phone vibrated.

Erlang Shen wants to add you as a friend.

What's this!

Accept.

Right after he accepted, Ye Zichen received a message on his WeChat.

Erlang Shen: Brat, you're very cocky. You actually dared to force this god to wait for so long.

Is he retarded?

He accepted the moment the request came through. Wait his ass.

Then he looked at the intimacy level.

O.

Cold.

At this moment, Erlang Shen sent another message.

“Wow, playing dead, huh? Do you believe that I’ll not tear your home apart with the Howling Celestial Dog?”

...

This retard is a harlot screaming on the streets!

Ye Zichen thought about the large-scale flame wars that he had seen in the chat before. It seem to be all initiated by Erlang Shen.

If it was before, Ye Zichen would definitely submit to him.

However, the goddess had just left him, so he was in a terrible mood.

“You got business with me?”

“Heh, not playing dead anymore?”

“Just fart out whatever you have to say, stop wasting my time. This god is very busy and have no time to waste with a small fry like you.”

“You’re cocky. Say your celestial title, see if laozi beats the shit out of you or not.”

“Say your ass.”

Click.

Ye Zichen directly deleted him.

Dingdong.

Erlang Shen wants to add you as a friend.

Who cares.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes.

Someone @’d you.

Not even a minute later, Ye Zichen saw that Erlang Shen had @ him in the group.

You piece of shit!

Ye Zichen was instantly pissed.

That grandson truly started flaming immediately.

He clicked open the group.

Erlang Shen: @Only Idealism, little bastard, you actually dared to delete laozi. Don't play dead with laozi, say your celestial title!

God of Thunder: Erlang Shen started to flame again.

Mother of Lightning: Watching.

Immortal Peach Goddess: Aiya, I have to watch the garden. I have no time to watch this, what a shame.

Jade Rabbit: Selling white carrots, water carrots and large carrots on the front row.

The entire crowd of deities all arrived just to watch the flame war.

Erlang Shen: @Only Idealism, weren't you very cocky just now? Come, pretend with laozi. Why didn't you submit? I'm telling you to say your celestial title, stop playing dead

Erlang Shen: @Only Idealism.

Erlang Shen: @Only Idealism.

In an instant, the entire screen was filled with messages from

Erlang Shen @ Ye Zichen.

Alright.

Erlang Shen was forcing him.

He had become famous in the celestial realm for a long time, even the Victorious Fighting Buddha, the Monkey King, was only equal to him in a fight. He was truly undefeatable in terms of fighting prowess.

However...

In terms of flaming...

I am a capable young man that has experienced twenty something years of nurture by the country, and watched over several tens of thousands of videos. How could I back down?

I might as well go forcefully instead of submitting.

Chapter 27 – Erlang Shen The Shameless

“Grandson, why did you @grandpa so anxiously? Do you need pocket money?”

Since Ye Zichen did not appear for so long, the deities thought that the flame war would not begin, and had prepared to leave.

However, once this message was sent, people were instantly shocked.

Erlang Shen: Little bastard, you finally came. Quickly announce your celestial title.

The hell was a celestial title, how could Ye Zichen have one.

He twitched his mouth and directly sent three contempt emojis.

“The heck use is announcing my celestial title, the stronger person is the boss. State your coordinates, let’s meet face to face.”

The moment Ye Zichen said that, all of the deities watching were shocked.

They thought to themselves, that deity is too amazing, he actually dares to fight face to face with Erlang Shen.

Erlang Shen clearly was stunned as well. He had been famous in

the heavenly realm for a long time. Aside from the monkey that dared to fight with him, everyone else would avoid him.

This brat actually dared to meet him face to face.

“Alright, then we’ll meet face to face.”

He wasn’t a war god for nothing. If Erlang Shen was scared of fighting face to face, his reputation would be all gone.

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen directly sent the map over. The entire crowd was shocked by the map.

“What is this?”

“Don’t get it.”

“I’ve never seen this, where is this?”

Erlang Shen was also one of the ones that was confused. What are these intersecting lines? He didn’t get it.

“What did you just send?”

“It’s laozi’s address. Come, it’s Bingcheng Polytechnic

University.”

“How do you get there?”

“Tsk, this is a secret location. This sovereign only entered through a series of events. You’re asking how I got in here? How would this sovereign know?”

“...” Erlang Shen stayed silent for a moment, then instantly blew up. “You’re messing with me, right?”

“Messing with you? You don’t deserved to get messed with by me. I told you the location already, come if you can, if you can’t then scuttle off to the side to feed your dog.”

“You’re pissing me off, pissing me off...”

Bang.

A flame war begun.

As the number one flamer in the heavenly realm, he had never lost a single flame war.

Within a split second, Erlang Shen used his insane typing speed, filling the entire screen with his messages. Seeing that, Ye Zichen smiled in disdain.

He casually sent an internet phrase over.

Although Ye Zichen did not have the advantage in quantity, every single thing he said was completely on point.

“You little bastard.”

“You’re a dog-feeder in the Heavenly Court.”

“Don’t get cocky with me, I’ll beat the crap out of you if I meet you.”

“You’re a dog-feeder in the Heavenly Court.”

“You’re pretending to be an idiot now?”

“You’re a dog-feeder in the Heavenly Court.”

“...”

“Your little sister got bedded by a mortal.”

“...”

“Your older sister also got bedded by a mortal.”

“ ... ”

“Your Chang’e doesn’t love you!”

“ ... ”

Chang’e: What does this have to do with me.

At the start, Erlang Shen would say ten-odd things before rebutted by Ye Zichen’s one, to him getting rebutted once every time he says something, until the end where Erlang Shen ended up not knowing what to say at all.

Ye Zichen had achieved a complete victory in this flame war.

“Grandson, if you want to fight, then go according to the address. As for flaming... You’re not good enough.”

Ye Zichen sent the message over with a cold smile and three contempt emojis.

Dingdong.

Erlang Shen has sent a friend request.

Accept.

“Grandson, you got business?”

Ye Zichen was still submerged in his pride of his recent victory.

“This celestial friend, I feel like we have a bond. How about we become sworn brothers?”

...

What the hell?

Sworn brothers.

Ye Zichen looked at the intimacy level behind Erlang Shen.

100.

Friendly.

This retard is just a shameless piece of crap, he actually got happy from being cursed. Then came his reply.

“No.”

Ye Zichen directly refused, but Erlang Shen sent another message over.

“Brother, we didn’t get to know each other until we flamed. This god has never been matched in the flame circle in the heavenly realm. They say that a master is lonely. It’s true, I am too empty inside. Every time I cause a flame war, it’s to find someone that can defeat me. Today, you finally appeared...”

“ ... ”

“Bro, I sincerely want to become sworn brothers with you. You should know as well. In the Heavenly Court, I am this!”

Erlang Shen added a thumb emoji at the end of it.

Number One.

Then what rank did he put the Jade Emperor at?

Ye Zichen thought about it, it doesn’t seem too bad to become sworn brothers with Erlang Shen.

To be honest, he truly was too impulsive when he flamed Erlang Shen in the group chat. If any deity pointed out that they have never seen him, or Erlang Shen was determined to make him say his celestial title, then he would be found out.

If he becomes sworn brothers with Erlang Shen, even if he gets found out, he will just @Erlang Shen.

Erlang Shen definitely can tear the person that pointed it out to shred with his insults.

“Alright.”

Dingdong.

Erlang Shen wishes to become your sworn brother.

Accept.

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Erlang Shen increased by 100. Current intimacy level is Trusted, it is 400 away from Respected.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

He didn't think that becoming sworn brothers would increase the intimacy level by 100, this is the first Trusted that he had achieved in the deities' chat group.

“Bro, I wonder how I should call you?”

“This sovereign's dharma name is Nameless. You can call me Brother Nameless.”

“Brother Nameless.”

As Erlang Shen addressed him intimately, Ye Zichen also felt the magic of Trusted.

Now, even if the Jade Emperor told Erlang Shen that Ye Zichen wasn't a deity and he was going to kick Ye Zichen out of the group. This idiot would surely flame the Jade Emperor.

“Brother Nameless, add our family's Howling Celestial Dog as your friend. If you can't find me here, it's the same if you send a message to him.”

Howling Celestial Dog has sent a friend request.

Accept.

Howling Celestial Dog: Woof, woof, woof...

Damn!

It truly was a dog.

Dingdong.

His phone suddenly rang. When Ye Zichen took a look, he saw

that Erlang Shen had actually sent him a red packet.

That Erlang Shen is rather respectful.

Ye Zichen smiled and clicked on the red packet.

You received Erlang Shen's red packet.

Unbreakable Body x1

Unbreakable Body.

This seems to be the Great Sage's ability.

“I wasn't sure of what to give to Brother Nameless. This is a secret scripture that I sent the Howling Celestial Dog to steal from the monkey a while ago. I'll give it to Brother Nameless.”

That Howling Celestial Dog is quite capable.

It could actually steal the scripture from the monkey bro. It seemed like it had always been the monkey bro stealing from other people.

However, to be honest, Ye Zichen was rather interested in that Seventy-Two Transformations.

“Bro, this Unbreakable Body is the ability of the Monkey King, I can barely use it. I wonder if you can do something about the Seventy-Two Transformations...”

“Brother Nameless, it’s not that I’m petty, the main reason is because this Seventy-Two Transformation is too special...”

“Alright, then never mind.”

Since he couldn’t get it, Ye Zichen wasn’t going to force it. It was good enough for him to get the Unbreakable Body. Thinking about it, this guy already sent him a secret scripture... He looked around.

A book fell into his sight.

Scan.

Erlang Shen received your red packet.

“This is?”

“Have a read, it’s definitely useful for you. Do you know why you can’t defeat me in a flame war? It’s all thanks to this book.”

“Then I’ll have to be sure and read it properly.”

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Erlang Shen increased by 50. Current intimacy level is 250, it is 350 away from Respected.

Ugh.

This amount...

Ye Zichen smiled helplessly, then opened the Treasure Chest.

Unbreakable Body!

If he learned this secret scripture, wouldn't he be impenetrable?

Chapter 28 – Deconstruction Incident

Ten days later.

It could be said that Ye Zichen was completely immersed in his own little world due to studying that Unbreakable Body, even though he wished to stop, he couldn't.

The secret scripture that Erlang Shen had sent him was Level 1 of Unbreakable Body. It could pretty much stop knives, lances and sticks.

However, it couldn't really do much against hot weapons, such as firearms.

Basically, this Unbreakable Body was a layer of protective qi, and it could be released and retracted whenever he wanted to. You would release it when you wanted to use it, and retract it when you didn't.

In one word.

Convenient!

“Ye-zi, what are you doing on the weekend? How about going out with me?”

Su Yiyun leaned on his expensive Ferrari and raised his eyebrows

towards Ye Zichen.

“No time, I have to go home and bring my mom over here.”

Before he had even finished, Ye Zichen’s phone rang.

The caller ID was Auntie. Actually, this Auntie wasn’t his relative, it was a neighbor.

However, she has always helped out his home a lot.

“Auntie.”

Ye Zichen smiled slightly, then very quickly turned somber.

“Alright, I understand.”

Slam.

He hung up.

After the call had ended, Ye Zichen’s expression was terrifyingly dark.

“Ye-zi, what happened?”

“Ye-zi, what exactly is going on?”

Su Yiyun was very worried as he looked at Ye Zichen’s dark expression.

Ye Zichen remained silent, but his clenched fists did not relax one bit.

“Ol’ Three, take me back home.”

Ye Zichen’s home was in a small village outside of Bingcheng. Due to the development of the rural areas, the surrounding villages and areas were gradually being bought by the developers and being deconstructed.

Several tens of people surrounded a fallen building. Most of these people were villagers of the village.

Most of them held stuff like shovels and pickaxes in their hands. Opposite them, there were also ten odd men in black vests, holding sticks in their hands, standing with the developers.

“Mom...”

Just at this moment, a voice rang out from the crowd.

The surrounding villagers and the people with the developers looked over.

“Isn’t that the child from Lil’ Ye’s family?”

Many of the villagers recognized him. At the same time, a woman walked out from beside the debris.

Although the woman dressed simply, she had an aura around her, and her smile was extremely intimate.

She was Ye Zichen’s mother, Ye Rong.

“Zichen, why did you come back?”

Ye Rong’s voice was mixed with a surprise that was hard to hide. Ye Zichen quickly ran over to her side and checked her thoroughly.

“Mom, are you alright!?”

“I’m fine, when the developers knocked down the building, mom was with your auntie.”

Ye Rong had a smile on her face, as if her mood was not affected by the forceful deconstruction of her home at all.

Ye Zichen looked at that debris and felt a sense of relief.

If his mom was truly in there at the time...

Thinking about how close danger was to his mom, Ye Zichen was unable to suppress the fires raging in his heart.

He quickly walked in front of the villagers and looked at the developers.

“Who’s in charge here?”

“I am.”

A man about thirty years old walked out from within the group.

“Do you know how dangerous forced deconstruction is? What if there was someone inside?”

“So what if there’s a person in there? I’m telling you, it would be better if someone was in there. If one died, then just treat it as us making an example of him. It’s just a life, it’s not like we can’t afford to compensate for it.”

The developer leader’s voice was full of disdain. Hearing that, all of the villagers revealed an expression of rage. Ye Zichen’s gaze also instantly turned cold.

Crack.

Ye Zichen clenched his fists forcefully, then stared closely at that

developer.

Say that again?”

“Brat, don’t get pretentious here. I’m telling you, if someone died from the forced deconstruction, then so be it, if he did, then he just got lucky.”

Smack.

Ye Zichen threw a card onto the developer’s leader’s face.

“There’s five million in that card.”

“What do you want do?”

“What?” A cold light flashed across Ye Zichen’s eyes. “I’m buying your life.”

“Brat, you are f*cking looking for death, right?” The developer’s leader roared and shouted at the fighters behind him. “Teach him a lesson for me.”

“What, are you letting me sleep?”

At that moment, a young man with a cigarette in his mouth walked down besides the black business car.

The young man walked towards Ye Zichen with a frown. The developer's leader immediately smiled and apologized.

“Young Master Huang, someone wants to cause trouble.”

“Who dares to cause trouble on my turf,” The young man looked up with a frown. When he saw Ye Zichen...

“Young-Young Master Ye.”

“This is your project, right?”

“Young-Young Master Ye, it's all a misunderstanding. It really is only a misunderstanding.”

The young man in front of him was Xiao Hai's cousin, Huang Ming. This project actually wasn't theirs, he just came here to try and get in on it, and to see if he could get something out of it with using his cousin's name.

“Misunderstanding?” Ye Zichen suddenly laughed. “You're standing here, and you're telling me it's all a misunderstanding?”

“Young Master Huang...”

“Young Master Huang your mom, hurry up and apologize to Young Master Ye.”

Huang Ming slapped the developer's face and yelled.

The developer leader immediately cleared up with Huang Ming's slap. It was clear to him that even Huang Ming couldn't afford to piss the young man in front of him off.

“Young Master Ye, it's myself that have eyes that can't recognize Mt. Tai...”

“Stop it, I don't want to hear that much,” Ye Zichen pointed to the card on the ground. “This card is the card used to buy your life. Enjoy it before I find you. I will come to take it.”

“As for you...” Ye Zichen pointed towards Huang Ming. “I will deal with you, but not now!”

“Young Master Ye, this really is a misunderstanding, please let me explain,” Huang Ming begged, while his forehead and back became covered with sweat.

“Young Master Ye, Young Master Ye...”

“Zichen, you can't really be...” Hearing that Ye Zichen said he was going to buy the developer's life, Ye Rong felt rather afraid.

“I'm just scaring him.”

“You child...”

Ye Rong’s expression was full of blame, but not too much reproach.

Ye Zichen smiled at her, then glanced at the developer on the ground.

“These sorts of people need to be scared.”

“You...”

Ye Rong shook her head with a helpless expression. Ye Zichen chuckled, then held her hand.

“Mom, since our home has been taken down, come to live near me.”

“That’s alright,” Ye Rong looked helplessly at the pile of debris. It was indeed not possible to continue living there. “But the cost of living is rather high there. We haven’t signed a contract with the developers, what if they don’t give us money after we leave?”

“He doesn’t dare to not give us the money, am I right, Young Master Huang...”

Ye Zichen glanced at Huang Ming with a cold laugh. When Huang Ming felt this gaze, he felt cold sweat drip down over his

body, causing him to continuously nod.

“Yes, yes, yes, we will definitely pay the money.”

“Then thank you, Young Master Huang.”

“Young Master Huang, save me,” When Ye Zichen and Ye Rong left from the crowd, the developer’s leader, grabbed Huang Ming’s hand tightly. Huang Ming kicked him away immediately, “Save your ass, laozi is finding it hard to even save myself.”

He took out his phone tremblingly and spoke into it with a worried expression.

“Biaoge, I seem to have gotten into trouble.”

Chapter 29 – Meeting Xiao Yumei By Chance

Since Su Yiyun drove a two-seated car there, he couldn't very well bring three people back.

Thus, he just immediately called another car over.

Inside the car, Ye Rong continuously asked about Ye Zichen's school, while Su Yiyun laughed in reply.

"Auntie, Ye-zi is amazing now, he doesn't have very much, just several million. Prepare to enjoy your life."

"Where in the world did you get so much money?" Ye Rong was momentarily stunned, then she asked. "Zichen, you couldn't have gotten into bad business, right?"

"How could that be..."

Ye Zichen and Su Yiyun couldn't help but laugh.

Buzz...

The phone in Ye Zichen's pocket rang. The one who had called was Xiao Hai.

If Ye Zichen still had a bit of good feeling towards Xiao Hai, it was completely gone.

Hang up.

Not much later, Su Yiyun's phone rang.

"Ye-zi, I feel like it's for you."

Su Yiyun handed the phone over to Ye Zichen, who merely snorted and laughed.

"I'm not answering."

"Just answer it, although the brat Huang Ming isn't quite right when he does stuff, Hai-ge is still rather nice. Just do it for me, otherwise, it's rather difficult for me to be stuck in the middle."

Ye Zichen let out a long sigh, then put the phone beside his ear.

"Lil' Ye, it's Hai-ge."

"Mhmm."

There was an indescribable coldness in Ye Zichen's tone. Hearing that, Xiao Hai also paused for a moment, before continuing.

"Huang Ming told me the situation. I'm so sorry for shocking auntie."

“Hai-ge, don’t you think that apologizing right now is far too late?” Ye Zichen sneered. “Back when Huang Ming and the developers forcefully deconstructed the building, why didn’t they think about what might happen. It was all thanks to my mom being lucky this time. If my mom had truly been in the house, could you take the responsibility?”

“Even if I ignore that, and the person inside wasn’t my mom, and was another villager, would you guys apologize sincerely like this?”

“Lil’ Ye, Huang Ming was indeed wrong when he did this. We will compensate you.”

“Compensate? What can you compensate? Money? Do you think I need your compensation? You just need to give me the original amount of money that was supposed to be paid for our moving. Then we won’t owe each other anything.”

Ye Zichen drew his line. Hearing that, Xiao Hai sighed, and smiled.

“Alright, Hai-ge understands. Hand the phone to Lil’ Yun, I have a few words to say to him.”

“For you.”

Ye Zichen chucked the phone into Su Yiyun’s hands. Su Yiyun let

out a soft sigh as he put the phone beside his ear.

“Lil’ Yun, help me talk to Lil’ Ye properly.”

“I’ll try my best,” Su Yiyun glanced at Ye Zichen, who was clearly still enraged. “But I won’t promise you anything.”

“I’ll be troubling you then.”

After hanging up, Su Yiyun turned around. Ye Zichen directly lifted his hand.

“Don’t try to be the middle man, I’m not that easy to talk to.”

“Who do you think I am!?” Su Yiyun rolled his eyes in annoyance. “Aren’t I putting myself at gunpoint just trying to talk to you about it when you’re still angry!? I just wanted to ask where you wanted Auntie to stay. If she doesn’t have anywhere right now, how about you letting Auntie to just put up with one of my mansions with no one living in it right now?”

“No need, find a hotel for my mom to get a room in later. I’ll go and buy her a mansion in the afternoon.”

“Oh yeah, I forget that you’re filthy rich now.”

“You brat...”

Ye Zichen couldn't help but chuckle.

After helping Ye Rong settle down, Ye Zichen went straight over to a real estate agency nearby.

The moment he entered, a real estate agent walked enthusiastically to his side.

“Sir, do you want to look at some houses?”

To be honest, Ye Zichen was rather shocked.

In novels, this would be the part where he gets ignored, after which, he would face slap them. However, that was only in novels, the sales lady was still rather professional here.

“I want to look at mansions!”

“...” The real estate agent clearly spaced out for a moment, she subconsciously checked Ye Zichen out. Although she was shocked, she still led the way with a smile.

The mansion area wasn't together with the normal apartments

Right after the real estate agent led Ye Zichen into the mansion area, Ye Zichen heard a helpless call.

“Tiantian, don’t ran away, be obedient and stay by Mommy’s side.”

Tiantian.

Ye Zichen looked over at the source of the voice and saw Tiantian run over to him with a smile, and hugged his leg.

“Daddy!”

“Zichen.”

Xiao Yumei also was at a loss. She look at Ye Zichen, who picked Tiantian up, in shock, while a hint of redness flashed across her beautiful face.

The real estate agent also was dazed, she didn’t think that this young man would actually be Director Xiao’s husband.

It was fortunate that she didn’t offend him just now, otherwise, she would be in deep trouble.

“Sir, if you know Director Xiao, then I’ll leave first. You can call me any time if you have any needs.”

The real estate agent very understandingly moved to the side. Ye Zichen also picked Tiantian up and walked towards Xiao Yumei.

“Mei-jie, you’re here as well.”

“Mhmm,” It was unknown why Xiao Yumei was sort of avoiding his gaze. Ye Zichen saw all that, but he didn’t think too much about it even though he was a bit confused.

“You...”

“You...”

After staying silent for a while, both of them spoke up together once more.

They looked at each other and smiled. Then, Xiao Yumei spoke.

“You first.”

“Mei-jie, you came here to buy a mansion?”

After asking that, Ye Zichen felt like he had asked a really retarded question, what else could she be doing if she didn’t come here to buy a mansion, could she be coming here to chat up young male real estate agents?

Xiao Yumei couldn’t help but smile as well. She nodded and replied, “I came to buy a mansion, but it was for you. It looks like you have plans to buy a mansion as well?”

“For me?” Ye Zichen momentarily blanked out. At this moment, Lil’ Tiantian, who was in his arms insisted on getting down.

After Ye Zichen placed Lil’ Tiantian onto the floor, she started running around the hall again.

“Tiantian, don’t run away.”

“Director Xiao, we’ll take care of Tiantian’s safety,” the real estate agent smiled. At the same time, Ye Zichen also spoke up, “What were you giving me a mansion for?”

“Didn’t you help me deal with the jewelry shop’s danger last time? I didn’t know how to thank you, so I wanted to give you a mansion. Even if you don’t want live in it, you can treat it as a fixed asset.”

“Actually, I really don’t need...”

Slap!

Waaaaaaa...

Before Ye Zichen finished, a clear slap sounded out in the hall, then the sound of Lil’ Tiantian’s cry immediately followed.

“Tiantian.”

Xiao Yumei was worried and immediately ran over towards Tiantian. At the same time, Ye Zichen followed right after her.

There was a clear hand mark on Tiantian's cheek. The real estate agent stood helplessly on the side, unsure of what to do.

There was a woman standing opposite her. The woman was dressed flirtatiously as she cursed impatiently.

“Whose child is running around here? Why isn't the adult controlling her? It's so unlucky that my newly bought dress was dirtied.”

Slap.

Right when the woman complained, Xiao Yumei walked in front of Tiantian and picked up her.

“How much does your dress cost? I'll compensate you!”

Chapter 30 – Mighty

“This is a new dress from the Paris Fashion Week. A hundred and thirty thousand!”

The woman raised her chin with a hint of pride in her eyes.

“A hundred and thirty thousand. Alright, I’ll pay you.”

Xiao Yumei took out a card from her purse without any hesitation and threw it at the woman’s face.

“There’s two hundred thousand on the card, no need for change!”

“Is this the attitude of you apologizing?” The woman frowned and screamed at Xiao Yumei.

“Do you really think that I’m apologizing to you here?” Xiao Yumei suddenly smiled. She twitched her mouth and looked at the woman, then said coldly. “This is only my compensation for the trouble my child has caused. Now that we have already compensated you for your dress, it’s time for me to talk about your compensation for hitting my child.”

When Xiao Yumei took out two hundred thousand without any hesitation, the people in the hall all knew that this wasn’t going to end well for the loud woman.

As expected, now she was going to deal with you.

Lil' Tiantian, who was in her arms, was still in deep pain. As everyone in the hall heard the heart-tearing cries of the child, they all felt pity for her.

Xiao Yumei also patted Lil' Tiantian's head with pain in her heart.

"Nice, Tiantian, don't cry, Mommy will get revenge for you."

As she comforted Tiantian's emotions, Xiao Yumei looked over towards the woman and smiled coldly.

"Fifty million, that's it."

"You went insane for money, right!" The woman screamed out.

"If you don't have fifty million, then I want the hand that you hit Tiantian with just now."

It was impossible to imagine what it felt like for such a beautiful woman like Xiao Yumei to say something like that to another human being.

Ye Zichen also watched the scene in shock. Mei-jie was not someone so impulsive from what he remembered.

However, when he thought about Tiantian's situation, Ye Zichen quickly understood.

Tiantian was her scale, she would fight anyone who dared to hurt Tiantian, with her life on the line.

“You...”

Before the woman spoke, Xiao Yumei already started to make a call.

“Hu-ge, right? Yes, this is Xiao Yumei, I want you to help me deal with a person. Five million. I want one of her hands. Yes, I'm at Wansheng Real Estate's sales center, just send someone over.”

The woman who had hit Tiantian, never thought that Xiao Yumei was actually serious.

She reached out to grab Xiao Yumei's phone, only to get stopped by Ye Zichen.

“Be quiet.”

When Lil' Tiantian saw Ye Zichen, she slowly stopped crying and muttered while rubbing her nose.

“Daddy.”

“Good Tiantian, don’t cry.”

Ye Zichen’s face was full of a warm smile as he rubbed Tiantian’s cheeks.

It was as if his voice was filled with magic, causing Lil’ Tiantian to really stop crying.

“Tiantian.”

Xiao Yumei’s eyes were still filled with worry as the hand mark on Tiantian’s cheeks was still completely visible.

From this, they were able to tell just how much strength the woman had placed into the slap.

“You are committing a crime here. I’m going to call the police.”

“So what if it’s a crime?” Xiao Yumei suddenly laughed coldly. “From the moment, you slapped Tiantian, you were sentenced to death in my heart. One of your hands is just the interest. Don’t doubt that I have ten million ways to make you silently disappear from this world.”

“What’s going on here?”

A roar sounded out from outside the mansion sales area as a man walked in with a frown.

The man looked very normal, but it was unknown why everyone would subconsciously establish confidence about him when they saw him.

The woman, who was terrified of Xiao Yumei, quickly ran towards the man the moment he appeared.

“Wen-ge, you finally came. If you had come any later, you might not be able to see me.”

As the woman spoke out her troubles in tears, Ye Zichen noticed that Xiao Yumei’s face instantly turned pale when the man appeared.

“Hao Wen.”

“Yumei?” Hao Wen momentarily blanked out, then quickly walked towards Xiao Yumei. “Yumei, how have you been all these years?”

“Stop pretending here.”

Xiao Yumei suddenly laughed, while a distant feeling that caused people to be unable to approach her appeared in her eyes.

“We aren’t familiar with each other, please stay away from me.”

“No matter what, we were once husband and wife, is there a need to go to this extreme?”

Wow.

The entire hall of people instantly exclaimed. They never would have thought that these two people in front of them had such a relationship.

“Being with you once was due to me being blind.”

At this moment, a group of muscular men wearing black vests walked in. The one in the lead was a bald man wearing a thick golden necklace and a vest with a tiger printed on it.

“Director Xiao.”

“Hu-ge, you came.”

“He, I will go in person for all large-scale businesses. Say it, who’s hand do you want?”

Hu-ge touched his bald head, while his eyes shone with murderous light.

“Hers!”

Xiao Yumei's gaze instantly turned cold, as she pointed towards the woman beside Hao Wen.

“Capture her...”

“Wen-ge!”

The girl yelled. Hao Wen's eyes twitched as he looked at Xiao Yumei questioningly.

“What are you doing!?”

“Not much, she hit Tiantian. I'm going to make her pay. Oh, yeah, it's fine if you pay for her as well. Five million!”

“Director Xiao, it isn't quite right for I, Tiger, right? You are asking for five million in one go and only give Tiger five hundred thousand...”

The bald Hu-ge touched his head. Xiao Yumei also chuckled.

“Hu-ge, I, Xiao Yumei am not that sort of stingy person. He might not even pay. If he really does, then how about I double it for Hu-ge?”

“Director Xiao is generous!”

Hu-ge raised his thumb towards Xiao Yumei, then spoke to his subordinates.

“What are you guys blanking out for? Control her. With Director’s Xiao’s word, chop this woman’s hand off.”

“Xiao Yumei!”

“Stop wasting my breath, either pay, or I’ll take one of her hands.”

Xiao Yumei’s eyes were filled with a madness. When Hao Wen saw her gaze, his heart froze for some reason.

He did not doubt the truth in Xiao Yumei’s words at all.

She really could do anything for Tiantian.

“Alright, I’ll pay! Let Han Jing go!”

Hao Wen took out a cheque from his pocket, wrote down five million and handed it to Xiao Yumei.

Ye Zichen could clearly see that her hand shuddered intensely when she saw him take out the cheque.

“Alright, thank you, Director Hao. Hu-ge, let her go.”

“Let her go.”

Hu-ge kicked his underling, causing the underling to let go of Han Jing.

“Let’s go.”

When Hao Wen left the mansion area with Han Jing, Hu-ge laughed loudly.

“Director is truly a big boss, earning five million just like that. It’s so much quicker than us, who just know how to fight, and it’s also a lot safer!”

“Hu-ge is funny. I will wire a million to your account tonight.”

“That’s fine, that’s fine.”

Thus, Hu-ge left the sales center with his underlings. Only when they left did everyone in the sales center let out a sigh of relief.

It was fortunate that no blood had been shed.

“Mei-jie...”

When those that should leave had left, Ye Zichen walked beside

Xiao Yumei.

When he got closer, Ye Zichen saw a faint trace of tears in Xiao Yumei's eyes.

She grasped the cheque worth five million tightly with her right hand, then...

Rip.

She ripped the cheque and threw it onto the floor. Everyone in the hall looked at the scene in shock.

Five million.

She ripped it just like that.

Other people could not understand Xiao Yumei, but Ye Zichen can.

“Zichen, can you hug me?”

Ye Zichen nodded with a smile, and pulled Xiao Yumei into his arms.

The next moment...

She started crying unrestrainedly.

That's right!

No matter how mighty Xiao Yumei was.

There was somethings that couldn't be changed...

She was a woman...

A woman that also needed a man to lean on.

Chapter 31 – World Shattering Rage For A Beauty

Inside Xiao Yumei's home.

Ye Zichen and Xiao Yumei sat opposite each other on the couch. There was a bottle of red wine from 2002 on the tea table in between them.

Nearly half of the bottle had been drunk, most of it was by Xiao Yumei.

“Zichen!”

Xiao Yumei raised her head and called out softly after putting the glass down.

“Mei-jie, I'm here!”

After drinking a few glasses of red wine, Xiao Yumei's cheeks revealed a faint redness due to the alcohol. Her blurry eyes and the raised lips caused her, who was already beautiful, to attract the attention of men even more.

“Do you think that I'm such a failure as a woman?”

“How could that be? Mei-jie has such a large jewelry chain at such a young age, there aren't many people that can compare to

you in business.”

“I mean as a woman...”

Xiao Yumei had drunk a bit too much, so she stuttered. Ye Zichen didn't dare to answer, under these sort of circumstances, if he just casually said things, it would only make Xiao Yumei feel worse.

“We met in university...”

Xiao Yumei leaned back onto the sofa and started to recount her past.

“He was still a really poor young man back then. I was quite happy with him at the time. I was together with him, while disregarding my family's objections. We worked together, and started from scratch.”

“Although we weren't very well off, we were at least able to keep ourselves warm and fed.”

“I don't know when it started, but he started to seek fame. He started to not care about the method in order to achieve his goal. Do you know why we got divorced?”

“Mei-jie, you drank too much. Rest.”

Ye Zichen felt like he shouldn't know these things. He stood up

from the sofa and wanted to bring Xiao Yumei back to her room, but Xiao Yumei's words stopped him.

“The reason we got divorced is rather pitiful. He actually told me to accompany a director for a month just for a business deal...” Xiao Yumei smiled, but tears flowed down uncontrollably. “It's funny, right? He actually told his woman to sleep with another man for a month just for a business deal.”

“Mei-jie...”

“That wasn't even the funniest part. What was even funnier was that he never touched me then! Ha! I argued with him over this, and then we got divorced. I left with nothing. After that, I adopted Tiantian. I thought that my life would go back on track without him, but he went and spread rumors around our circle of friends that I was slutty and kept cheating on him... Do you think that's funny or not!”

“Mei-jie, you drank too much, go to sleep.”

Ye Zichen held Xiao Yumei by the shoulders and helped her up and sent her onto the bed in her bedroom. During that time, she continuously repeated “That's funny right?”.

Crack.

After Ye Zichen left the room, his face was terrifyingly dark.

Xiao Yumei's helpless gaze at the sales center and her pitiful self-mockery would continuously play in his head.

As he watched Xiao Yumei, who was sleeping on the bed, his lips curled.

Believe me, I will make that man pay.

“Is this Huang Ming?”

“I'll give you a chance to redeem yourself!”

“I want this man, Hao Wen, to have nothing left.”

At the Xiao family.

Dong dong dong.

That night, Huang Ming was not in any nightclubs, instead he drove quickly to the Xiao family and banged on the door.

“Young Master Huang.”

“I want to see Xiao Hai-biaoge!”

Within the mansion's study.

Huang Ming arrived in front of Xiao Hai under the guidance of the butler.

“What did you come and find me for so late at night?” Xiao Hai really got annoyed when he saw his cousin. He was currently getting agitated over how he could actually let Ye Zichen release his anger.

“Biaoge, Young Master Ye called me just now. He said he would give me a chance to redeem myself.”

“His request!?”

Xiao Hai bolted up from the chair. Very few things could cause directors of a large corporation like him to have such a huge reaction.

“He wants a man named Hao Wen to lose everything!”

“Butler!”

Xiao Hai called out. Then, the old man that had brought Huang Ming in returned quickly.

“Young Master Xiao.”

“Investigate everything about a man named Hao Wen, I want all

of his information!”

“Understood!”

What Ye Zichen did not know was that his single call caused a huge earthquake in Bingcheng’s business circles.

Countless mid-sized to large-scale corporations were affected. All of this was for a woman!

World shattering rage for a woman.

That perfectly described the scene.

The mansion that Ye Zichen chose for Ye Rong was in an ecological area, it was near both a mountain and a river, making it seem like some sort of paradise.

Of course, the price was also rather expensive.

Ten million!

Xiao Yumei had paid for it. She said that she would gift it to Ye Zichen, but how could Ye Zichen accept it from her. So, he wrote her an IOU.

Mhmm, he’ll owe it for now!

“Zichen, recently, there’s a new ore auction. When that comes around, come with sis and help sis pick two ores, okay?”

Xiao Yumei stood outside the mansion with Lil’ Tiantian. Ye Zichen nodded and smiled.

“Of course, but what about that Expert Liu?”

“I fired him,” Xiao Yumei replied calmly. If this sort of decisive action was in the historical past, Xiao Yumei would definitely be a queen.

“It’s good that he’s fired.”

“That’s why, older sister doesn’t have anyone to choose stones. So Zichen-didi must come to help older sister,” Xiao Yumei smiled coquettishly. Seeing that, Ye Zichen’s body felt like it had softened slightly, “Mei-jie, could you not speak to other men like that in the future?”

“Why?” Xiao Yumei smiled and asked, despite knowing why. Ye Zichen replied, “It’s too powerful, I’m scared that you’ll shock those people to death. What’s more, I will get jealous.”

“Is that so? Then older sister will only speak like that to you.”

The two of them smiled, while the atmosphere became

unspeakably good. However, there were always blind people that would destroy this sort of atmosphere.

“Yumei, let me off.”

An unenergetic man scrambled and kneeled down beside Xiao Yumei. His appearance shocked Xiao Yumei. When she calmed down and looked over, she saw that it was Hao Wen.

“What are you telling me to let you off for?”

Xiao Yumei had a confused expression, yet Hao Wen had grabbed her ankle.

“Yumei, I know I did many, many things to wrong you before. I was wrong, I’m begging you, let me go.”

“Let go of me!”

Xiao Yumei wanted to force Hao Wen to let go, but he grabbed her leg tightly, refusing to let go.

Bang.

Ye Zichen kicked him away.

“What’s with the management, why can just anyone be let in?

Security!”

Several security guards appeared in front of Ye Zichen, and dragged Hao Wen outside.

At that moment, Hao Wen also started to curse.

“Xiao Yumei, you wrench, bitch...”

Buzz...

Ye Zichen’s phone rang. He picked up the phone and placed it beside his ear.

“Lil’ Ye, you requested Hao Wen to lose everything, it should be in the newspapers soon.”

“Hai-ge truly moves quick, but I don’t need to wait for the newspapers, Hao Wen already came to us.”

“Hao Wen actually went to find you guys,” Xiao Hai exclaimed. “Then you’re not hurt, right?”

“Nope. I understand Hai-ge’s good will. I’ll help with your old man’s situation as soon as possible.”

“Alright, then Hai-ge will wait for Lil’ Ye’s honorable visit. Oh

yeah, the card I sent someone to give to you is the VVVIP card of our corporation, this card can receive free treatment in any of the companies under my corporation.”

“It’s really that amazing?” Ye Zichen took out a green card from his pocket and played around with it. “Thank you.”

After hanging up the phone, Ye Zichen smiled brightly towards Xiao Yumei, but he found that her eyes were starting to turn red.

“Zichen, thank you.”

Chapter 32 – Leveling The Affability Level

As Ye Zichen felt that warm body in his arms, he reached out his hand and patted Xiao Yumei's back.

“Mei-jie, you heard it all?”

Ye Zichen smiled gently. Yet, he saw Xiao Yumei suddenly look up and bite his lips.

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Xiao Yumei increased by 50, current affability level: 145.

Your affability level with Xiao Yumei increased by 50, current affability level: 195.

Your affability level with Xiao Yumei increased by 50, current affability level: 245.

...

Ye Zichen didn't know how many times the affability level jumped up. Currently, he was completely immersed in Xiao Yumei's warmth.

“Daddy, Mommy, Tiantian is hungry.”

Just as the two of them found it difficult to part, Lil' Tiantian pulled on the corner of their clothes.

Hearing that, the two of them immediately parted.

Both of them looked at each other slightly awkwardly. Then, Xiao Yumei squatted down and picked Tiantian up.

“Tiantian is hungry, Mommy will take Tiantian to eat something delicious.”

“Daddy come too.”

“Mhmmm, let's go,” Ye Zichen smiled, and put his finger on his lips.

When Xiao Yumei saw his auction, she instantly looked at him for a while.

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Xiao Yumei increased by 5, current affability level: 500.

Affability level leveled up.

Relationship status: Lovers.

Lovers.

Ye Zichen was shocked for a moment. The marriage string wouldn't lie. Did it mean that the two of them truly became lovers?

But this happened all too quickly, right?

He subconsciously looked at Xiao Yumei for a moment, and saw that Xiao Yumei was looking dazedly at him.

“Mei-jie.”

“Don't call me Mei-jie, you make me seem so old. How about calling me Yumei?”

Xiao Yumei blushed. She actually didn't want to get related with Ye Zichen, she honestly felt like she wasn't worthy of him.

However, she didn't know why, but after knowing what he did for her...

Her heart was uncontrollably attracted to him.

In the end, she stopped forcing herself to be distant.

Just let nature take its course.

What's more, Tiantian also liked him. That was more important than anything.

Even if she clearly knew that she couldn't possibly stand by Ye Zichen's side, then she'd just be the person behind him.

“Yu-Yumei!”

“Daddy, Mommy, Tiantian is hungry!”

Tiantian's sweet voice had yelled out with a hint of displeasure. Hearing that, Ye Zichen and Xiao Yumei immediately rubbed her little head.

“Alright, alright, we'll go and eat now.”

The restaurant Ye Zichen chose was one of the restaurants under Glory Corporation. Actually, he didn't have much of a choice, he had spent all the money on the mansion for his mother and still owed people a lot of money.

Even though he and Xiao Yumei were lovers now, he couldn't bear spend a woman's money.

Coincidentally, Xiao Hai had given him a VVVIP card, so he could

eat for free. So why not?

“Madam, sir, how many?”

“A family of three. Three people!”

Ye Zichen smiled. When Xiao Yumei heard from say “a family of three”, Xiao Yumei blushed, while her eyes were filled with joy.

“Then this way, please...”

“Isn’t this the Riche Bro from our school?”

A disharmonic voice suddenly sounded out, it caused Ye Zichen to rub his temples.

Such misfortune, why did he had to bump into these two even here.

Guo Qiang walked over in front of Ye Ziehen, while Yao Yue stayed beside him, and smiled towards the waiter.

“Little bro waiter, your restaurant seems to be a high-class one. I understand him very well, he wouldn’t be able to afford the cost of here.”

“Yao Yue, we have split up already, why do you have to be so

relentless?”

Ye Zichen felt helpless, he just didn't get it.

He never did anything to wrong his ex, the two already separated, why did she just have to pick on him and cause trouble every time she saw him?

“Who's being relentless, I just want to remind this shop so that they don't take any losses.”

Yao Yue continued ruthlessly with a cold laugh.

“Daddy, Tiantian is hungry.”

Tiantian tugged on the corner of Ye Zichen's shirt. Ye Zichen picked up her and pinched her cheek.

“We're going to eat now.”

“Daddy...” Yao Yue acted like she discovered a new continent and checked Ye Zichen and Xiao Yumei out. “It can't be, you're being a gigolo now?”

“Little girl, watch what you're saying.”

Xiao Yumei couldn't stand it anymore either, she could guess that

Yao Yue should be Ye Zichen's ex, but this ex was too much.

“What, you're unhappy now?”

“Yao Yue, shut up.”

Guo Qiang roared. If Xiao Yumei hadn't spoke, he wouldn't have noticed her.

Although she was a young madam with a child, her appearance and body were top notch. Especially those alluring eyes, if he...

Guo Qiang couldn't help but lick his lips, then he shamelessly handed a name card towards Xiao Yumei.

“Beauty, let's get to know each other.”

The moment Guo Qiang took out the name card, Yao Yue, who was on his side, froze.

He was hitting on someone else in front of her!

But she truly didn't dare to say anything.

She could only stare fiercely at Xiao Yumei, hoping to tear her face apart.

“Not interested.”

Xiao Yumei twitched her mouth in disdain and wrapped her arm around Ye Zichen's.

“Beauty, don't get tricked by this brat, he's just a poor piece of crap,” Guo Qiang advised. However, Xiao Yumei didn't even look at him, “Zichen, how about we go eat somewhere else.”

Guo Qiang's expression was a bit dark, he didn't understand why Ye Zichen had such great luck.

He thought that Yao Yue was very good already, he didn't think that this brat actually found a young madam that was even sexier than Yao Yue after being dumped.

“Why do we have to go somewhere else. We'll eat here. You know that I don't have the money to go somewhere else.”

“But I do,” Xiao Yumei smiled.

“I don't want to spend your money,” Ye Zichen rubbed his nose and handed a card from his pocket to the waiter. “I heard that this card can get stuff for free, is that so?”

Supreme VIP card.

There seemed to be only three in the entire corporation, he

didn't think that he would ever see one here.

“Sir, your card is the Supreme VIP card of our corporation, with it you could enjoy the same treatment as our president.”

“Wait a minute, you're saying that his is a Supreme VIP card?” Guo Qiang did not believe that Ye Zichen could take this sort of high-class card out. So he deliberately caused trouble, “Are you sure that isn't fake?”

“About this...”

The waiter was a bit hesitant as well. After thinking about it for a moment, he replied.

“Sir, it is my first time seeing a Supreme VIP card, may I get our manager to come over to have a look?”

“Then go on, quickly.”

Not long later, the restaurant manager walked over speedily. He could help to not be quick after hearing that someone held the Supreme VIP card.

“Which gentleman has the Supreme VIP card?”

“Here,” Ye Zichen handed the card over. With just a glance, the manager returned the card back respectfully, “Sir, if you please.”

The manager's action clearly proved the authenticity of this card. Ye Zichen nodded and held Xiao Yumei's hand, and walked in while holding Lil' Tiantian.

Halfway in, he turned back.

“The possessor of this card would have the same treatment as the president, right?”

“Sir, that is correct.”

“Then kick those two people out. They're ruining my appetite.”

Ye Zichen smiled towards Guo Qiang and Yao Yue, then walked towards the room once again.

Chapter 33 – It Was Me Finding You

After Xiao Hai had helped him out so much, Ye Zichen felt that he should quickly return the favor.

He clicked open the WeChat group, and saw that the legend of his flame war with Erlang Shen back in the days was still being talked about.

Some deities that didn't know what happened would ask curiously. It seemed like even deities were like that, gossips were never-ending.

God of Thunder: That deity appeared for a brief moment like an epiphyllum, then was never heard from again after the flame war with Erlang Shen.

Immortality Peach Fairy: Yeah, that deity is the idol of many of my good sisters.

Barefoot Immortal: Daring to fight against True Lord Erlang, then he definitely is this. <insert three thumb up emojis>

Immortality Peach Fairy: Agree.

God of Thunder: Agree +1

Wu Gang: Agree +2,

The group instantly heated up. Ye Zichen could only helplessly quit the chat group and clicked on his chat with the Monkey King.

Not finding him around the chat group these past few days was kind of out of character for him.

Thinking about that, Ye Zichen sent a greeting over.

“Great Sage, what are you getting busy with?”

No reply!

That was too weird, he would always instantly reply before.

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen’s phone suddenly vibrated, causing him to open the group chat like it was a conditioned reflex.

A red packet suddenly appeared, and the person that sent it was actually Old Lord Taishang.

Snatch.

He was too late, the red packets had ran out.

Slap. He slapped his thigh.

It was the red packet by Old Lord Taishang. That was exactly what Ye Zichen needed. Crap, he didn't manage to get any.

He looked at the other people's luck.

F*ck, it really was more Great Recovery Pills.

Dingdong.

Another red packet was sent.

Damn.

Sorry, the red packets ran out.

Not long later, another red packet appeared

Snatch!

You received Old Lord Taishang's red packet.

Great Recovery Pill x3.

Got it.

Ye Zichen's body shuddered, he had finally gotten it.

However, he was a bit curious, why had Old Lord Taishang started sending red packets without saying anything? Furthermore, why were they sent at such a large rate.

Most importantly, the group was terrifyingly silent. No one actually spoke at all.

Ye Zichen was only able to find out about the situation after scrolling up the chat log.

Old Lord Taishang: Wait a moment, our salaries' are here.

Salaries' are here.

Ye Zichen, who was confused, suddenly remembered what the Great Sage has said. The Great Recovery Pills Old Lord Taishang had refined were all given to the heavenly soldiers as candy.

So that's what's going on.

So that meant, wouldn't there be more...

As he expected, Old Lord Taishang sent ten-odd red packets.

Ye Zichen furiously tried to snatch them, but it was unable to get a single one.

“Zichen, why do you keep playing with your phone?”

Xiao Yumei sat nearby. Ye Zichen waved his phone in front of her.

“Snatching red packets.”

Hehe.

Xiao Yumei couldn't help but giggle, “Just how poor are you? If you really don't have any money, then I can give you some.”

With that, Xiao Yumei was about to give her card to him. However, Ye Zichen quickly pushed the card back to her.

“What are you doing? Is this you trying to support me? Don't you forget, your money was all earned from my stone.”

“Yeah, our family's Zichen is so amazing,” Xiao Yumei smiled. All of a sudden, Ye Zichen was a bit mesmerized, while his hand also started to reach uncontrollably into Xiao Yumei's clothes.

“Stop messing around, Tiantian's still here,” Xiao Yumei swatted his hand away, while Ye Zichen scratched his head and smiled apologetically. However, Xiao Yumei then whispered in his ear,

“Come to my place later tonight.”

Boom.

All of the force in his body instantly surged out. As Ye Zichen watched Xiao Yumei’s teasing eyes, she quickly gulped.

“Daddy, Mommy, Tiantian is full.”

It was unknown why this Lil’ Tiantian would always pop up at times like this.

“You’re full, then Mommy will bring Tiantian to wash her hands,” Xiao Yumei threw Ye Zichen an alluring smile right before she walked out with Tiantian.

“This siren...”

When they left the restaurant, the manager and waiters all lined up in a row to send Ye Zichen off.

Ye Zichen couldn’t stand that at all, while Xiao Yumei seemed to act natural.

It was clear that she was already used to this sort of situation.

“Go to my home?” Xiao Yumei smiled towards Ye Zichen, while

her alluring eyes were filled with faint anticipation.

“What do you think?” Ye Zichen held her waist without any hesitation. Man, if I don’t go with you seducing me like that, could I still be called a man?

However, unfortunately, the big bro of his dorm, Kang Peng, called.

“Hello, are there any issues? If there aren’t, then I’m hanging up!”

Ugh, calling at this time, isn’t this causing trouble for him!

“Ye-zi, hurry up and come back. If you don’t, then I’m dead.”

Kang Peng sobbed in the phone, as if he was being beaten.

Ye Zichen scanned Xiao Yumei’s face, then listened back to Kang Peng’s suffering on the phone...

“Then I’ll be there immediately.”

“The second floor of Oben Network Café, hurry.”

“Alright.”

Ye Zichen threw his phone into his pocket. Just as he was about to explain to Xiao Yumei, she already spoke up.

“Do you have some urgent matters?”

“A bro at the dorm seems to have gotten into some trouble, I’m going over to see what’s going on,” Ye Zichen scratched his head. Then wiped his finger across Xiao Yumei’s cheek. “Next time, I’ll come to your home, okay?”

“If you have matters to attend to then go, I’m yours, you can come by any time,” Xiao Yumei smiled, kissed Ye Zichen’s lips lightly, then got into the car.

Ye Zichen touched his lips that still had a faint aroma left and let out a long sigh.

He didn’t get into trouble earlier or later, it just had to be right now...

He urgently arrived at the second floor of Oben Network Café. Most of the students here right now were university students nearby, everyone sat on their seats playing their games, it didn’t look like they were in a fight.

Ye Zichen scanned the second floor, and saw that Kang Peng was playing intensely on the second computer beside the window.

Smach.

Ye Zichen slapped Kang Peng's headphones off with a slap.

“That grandson... Ye-zi, you came back.”

Kang Peng scratched his head and smiled idiotically. Ye Zichen was about to explode from anger.

When he heard Kang Peng sob in the phone, he thought Kang Peng had been beaten up!

The f*ck? Tricking him?

It was fine if it was normally, but just now...

Ye Zichen clenched his teeth and fists, while the veins on his forehead were about to pop up.

“You, better give me a satisfied explanation, or else...”

Crack.

Kang Peng gulped when he saw Ye Zichen clench his fists, and said.

“It wasn't me looking for you, it was someone else.”

“Who, tell me who was looking for me,” Ye Zichen glared, and grabbed Kang Peng’s collar. “Do you f*cking know how important the business that got messed up was for laozi? Do you know how important of a matter I gave up to come back!”

“Ye-zi, don’t be impulsive, calm down.”

Kang Peng told Ye Zichen to not get angry, and pointed over at an empty computer beside him.

“She’s looking for you.”

“Who?”

“Me!”

A peal of clear laughter sounded out from behind Ye Zichen. He turned around and saw Xia Keke standing behind him with a smile.

“It was me looking for you!”

Chapter 34 – Solo Offline

Seeing Xia Keke, who was smiling behind him, Ye Zichen immediately became annoyed.

He didn't make her pay for ruining him and Su Yan yet.

And now, she had come to him again.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at Xia Keke and sat down on the chair and played with his phone while ignoring her.

“Kang Peng.”

“Present.”

Kang Peng, who was 1.9 meters, shocked Xia Keke like a mouse seeing a cat. He directly threw his mouse to the side and nudged Ye Zichen with his elbow.

“Ye-zi, why are you speaking to goddess Xia like that?”

“Stop bothering me, I don't like the look of you right now either,” Ye Zichen pointed at Kang Peng's nose. This brat still had the face to come and try to calm him down.

F*ck, he messed up his good chance, if it wasn't their friendship of two years, he really wanted to punch him into the wall.

“Ye-zi, big bro didn’t have a choice,” Kang Peng sneaked a peek at Xia Keke, who had her hands on her waist. “Do you remember that Old Friend, who you wrecked?”

“Oh, that grandson, what about him?”

“Who are you calling grandson?” Xia Keke’s hackles instantly flew up. Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at her, “Girl, why did you learn to think that all insults are being thrown at you in the few days that we haven’t met?”

Then, he very quickly noticed Kang Peng’s expression, causing him to open his eyes wide.

“Old Friend is you?”

“You’re right, the grandson you were talking about is this lady.”

“But didn’t you say that you are in Master?”

“Elo Booster, don’t you get it?”

Xia Keke was so angry that she could rip Ye Zichen to pieces.

When she got wrecked the other day, Xia Keke already held a grudge and silently swore that if she found him in the future, she must solo him offline.

Coincidentally, electricity at the school stopped the previous night.

Since she still had many jobs she didn't finish, she decided to do them at the network café, then coincidentally saw the ID that she hated the most.

Xia Keke got impulsive and immediately grabbed Kang Peng by the ear, forcing him to solo offline.

She destroyed him for five games in a row.

Then she found out that Ye Zichen was actually playing for him that day.

That's why she told Kang Peng to call Ye Zichen back, in order to wash away her shame.

"Elo Booster?" Ye Zichen had an expression of disbelief.

Xia Keke wasn't someone that needed money, why would she elo boost?

To earn money by herself?

Is there something wrong with her!?

Ye Zichen wasn't a rich second-generation, if he were one, then he would enjoy the rich life more than anyone else.

“Don't look at this lady like that, this lady just like to play this game. Why wouldn't I do it if I can play the game and earn money at the same time?”

Xiao Keke's reply caused Ye Zichen to roll his eyes. Then he saw the two empty seats beside him.

It seems like Xia Keke was determined to solo him.

“You sure you want to play against me?”

“Of course!”

“Then wait a bit.”

Ye Zichen went to scan his ID card at the counter, then returned to turn on the computer.

Login.

Welcome Gold Three to Computer No. 160 of our network café.

Welcome Master to Computer No. 159 of our network café.

Master!

Hearing that, everyone in the bar all stood up and walked over.

“Girl! It’s a pretty girl.”

“Damn, isn’t this the school beauty, Xia Keke, of Polytechnic University?”

“Goddess is actually in Master!”

“My god, on Ionia!”

The crowd all exclaimed, while Ye Zichen twitched his mouth helplessly at Xia Keke.

“There is a crazy group of guys behind you, how about I leave some face for you?”

“Heh, if we’re going to solo, then do it properly, no need to go easy on me! What’s more, it isn’t certain who would win!”

With that, Ye Zichen received her friend request.

Accept.

Not long later, he received a game invitation.

“Solo offline.”

“This bro is also Master?”

“No, I heard that he was Gold something. I forgot.”

Ye Zichen and Xia Keke both ignored the crowd behind them.

“Best of 5, first blood, first turret or a hundred CS.”

“Understood.”

Ye Zichen showed an ‘ok’ hand gesture.

The game begun.

Both of them used Zed for the first round.

It was Ye Zichen’s first time playing Zed. There could be no helping it, he had only played support before.

Before the game started, he looked up a guide on Baidu.

“Damn, is this brat okay, reading a guide?”

He peeked over at Xia Keke. This girl was truly a LoL fanatic, she completely forgot about everything else when she's playing.

Ye Zichen truly admired this level of focus.

But what use is that?

First blood.

Ugh.

“What happened, goddess lost?”

“It can't be, a Master got raped by a Gold?”

“Could our goddess had been... carried?”

...

“Next game?” Ye Zichen wandered around on Xia Keke's corpse in game. He saw that her face was green as she stared at the screen.

How did she die?

She didn't miscalculate the damage!

“Next!”

Both of them chose LeBlanc.

First blood!

...

The entire crowd was confused, Ye Zichen once again used his champion to wander around the corpse of Xia Keke’s champion.

“Next?”

“Next!”

For the third match, both of them chose Lee Sin.

Ye Zichen knew clearly that if he played properly, Xia Keke would still lose without a doubt.

It wasn’t because she wasn’t truly at the level of Master, it’s just that Ye Zichen was too good.

Don’t talk about Master, even if a Challenger with 1000 LP came...

He would still destroy him.

Ye Zichen glanced over at Xia Keke and saw that the little loli's face had already lost her initial calm.

She pursed her lips tightly, while she was also completely tense.

Even if Ye Zichen casually threw out a Q, Xia Keke would click furiously.

Ye Zichen lifted the corner of his mouth. He still chose to go straight on.

First blood!

This time, Xia Keke won.

“Aiya, aiya, accident. My hand, my hand!”

Ye Zichen hit the back of his hand, while pretending to be annoyed. When the crowd saw this, they finally let out a sigh.

That's more like it. How could a Gold beat Master.

Xia Keke's pursed lips also lifted slightly. She did like Ye Zichen did the previous two games and wandered around the corpse of his character with hers.

“Next?”

She even used the same words.

“Next!”

Ye Zichen smiled as well when he saw Xia Keke get energetic again.

Ye Zichen lost again not long later.

Then, Ye Zichen still lost on the fifth game.

Best of five.

Xia Keke won.

“Amazing, Keke, you are pretty good. Alright, you won the offline solo!”

Ye Zichen leaned backwards and stretched lazily before quitting LoL.

“I’m so tired, going to go back and sleep.”

Ye Zichen walked out, while he stretched his neck. Meanwhile, Xia Keke bit her lips, then chased after him after a brief hesitation.

After the two of them left, a girl, wearing a cap, looking at Ye Zichen and Xia Keke's figures thoughtfully.

Chapter 35 – Team Invitation

“Hey.”

Xia Keke chased him just after leaving the network café.

“Why did you come out as well?” Ye Zichen smiled while Xia Keke ran up to his side with her phone, “Why did you go easy on me?”

“I didn’t, I’m very competitive, how could I go easy on you? Alright, it’s late, you’d better hurry back and rest. Playing games until this late is not good for the skin.”

Ye Zichen crossed the road, while waving at Xia Keke with his back towards her.

“I will beat you one day.”

Dingdong.

Marriage string received.

Possessor: Ye Zichen, Possessed: Xia Keke.

Current affability level: 10.

Ugh.

Ye Zichen nearly coughed up blood when he reached the other side of the road. The reason he left so quickly was because he was afraid of this happening.

However, what was going to come still did.

On the next day, since he had some Great Recovery Pills on hand now, and because Ye Zichen wasn't one that liked to drag things out, he directly went and gave the pill to Xiao Hai.

“Lil’ Ye, thank you so much.”

Xiao Hai was so worked up that even his arms were trembling slightly as he gripped the jade bottle. Ye Zichen might not know what this pill actually meant.

But Xiao Hai did.

Although the Xiao Family was still one of the largest families in Bingcheng, the old man in the family had become more and more sick, his father was not well versed in running a business, and he had only managed to take control of the family not long ago.

The corporation was already starting to fall apart.

He threw everything they had into causing Hao Wen lose

everything for Ye Zichen in order to get that pill. During that incident, they had offended countless families.

All of that was for this very pill.

As long as the old man could stand up once again, then the Xiao Family would never fall.

“Hai-ge had helped me so much, so I naturally had to give this pill to Hai-ge. No need to be so courteous,” Ye Zichen shrugged and said. “Oh yeah, what happened to Hao Wen?”

“If there are no surprises, then he should be spending the second half of his life in prison.”

“It’s karma.”

Ye Zichen snorted coldly. Then, since he knew that he had done everything he needed to do, he waved his hand and said his goodbyes to Xiao Hai.

“Hai-ge, I’m leaving.”

“Wait a moment, I still have a present for you,” the moment Xiao Hai finished his sentence, a silver Porsche 918 was driven over.

Ye Zichen’s eyes shone like the sun when he saw this car.

To be honest, he didn't know much about cars, but he had seen this kind of limited edition sports car a few times on Baidu.

I heard that there was only 918 of this model, and it was even harder to find within the country.

“For you.”

Seeing Ye Zichen's expression, Xiao Hai smiled while pointing to that 918.

“For me?”

Ye Zichen gulped when he saw Xiao Hai's determined expression.

Ye Zichen just might have refused if it was any other present.

But that car...

“Thank you, Hai-ge.”

Ye Zichen truly could not resist the allure of this car. He started to touch the car with a lick of his lips.

Buzz...

Ye Zichen, who just had received a darling car, was just checking

it out when an urgent call forced him to stop.

“Hey.”

“Ye Zichen, this is Xia Keke, come to the cold drinks store beside school.”

“For what?”

“This lady is looking for you. You dare to not come?”

Ye Zichen did not want to get too involved with her. Ever since he and Xiao Yumei confirmed their relationship of being lovers, he stopped having many of the flirtatious thoughts.

To be honest, he was rather conservative.

Only monogamy could establish a family in harmony.

“Hey, are you listening to me?”

Xiao Keke, on the other side of the phone got anxious. Ye Zichen could only let out a sigh and said helplessly.

“I’ll be there immediately.”

Ye Zichen chucked the phone to his side, then rolled down the

window and waved towards Xiao Hai.

“Hai-ge, I’ll be going.”

Ten-odd minutes later, at the cold drinks store beside the university.

Most of these places were where students from the Polytechnic University gathered. Ye Zichen found a place to park his Porsche 918, then prepared to walk towards the cold drinks store.

However, he underestimated just how eye-catching his sportscar actually was.

The moment it appeared, a bunch of students ran out from the shop and stared at the sportscar.

Many female students’ eyes sparkled when they saw Ye Zichen get out from the car.

Some more observative people couldn’t help but to exclaim when they recognized Ye Zichen.

“Riche Bro, he’s Riche Bro!”

“Which Riche Bro?”

“You don’t even know Riche Bro? He’s the one that’s really fired up the school website!”

“Wow, Porsche 918, this Riche Bro is a real rich person. I have to go back and quit my group, then join Riche Bro’s fam group...”

When Ye Zichen heard the conversation of the surrounding students, he could only hold his forehead and sigh.

It seemed like another hot topic was going to be appearing on the school’s website very soon.

After he entered the cold drinks shop, quite a few female students also entered. This might be the so-called celebrity effect, always having some fans around him wherever he goes.

“Here.”

Ye Zichen saw Xia Keke wave towards him at a seat near the window. However, she wasn’t alone, there was a woman wearing a cap beside her.

“You were looking for me?”

Hearing Ye Zichen’s slightly perfunctory tone after he sat down, Xia Keke looked at him in annoyance.

“What, you’re not happy that I was looking for you?”

“No, no,” Ye Zichen quickly denied it. Xia Keke rolled her eyes and pointed to the girl beside her, “Actually, it wasn’t me who was looking for you. It’s her.”

“Who are you?”

“Hello, I’m Jing Wan, a streamer on the Idealism Platform.”

The woman reached out her hand towards Ye Zichen after taking off her cap. When Ye Zichen actually got a good look at that woman, he paused for a moment.

Oh? She’s quite pretty.

She would be one of the top school beauties if she went to Polytechnic University.

As expected, all streamers were pretty.

Ye Zichen subconsciously checked her out with the Fiery Eyes of Truth.

Completely natural!

They shook hands simply. Ye Zichen couldn’t help but take note that the girl’s fingers were very long, so she would definitely be a good piano player if she chose to be.

Furthermore, the softness of her hands also felt great.

“I was there when you and Keke had solo’d offline.”

“Oh!”

Ye Zichen replied indifferently, and casually called the waiter over for a glass of lemon juice.

That indifferent attitude caused Jing Wan to be baffled for a second. She was a huge streamer on the Idealism Streaming Platform with over a million subscribers, she had never been treated so coldly before.

“Ye Zichen, you need to speak properly to Jing Wan, she is very famous on the Idealism Streaming Platform, and is very good at gaming.”

Xia Keke warned him, since she couldn’t accept his attitude anymore. Ye Zichen nodded with a helpless expression.

“Alright, alright then, huge streamer Jing Wan, what did you have Xia Keke find me for?”

“Ye Zichen...”

“Never mind, never mind,” Jing Wan stopped Xia Keke with a

smile. Ignoring everything else, this girl's smile really caused people to like her.

“I want to establish a team.”

“Mhmm!”

Jing Wan suddenly stood up from the chair, and dipped her head while reaching her white hands out towards Ye Zichen.

“I sincerely ask you to join my team.”

Chapter 36 – Lil' White, The Eliminated Puppy

Invitation to a team.

Ye Zichen picked up his lemon juice and sipped, but he didn't shake hands with Jing Wan.

“Miss Jing Wan, don't be so anxious, okay? We haven't talked about anything yet, isn't a bit rushed, just inviting me into your team like that?”

“What do you need?”

“What can you give me?”

Ye Zichen pursed his lips and smiled.

“A monthly salary of a hundred thousand.”

Jing Wan clenched her first, but Ye Zichen merely shrugged with disdain.

A monthly salary of a hundred thousand was a huge amount of money for an university student that did not leave school.

Even for those seniors that had just left school, they would try

their hardest to get the job if they saw a job that came with a monthly salary of a hundred thousand.

However...

Ye Zichen reached out his finger and pointed at the Porsche 918 outside.

“Miss Jing Wan, do you think I lack money?”

About this...

Jing Wan’s confidence was lowered by a large portion when she saw that sportscar. Someone that can drive this sort of car definitely would not accept due to a hundred thousand yuan.

Xia Keke, who was on the side, also looked at the sportscar outside the window with her beautiful eyes.

“Riche Bro, that’s your car?”

“Yeah!”

Riche Bro...

Jing Wan’s expression darkened, if she knew that he was Riche Bro from the beginning, then she definitely wouldn’t have tried to

sway him with the salary.

“You can definitely shine with your ability, allowing you to have thousands or even millions of fans supporting you.”

Jing Wan then used the fame aspect of it, she felt like Ye Zichen might think about it.

However...

Clap, clap, clap.

Ye Zichen suddenly clapped his hands and said.

“Does anyone know me in this cold drinks store?”

“Riche Bro, I’m your fan.”

“Riche Bro, do you have time tonight? I want to treat you to dinner.”

“Riche Bro...”

Ye Zichen shrugged towards Jing Wan with a smile.

“Do you think I lack fame?”

Jing Wan's pretty face instantly froze, the chips she could use for negotiation were only these two.

However, he shut her out on both.

Xia Keke noticed Jing Wan's expression, and instantly wanted Ye Zichen to consider it a bit more.

However, Ye Zichen raised his head up and shook it with a smile.

“Actually, from this short conversation, I could can feel the establishment of Miss Jing Wan's team is merely a sudden perk of interest.”

“No, I did consider this matter very seriously.”

Jing Wan denied it.

Ye Zichen shrugged without replying, then knocked on the table with a laugh.

“Then let me put it this way, do you have the large amount of funding needed to establish a team?”

“I have quite a bit of savings from streaming these few years...”

“How much?”

“Around ten million.”

Ye Zichen laughed.

“You want to establish a team with only around ten million. Don’t you think that’s rather childish? Have you not researched about the backgrounds of the teams in the competitions? Which one of them does not have powerful monetary backing? Your money is not even enough to get a few good teammates.”

“The funding needed at the start of establishing a team is the highest. You need to pay for the players’ salaries, you need to help them find a suitable base, you need teammates... Let me say this, ignoring that fact that you have no substitutes, did you even find all five team members?”

“I...” Jing Wan paused slightly. She truly had not thought about any of that. However, she, who didn’t want to submit, retorted. “I will find the team members as quick as possible, and I will hurry and find people who will want to invest for the funding.”

“That means everything that you had talked about were just empty promises, then why are you still talking about a team?”

Ye Zichen quickly finished the glass of lemon juice, stood up and waved goodbye to Jing Wan and Xia Keke.

“Sorry, I cannot accept your invitation.”

Ye Zichen truly did not want to get involved in this sort of activity. If he really joined a team, then his life will be completely tied to the team.

He would be able to shine anywhere with the deities' WeChat group, there was no need for him to choose a relatively failing route.

Furthermore, what he said was for Jing Wan's own good.

It was good to be hot-blooded, but establishing a team with just hot-bloodedness...

Might cause her to lose everything.

Ye Zichen did not want the money that this girl worked hard to earn all be lost there. Perhaps always thinking about money seemed a bit common.

But Ye Zichen was a common person.

After he drove away, Jing Wan and Xia Keke stared dumbly as Ye Zichen's car disappeared from their sights from within the cold drinks store.

A faint sadness appeared on Jing Wan's delicate expression. Xia

Keke comforted her by the side.

“Jing Wan, don’t mind what Ye Zichen said too much. He’s pretty nice normally, I don’t know what was wrong with him today.”

Jing Wan smiled, while the sadness in her heart disappeared.

Although Ye Zichen’s merciless criticism still sounded out in her ear, she didn’t mind.

“What he said was true, I might really be too impulsive. I need to go back and consider it properly.”

“Mhmm, but Jing Wan, if you still need team members, you can find me any time.”

“Thank you.”

Jing Wan left the coffee shop after putting on the cap again.

As Jing Wan stood on the side and looked at the spot that Ye Zichen left from for a long time, Jing Wan clenched her fist.

One day, I will make you agree.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen drove back to the mansion.

Ye Rong was blanking out in the courtyard. It was a good thing that her child had gone far, but she didn't know why she was worried in her heart.

“Mom, why are you just standing here?”

Ye Rong looked up. Then, when she saw the sportscar behind Ye Zichen, the worry on her face became even more obvious.

“Son, what exactly are you doing to get all this money? Mom is worried for you!”

“Mom, don't you know what I'm like? I definitely wouldn't touch those sort of bad things,” Ye Zichen grabbed Ye Rong's shoulders and walked into the pavilion in the courtyard.

“The environment is rather nice here, it's just that I'm not quite used to it.”

“How come?”

“I feel quite empty inside. Back in the village, I could chat with your auntie and them, but now...”

Ye Rong stopped, while Ye Zichen also felt a bit sad.

As a son, he did his best to allow his mother to live a good life,

but he didn't have much time to accompany her.

For some reason, Ye Zichen thought of the dog he got from the Howling Celestial Dog.

“Mom, wait a moment, let me give you a present.”

Ye Zichen ran into the car and opened the WeChat Treasure Chest.

Eliminated Dog from the Celestial Dog Show

Withdraw.

A white and fluffy poodle appeared in Ye Zichen's arms.

The moment the poodle appeared, it subconsciously checked out its surroundings first. When it saw Ye Zichen, it actually revealed an expression of disdain like a human.

“Little fellow, you're with me now.”

Disdain, there was still disdain!

“Little fellow, you're rather interesting,” Ye Zichen wanted to touch the poodle's hair, but it raised its head and showed him its fangs, wearing a ferocious expression.

However, even when dogs like poodles pretended to be ferocious, they still seemed very cute.

“You’re rather fun, I’ll call you Lil’ White from now on.”

Chapter 37 – Who's Hotter

After being with Lil' White for around ten minutes, Ye Zichen finally understood why it had been eliminated.

It's too much of a tsundere!

This little fellow didn't give face to its owner at all. It was clear that it was the supreme and unparalleled king in its world!

"It's fine if you're like this with me. You have to act nice and cute when you see my mom later."

Disdain.

"If you're obedient, then I'll bring you good food next time, it's so much better than the food in the Heavenly Court."

Lil' White's eyes brightened and showed a hint of hesitation.

"I swear!"

Ye Zichen raised three fingers.

Lil' White checked Ye Zichen out meaningfully, then nodded like a human. At the same time, he reached out his paw for a high-five.

Right before they got out of the car, Lil' White looked at him vigilantly.

As if it was saying.

Remember the good food!

It seemed like Lil' White is a little glutton.

“Go, that’s my mom.”

Ye Zichen put Lil' White onto the ground and indicated towards Ye Rong, who was in the pavilion.

Lil' White wagged its tail, indicating that it understood, then ran proudly over to Ye Rong.

“Zichen, what’s it called?”

When Ye Zichen walked over, Lil' White and Ye Rong had already got familiar with each other. Yet, most importantly, Lil' White actually winked at Ye Zichen.

As Ye Zichen watched the smile on Ye Rong, he also smiled.

“Lil' White.”

“It’s so smart,” With a clap of Ye Rong’s hands, Lil’ White jumped into her arms and rubbed its head against her neck, asking to get spoiled.

Ye Zichen looked at everything that was happening in front of him with a smile. Just at that moment, the phone in his pocket rang.

Ye Zichen picked up the phone, then the corner of his mouth raised for some reason.

“Mom, I still have some other business, so I’ll be leaving first.”

“Where, you’re not eating dinner?” Although Ye Rong was playing very happily with Lil’ White, Ye Zichen was still the most important one in her heart.

“Nope, it’s rather urgent.”

Without any other words, Ye Zichen drove to Golden Spring Hotel like a bolt of lightning.

Room 415.

When Ye Zichen pushed open the door, he saw the Dragonball fanatic, little yellow-hair, blanking out as he looked out the window.

“Hey.”

“You came,” Yellow-hair suddenly stood up. Ye Zichen indicated that he didn’t need to do so, then sat down on a chair. He raised his eyebrows and asked, “Fu Chengming is in the opposite room?”

“Yes, it seems like someone is treating him to dinner. He drank quite a bit inside.”

“Are the people all here?”

“Don’t worry about this, my subordinates already spread out in the hotel, the moment he is alone... Hehehe...”

“Alright.”

Ye Zichen’s face also displayed an evil smile, that brat had tried to do some nasty things to him.

So he was going to do the same this time to see who’s worse.

“Fu-ge, there’s more activity at night. Ol’ Six got a large room at the night club and found seven or eight part-time models. You’re not going?”

Five young men, who were about as each other, put their arms around each other and stood in front of Golden Spring Hotel.

The one in the middle was Fu Chengming.

“Not going, recently, my kidney is... not that good.”

Fu Chengming was so drunk that he couldn't really speak properly. The young men beside him wanted to tell him to stay, but Fu Chengmign refused.

He blurrily stood on the side of the street, waiting to call a cab. At this moment, Ye Zichen and co., who were already waiting nearby smiled.

“Go.”

Within a split second, several young men with dyed hair appeared behind Fu Chengming.

A bag was put over his head, and a bat was slammed on top of his head.

“Strip, strip, strip...”

Ye Zichen stood in the woods with his hands on his waist, while Yellow-Hair's subordinates surrounded Fu Chengming and stripped him.

Within a short while, Fu Chengming only had his red underwear left.

As Ye Zichen looked at this red underwear, he felt like he was going to puke.

A man wearing red underwear, and it had to be triangular ones...

Just how much of a fetish did he have.

“Big bro, we stripped him completely.”

“What are you guys blanking out for, throw him onto a bench in the park beside Polytechnic University, so he can enjoy the gazes of millions of people tomorrow!”

“Alright.”

Yellow-hair and co. threw Fu Chengming into a van, then drove off. Meanwhile, Ye Zichen touched his head and walked towards the parking lot of Golden Spring Hotel.

“Let me go, let me go...”

Just as Ye Zichen was about to drive away, he heard a weak cry for help.

“Let me go, bastard...”

Ye Zichen shook his head, he shouldn't butt into too many people's business.

“Help!”

In the end, he still retracted the hand that had reached out to the car door. Alright, he truly couldn't do something like watching people die.

The parking lot was very large, and there were a lot of cars.

Judging from the girl's call, she was probably being raped in a car.

Fiery Eyes of Truth, turn on!

Ye Zichen stood on spot and looked around at the surrounding cars. Not long later, he saw the girl in a business car not far away.

Bang, bang bang.

Ye Zichen knocked on the car window. The window of the business car was not transparent, so people couldn't see what was going on inside.

That was why the person would choose to commit the crime in this car.

The moment Ye Zichen knocked on the car window, the car fell into silent, but it still wobbled intensely.

“Whoever is inside, come out!”

“Uhm,.. Help...”

Resisting to the end!

Ye Zichen nodded slightly.

“I’ll give you three seconds to consider whether you’re coming out yourself, or whether I’ll trash your car.”

Three!

Two!

One!

“You’re not coming out? Alright!”

Ye Zichen looked around to ensure that no one was there, then swung his arms a bit before punching towards the window of the car.

Bang.

The glass immediately shattered into smithereens.

Then, another punch followed.

Bang.

This time, all of the glass on the car shattered.

Ye Zichen was able to see a girl with a shocking birthmark on her face lying underneath a middle-aged to senior man through the car window.

The girl was wearing the clothes for the waitress of the hotel, it seems like she was a waitress at Golden Spring Hotel.

Most importantly, Ye Zichen knew the girl.

“Li Jiayi!”

“Ye Zichen.”

Li Jiayi revealed a hint of joy when she saw Ye Zichen, but her reply lacked any strength.

At that moment, Ye Zichen noticed that there was a sickly red on her face.

“You bastard!”

Ye Zichen kicked open the car door with a kick and dragged that fatty out of the car.

“F*ck off.”

Seeing that the aluminum glass windows were shattered with two punches, the fatty didn't dare to say anything. He immediately scrambled away, while even ditching his car.

Ye Zichen picked Li Jiayi up.

He saw that her skin was slightly pink, as if she was a ball of fire.

“F*ck, this fatty is too much of an animal.”

Ye Zichen swore angrily. Li Jiayi was his classmate in high school. She had an eye-catching birthmark on her left cheek.

To be honest, if you just looked at the side of her face, she was definitely a beauty.

However, that birthmark affected everything.

“Ye Zichen, I'm so hot...”

Li Jiayi wrapped her arms around Ye Zichen's neck and stuck to him.

“Stop being f*cking hot, it's even hotter for me than you!”

Chapter 38 – Want To Leave After Doing It?

In room 1305 of Golden Spring Hotel.

Ye Zichen was at a loss about what to do as she looked at Li Jiayi, who was lying on the bed as if she were made out of mud.

This was his first time coming across this sort of situation.

“Ye Zichen!”

“Stop calling me.”

Ye Zichen was a bit annoyed, that girl really didn’t know how seductive she looked right now, right?

Ye Zichen filled the bathtub in the bathroom with cold water, then threw Li Jiayi in it.

“You need to calm down.”

After throwing her into the bathtub, Ye Zichen walked out of the bathroom to give Bai Yu a call.

“Ye-zi, why are you calling me at such a late hour?”

“Ol’ Two, what should I do if a girl was drugged?”

Bai Yu studied clinical medicine. Although Ye Zichen wasn't sure whether he would know the way or not, he figured it was worth a shot to ask.

“It's simple...”

Bai Yu blabbered on for a long time, then he finally came to a single conclusion.

She'd be fine after doing it.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes, he also knew about that.

“Is there any other way...”

Bai Yu hesitated for a moment.

“Yep!”

Ye Zichen's heart started beating intensely after hanging up the call.

Bai Yu did give him a solution, but actually using it was a bit...

“Ugh, why am I thinking so much, it's not like I have any better ideas.”

When Ye Zichen entered the bathroom once again, Li Jiayi was already lying in the water like a rag doll.

When he picked her up from the bathtub, she was like a magnet finding her other half, as she stuck right onto him...

“Zichen...”

“Li Jiayi, don’t blame me, this is all for your own good.”

With that being said, Ye Zichen chucked her onto the bed and stripped her pants off.

On the following day, Li Jiayi sat up, while rubbing her head, when the first ray of sunshine shone through the curtains.

When she saw Ye Zichen, who was sleeping beside her, she suddenly blushed for some unknown reason.

“Ye Zichen.”

In order to deal with Li Jiayi, it could be said that Ye Zichen had been busy the entire night.

When he felt someone pushing him, Ye Zichen opened his eyes blurrily, and saw Li Jiayi looking down at him with loving eyes.

“You-You’re awake!”

Ye Zichen stuttered. Very quickly, he noticed something.

Li Jiayi’s face was as smooth as white jade. Her birthmark on her left cheek was gone.

“Your face...”

“Ah!”

Li Jiayi exclaimed, then reached her hand towards her left cheek. Then, she frantically looked around the bed, and saw Ye Zichen reach his hand over.

“Are you looking for this?”

Ye Zichen was really confused, he already noticed the birthmark on her face from the first time he saw Li Jiayi in high school.

Back then, he had felt pity for the girl. If it wasn’t for the birthmark, she might had been a girl that was beyond bright.

But only now did he finally f*cking know, this birthmark was fake!

This girl had actually lied to everyone in their school for three years!

“Give it back to me,” Li Jiayi snatched the birthmark over and stuck it back on her face. When Ye Zichen saw that, he sighed helplessly, “I already saw it, there isn’t a need to pretend in front of me anymore, right?”

“No telling.”

“Who am I supposed to tell? I’m barely in contact with anyone from high school,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes. “I don’t get it, don’t girls like being beautiful? Just how many people go for plastic surgery to make themselves prettier. Yet, you deliberately made yourself uglier. What benefits does it have for you?”

“It’s none of your business.”

Li Jiayi clenched her teeth and tried to get up from the bed, but the tearing pain from her lower body and the redness on the bedsheets caused her to slightly frown.

He actually...

Yet, thinking about the previous night, it seemed like she took the initiative.

“Forget about last night, pretend like nothing happened. I don’t need you to take responsibility.

“Alright then.”

Ye Zichen nodded without thinking deeply. The situation last night was kind of difficult to explain. Girls usually had thin skin, since she didn't say anything, there was no need for him to say anything either.

“You...”

Ye Zichen's lack of hesitation touched Li Jiayi's heart. Back then, she had the best impression of Ye Zichen out of everyone in the high school.

Otherwise, she wouldn't have said that sort of thing after seeing Ye Zichen the previous day.

She never thought that he was that sort of person. He wanted to just leave after doing it with her.

She could only blame herself for being wrong about him.

She stared fiercely at Ye Zichen, then limped out. Ye Zichen jumped down from the bed and wanted to help her. However, she merely pushed him away.

“Stop being so fake.”

Then, she ran away from the hotel room in tears. Meanwhile, Ye Zichen stood at the entrance of the room, while being utterly confused.

What's this? He didn't do anything though.

Thinking back to how Li Jiayi seemed to have her period, Ye Zichen scratched his head, are all women so weird when they're on their period?

After checking out of the hotel, Ye Zichen drove back to the dorm. Right after entering the room, he saw Bai Yu, who was just getting ready to go out.

“Ye-zi.”

“Ol' Two,” Ye Zichen patted his shoulders and continued to walk into the room. He didn't sleep well in the hotel, so he had to make up for it now.

“Don't leave,” Bai Yu suddenly stopped him, and smiled ambiguously. “You felt great last night, right?”

“Great my ass, laozi is about to die of tiredness,” Ye Zichen pushed him aside and was about to continue in.

“F*ck! You really f*cking did what I told you to do?” Bai Yu exclaimed as if he had discovered a new continent.

“What do you think? Am I the sort of person that would take advantage of people? If it wasn’t because I had been single for twenty years and trained out a terrific arm, my muscles would have melted last night. However, I’m telling you, that fatty was a true grandson, he gave some sort of unknown drug to Li Jiayi...”

Ye Zichen rubbed his sore right arm, while Bai Yu grabbed his shoulder.

“Who did you say just now? Li Jiayi?”

“Yeah, our high school classmate, Li Jiayi.”

“No wonder,” Bai Yu showed a “so that’s why” expression and replied. “Stop pretending to be pure with me, if it was Li Jiayi, even I wouldn’t dare to touch her. Alright, bro’s gonna clean up. You should get some rest.”

Bai Yu waved the towel on his shoulder and walked out.

Ye Zichen, who was standing at the entrance to the room, smiled helplessly, it seemed like all his high school classmates could remember about Li Jiayi was her birthmark.

However, if there were ever a day when they found out Li Jiayi’s birthmark was fake, just how would they react?

Ye Zichen thought back to the scene back at the hotel and Li Jiayi, who didn't have her birthmark on. She was even prettier than Su Yan.

He really didn't understand, why such a beautiful girl wanted to pretend to be ugly?

After returning to the room, Ye Zichen got ready to sleep, but right after lying down..

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

The phone Ye Zichen had put beside his pillow suddenly buzzed intensely.

Chapter 39 – The Little Dragon Slayer Entered The Group

Taibai Jinxing invited Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li and Nezha into the chat group.

Zhu Bajie: Old Li actually came.

God of Thunder: There's new members again.

Barefoot Immortal: The Third Prince entered the group, it seems like this group will be very heated up in the future.

Nezha: Hello, everyone, did you miss me?

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li: No wonder we haven't seen you recently, so you have all been gathering here.

God of Thunder: New people that entered the group, please give out red packets.

Nezha: Give red packets?

God of Thunder: Hurry up and educate the new people @Taibai Jinxing.

The group flared up immediately, while Ye Zichen also was

dazed. There were actually people who are not in the group yet.

Ye Zichen sneaked a peek at the name of the people in the group. He had heard that Nezha had a vengeance against the dragon kings, they might even start fighting.

Ye Zichen glanced around and saw that there was no trace of the dragon kings in the group.

Nezha: Haha, so interesting. So that's what sending red packets is. I coincidentally just slayed a dragon the day before yesterday, I'll send it to you guys for fun.

Ugh.

Dragon-slaying.

Thankfully the dragon kings aren't here, otherwise, they'd really get into a fight.

However, all the stuff from a dragon should be good stuff, right?

Ye Zichen focused his attention onto the screen.

Dingdong.

Crap!

Too slow, all of the red packets had been taken.

Zhu Bajie: Third Prince, you're too generous. Directly sending a dragon?

God of Thunder: What's going on? You just sent one packet?

Nezhe: Aiya, it's my first time, I didn't understand. Canopy Marshal, hurry up and split the dragon up for everyone.

Zhu Bajie: No!

Chang'e: Are you going to or not! <insert three angry emojis>

The moment Chang'e appeared, Ye Zichen chuckled. Zhu Bajie could dare to be shameless with other people, but when Chang'e spoke up, he definitely didn't dare to take everything for himself.

Zhu Bajie: Wait a moment, I'll send it immediately.

After five minutes had past, just when the deities were about to relax, Zhu Bajie's red packet appeared.

However, Ye Zichen had been continuously vigilant. The moment the red packet appeared, he directly clicked on it.

You received Canopy General's red packet.

Dragon Eye x1

What the heck was a Dragon Eye.?

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, but then saw the chatter of the people in the group.

God of Thunder: Bajie, why did you become Canopy General once again?

Nezha: Yeah, if Monkey Bro finds out, he'll beat you.

Canopy General: Why can monkey be called the Handsome Monkey King, but I can't change it back. Furthermore...

Barefoot Immortal: That's not right, why doesn't this dragon have a penis?

Canopy General: Hehehe <insert three smirk emojis>

Nezha: So shameless.

Canopy General: @Chang'e, meimei, see you at the Moon Palace later.

God of Thunder: Something's going on here.

Nezha: +1

The group instantly burst into conversation. What Zha Bajie had said just then was too ambiguous, especially since he @Chang'e.

Originally, Zhu Bajie had a thing going on with Chang'e before he was exiled into the mortal realm, and now...

He had even specifically took out the dragon penis.

Chang'e: Zhu Bajie, don't ruin my reputation.

Zhu Bajie: <insert a row of smirk emojis>

Ye Zichen was not that interested in the gossip between deities.

He quit the WeChat group and clicked on the Dragon Eye in the Treasure Chest.

To be fair, the Dragon Eye was huge. It looked rather clear on both its front and back, just like a [cymophane](#).

Dragon Eye: Special Item, usage unknown.

F*ck you!

Ye Zichen swore. He thought he got something good, but in the end, it was a piece of trash that he couldn't use.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes and lost interest in the Dragon Eye.

Meanwhile, sleepiness overcame him, causing him to fall asleep after chucking away his phone.

Ye Zichen had a really great sleep. He even dreamed of having a date with Chang'e.

Just as he was about to hold Chang'e's hand, someone pushed him and woke him up.

“Fifth Bro!”

“Ol' Five, stop sleeping.”

They all say people are cranky when they just get woken up. Ye Zichen was no exception to this.

After having his dream ruined by someone, he was so angry that he wanted to curse.

“What, if the teacher is calling, then help me say present. I don't want to eat lunch either. What are you calling me for!”

“Go downstairs and have a look, someone is cursing you with a megaphone.”

“Cursing me?”

Ye Zichen was confused. Seeing that, Zhu Yunbai promptly opened the window. Once it was opened, they heard someone shout downstairs with a megaphone.

“Ye Zichen, you cowardly bastard, shitty grandson, f*cking come down for laozi.”

“He really is cursing me,” Ye Zichen rubbed his head, then lit a cigarette for himself. “Let’s go downstairs to have a look.”

A huge crowd of students surrounded the male dormitory of Polytechnic University.

Ye Zichen’s name was too huge in Polytechnic University, so someone cursing him was definitely huge news.

The moment that the news was known, people immediately spread it to each other, resulting in such a crowd.

“Ye Zichen, stop f*cking playing dead, laozi knows that you can hear me. Hurry up and come down...”

The curses continued downstairs. Then, Ye Zichen took a glance at his Porsche 918.

The car had already been sprayed with the phrase “monster with a human’s face”.

Then, he looked at the spray can in the hands of the man with the megaphone. It was clearly him who did it.

Ye Zichen scratched his head and walked towards the man. The man looked to be twenty-something. He was rather thin, and looked rather proper with the glasses.

Ye Zichen did admire his perseverance, he had shouted for ten odd minutes, causing his entire neck to be red, yet he was still pressing on.

However, from the looks of it, he didn’t know Ye Zichen personally.

“Bro, stop shouting, the security is going to come soon.”

Ye Zichen patted that young man’s shoulders, while that young man hit his hand away.

“Whatever, I have to curse that grandson, Ye Zichen.”

“Alright, I’m the grandson you’re talking about, stop cursing,

wait a moment. Look at how tired you are, do you need me to buy you a bottle of water?”

Ye Zichen found this brat rather funny, he could actually curse him for ten odd minutes without even knowing him.

Just who gave him this unwavering determination!?

“You are Ye Zichen?”

The young man glared at him, but it was not threatening at all with his physique.

Ye Zichen nodded, then took the megaphone from him,

“That’s right, there seems to be only me that’s called Ye Zichen in Polytechnic University.

“Oh wow, I was looking for you!”

“I know you’re looking for me, otherwise, you wouldn’t be shouting here with the megaphone, right?” Ye Zichen smiled helplessly. “However, you have to tell me what exactly you are looking for me for. Say, you don’t know me and I don’t think I’ve seen you before. We have no grudge with each other, why are you cursing me like that!?”

“Also...” Ye Zichen pointed at his treasured car. “Do you know

what kind of car this is? Porsche 918, I haven't even driven it for a day and you already sprayed it. Do you know how much it would cost to get it sprayed again?"

"Stop pretending with me, do you think you're amazing being rich? Can you casually play with a girl's feelings when you're rich?"

The young man revealed a cold smile as he pointed at Ye Zichen and cursed him again.

Ye Zichen shook his head helplessly after hearing that.

"You can't just say stuff. Say, who's feeling did I play with?"

Right at this moment, a taxi stopped in front of the dorm. Li Jiayi got out of the car and immediately dragged the young man's hands towards the car.

"Ge, who told you to cause trouble here?"

Chapter 40 – Old Man Xiao’s Invitation

Ye Zichen understood everything the moment he saw Li Jiayi.

No wonder the young man could spray his car even when the young man did not know him.

It seemed like he’s someone from the Golden Spring Hotel, and remembered his car plate after checking the security tapes.

The only thing Ye Zichen couldn’t understand was, just how did he play with Li Jiayi’s feelings?

“Jiayi, stop pulling on me! I have to make this monster with a human’s appearance pay!”

Li Chuang pushed back, causing Li Jiayi to fall onto the ground.

Ye Zichen quickly ran over to help her up, then frowned towards Li Chuang.

“Come at me with any issues you have with me, what are you pushing a girl around for?”

“Let go of me!”

Li Jiayi frowned, while Ye Zichen obediently let go of her.

At this moment, Li Chuang also ran over to Li Jiayi's side to see if she was alright. Li Jiayi merely shook her head towards him and signaled him to get in the car.

“Jiayi, why are you still on his side after him doing what he did to you?”

“Wait...”

Ye Zichen raised his hand to stop Li Chuang from speaking.

“I just don't get it. What did I do to Li Jiayi? From the beginning when you randomly cursed me with the megaphone, to saying that I did something Li Jiayi... Just what did I do to her?”

“You are the best one to be clear about what you did yourself!” Li Chuang clenched his teeth and swore. “Scum!”

“I...”

Ye Zichen was truly a bit confused, he didn't know what the situation was at all.

If he really did something, he definitely would not push away the responsibilities, but he really didn't do anything. Why did he have to take the blame?

“Li Jiayi, tell me, what did I do to you?”

Slap.

Li Jiayi directly slapped Ye Zichen.

“Ye-zi.”

Some of Ye Zichen’s roommates immediately came up to him, while the surrounding students also exclaimed quietly.

Ye Zichen raised his hand to stop them, then licked his lips and smiled towards Li Jiayi.

“Li Jiayi, you’ve got you have a reason for hitting me, right? I saved you yesterday, just what do you mean by this?”

“Ye Zichen, let’s just say I was wrong about you. I didn’t request you to take responsibility towards me, but you don’t need to hide it like this, right?”

“How am I hiding?”

“I truly was wrong about you. Ye Zichen, I hate you.”

Li Jiayi pulled Li Chuang into the taxi, while Ye Zichen stood on the spot like a man made out of wood, as he stared dumbly at the

taxi that disappeared from view.

Just what the f*ck did I do?

“Ye-zi, what’s going on?” Kang Peng came over and asked curiously.

“Even I don’t know what’s going on, what am I supposed to say when you ask me?”

The scene just now had truly confused Ye Zichen. When he woke up in the morning, Li Jiayi had said some weird things to him.

He thought that the woman had her period, and so was in a bad mood.

But f*ck, she ran over to his school at noon again and said a bunch more random stuff.

What the hell!

“No, Ye-zi, what does your family actually do? Is that Porsche 918 yours?”

“Stop bothering me!”

Ye Zichen swore, then looked at that Porsche, which was sprayed

to the point it was unrecognizable. Then he took out his phone to call Xiao Hai so that he would come and pick up the car. After which, he just returned to the room in annoyance.

“Where did you guys go? I wanted to find you guys! There’s a huge news in school! The student council president, Fu Chengming, appeared in the park beside the school in red underwear this morning. The thread is really heated up.”

Zhang Rui immediately started gossiping when they got back to the dorm.

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth after hearing it. If it was known earlier, he might have been proud of his own designs for a while.

But now...

“Stop looking, the headline’s about to change later.”

Kang Peng looked at it for a moment before throwing the phone back. Zhang Rui looked at him in confusion, while Zhu Yunbai shrugged on the side.

“Fifth Bro’s going to be on the headlines once again!”

“What happened, what happened?”

It could be said that Zhang Rui was the most interested in gossip

in the room.

He ran to Ye Zichen's side with bare feet. Ye Zichen raised his foot and kicked him to the side, while swearing.

“F*ck off.”

...

“Hai-ge, I'm so sorry. The car you just gave me turned out like this.”

Ye Zichen said depressingly. Xiao Hai patted his shoulders without caring and laughed.

“You did piss off quite a lot of people. Just look at this spray, monster with a human's appearance, just what sort of despicable thing did you do again?”

“What do you mean again?” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth speechlessly. Xiao Hai also chuckled, signaled his subordinate to drive the car away, then laughed, “Do you need Hai-ge to help you deal with it?”

“Please don't, it's no big deal.”

When Xiao Hai spoke about helping him deal with it, that was definitely going to destroy them completely.

Li Chuang had sprayed the car for Li Jiayi, while Ye Zichen felt that there was certainly some misunderstanding between him and Li Jiayi.

However, he couldn't think of where it could be from at the moment.

“Alright, I'll listen to you. If you say there's no need, then there's no need.” Xiao Hai held Ye Zichen's shoulders and said. “Actually, Hai-ge came because I had some business.”

“I knew it, if Big Boss Hai comes in person just to take the car away, it really wouldn't make sense,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes as if he guessed it already.

Xiao Hai chuckled after hearing it, “I knew I wouldn't be able to hide it from you. Hai-ge came this time to invite you over to visit my home.”

“I'm not going,” Ye Zichen shook his head.

“You're not giving Hai-ge face?” Xiao Hai showed an angry expression. “What's more, not only Hai-ge wants to invite you, but our family's old man wants to thank you in person as well.”

“The old man recovered?”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, he never would have thought that the Great Recovery Pill was that useful. He should stock up some more Great Recovery Pills in the future, since they might be able to save his life if he gets some sort of disease in the future.

“Not completely, but more or less.”

Xiao Hai's expression was filled with joy. The old man recovering was a huge joyous thing for the Xiao family.

More importantly, the burden on his shoulders had also decreased a little.

Although Ye Zichen called him Hai-ge, he wasn't much older than Ye Zichen. He was only twenty-four.

He had to manage such a large corporation at the age of twenty-four, and it was without any prior notice.

He did have a lot of pressure.

“Lil' Ye, just go. The old man gave the orders, he must see you. If you don't go, Hai-ge will also be troubled.”

Xiao Hai showed a “please” expression. Ye Zichen thought about it, then raised his eyebrows.

“I have lessons in the afternoon.”

“Isn’t it fine if you skip, Hai-ge skipped quite a few lessons when he was in school too. This isn’t a reason for you to refuse.”

“I have stuff to do at night.”

“What stuff?”

“None of your business,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes. He made this up, but all of a sudden, he couldn’t think of a good excuse.

“If you’re not saying it, then it’s nothing. Don’t messing with Hai-ge. You’re going if you want to, you’re still going even if you don’t want to.”

With that, Xiao Hai grabbed Ye Zichen and chucked him into the car.

Ye Zichen shouted towards the outside, while banging on the car window.

“Help, kidnapping!”

Xiao Hai chuckled, then shouted at the driver.

“Start driving back to the Xiao family!”

Chapter 41 – Testing

Xiao Hai stood in front of the car door. They had already arrived at the Xiao family some time ago, but Ye Zichen just refused to get out of the car.

“Lil’ Ye, get out.”

“You know that this is kidnapping, right?”

Ye Zichen refused to come out of the car with a tsundere-look. He had already said that he wouldn’t come, but Xiao Hai ended up just directly throwing him in the car and brought him here.

Is this the attitude they should have towards their savior?

He had saved the old man’s life. It’s fine if they’re not courteous, but they actually used violence against him.

Even a mud doll would get mad.

“Hehe, I had heard that Lil’ Ye came.”

A clear laughter sounded out from outside the door. Xiao Hai turned around in surprise.

“Grandpa, why did you come out?”

The old man walked towards the car.

Ye Zichen, who had been lying in the car like a big boss also sat up. It was fine for him to put on an air in front of Xiao Hai, since they were of the same generation.

He didn't dare to do it in front of the old man of the Xiao family.

“Old Man Xiao.”

Ye Zichen stood respectfully in front of the old man. Old Man Xiao chuckled.

“So this is Lil' Ye. Not bad, he looks talented.”

“Old Man exaggerated his praise.”

Ye Zichen replied courteously.

“Haha, don't be so courteous. You saved my life, so you are my savior,” Old Man Xiao chuckled brightly. “Since you came, then come inside.”

This was the second time Ye Zichen had come to the Xiao family home.

Even so, he couldn't help but be shocked about how luxurious the Xiao family was.

It had a huge courtyard, which was the size of the mansion he had bought.

After entering the living room of the mansion, he saw a pot of Longjing Tea on the tea table with three tea cups.

“Sit.”

Old Man Xiao pointed to a seat on the sofa, signalling Ye Zichen to sit down.

“Lil' Ye, to be truthful, Old Man, I, really am thankful towards you. I had thought that I would have to spend the rest of my life on a sickbed. I didn't think that...”

Old Man Xiao's tone was full of feelings. Ye Zichen was only able to smile awkwardly in response.

He really didn't know how to handle this sort of elder, who had lived for a long time.

Xiao Hai, who was extremely mighty on the outside, also sat beside Ye Zichen like an obedient child, not daring to even utter a single word.

All of a sudden, the atmosphere in the living room seemed a bit awkward.

“Lil’ Ye.”

“Yes!” Ye Zichen immediately sat straight.

“I heard Lil’ Hai say that the pill you saved me was a pill called the Great Recovery Pill,” When Old Man Xiao mentioned this, a light flashed across his eyes.

“Yes,” Ye Zichen nodded.

“I wonder Lil’ Ye’s parents...” Old Man Xiao said, then shook his head with a smile. “Sorry, Old Man, I, asked too much. This is Lil’ Ye’s secret. I have no right to pry.”

“Hehe...” Ye Zichen chuckled dumbly. For some reason, he felt like this old fellow was not as harmless as he seemed.

To be fair, how could someone that could establish such a large corporation be a normal person?

“Lil’ Ye, I wonder if you still have any more of that pill?”

Old Man Xiao spoke up once again. When Ye Zichen heard that, he instantly tensed up.

“Don’t think too much. I just want to ask my old friend for medicine. He’s about the same as me, he has quite a bit of issues since he’s old.”

“Old Man, pardon my helplessness.”

Ye Zichen revealed a helpless smile. He did have more Great Recovery Pills on hand, but he wasn’t an idiot.

This old fellow clearly felt something unusual. If say anything idiotically at the time, he was unsure of what might happen.

Chief Liu had asked him weirdly before, whether he was someone from there!

He did not know where “there” is.

Since it was unknown, it meant danger. It was better for him not to get into contact with it.

“Such a shame.”

Old Man Xiao shook his head, then rubbed his temples.

“Lil’ Hai, accompany Lil’ Ye here for a moment, I’m going to rest a bit in my room. I’m old now, so my body’s not well. I can’t even sit properly for a long time.”

“Grandpa, take care.”

Old Man Xiao returned to his room under the support of a servant. Then, Xiao Hai smiled at Ye Zichen apologetically.

“Lil’ Ye, don’t think too much into it. My grandpa’s like that. He likes to think too much about people after staying in the business world for so long. However, believe that he has a good heart, he definitely will not force you to do something or secretly investigate you.”

Xiao Hai explained for Old Man Xiao, while Ye Zichen also nodded with a smile.

“Understood.”

“Alright, then sit here for a moment, I’ll go and tell the kitchen to prepare dinner.”

“Alright.”

After Xiao Hai had left, Ye Zichen became the only person in the living room.

Only at that moment did he let out a long sigh.

Old Man Xiao likes to think too much into people, but wasn’t Xiao Hai the same?

Both of them ran businesses, so they would have the issue of businessmen, causing them to always try to guess what other people are thinking.

Ye Zichen felt that he should come less into contact with businessmen, otherwise, his deities' chat group might be found out about one day.

“Lil' Hai, what do you think about Lil' Ye.”

Xiao Hai did not go to organize dinner, instead, he went to Old Man Xiao's room. If Ye Zichen found out about this, he would definitely get pissed off and directly leave.

“Grandpa, Lil' Ye is my good little bro. Can you not look at him like you view business enemies?”

Xiao Hai was a bit angry. However, Old Man Xiao slammed down on the table.

“Foolish.”

Xiao Hai instantly dipped his head.

“We, who run businesses, rely on thinking about other people's thoughts in order to advance far. This Ye Zichen has a mysterious background. If you don't fully understand his background, how

are you supposed to be real friends with him. What's more, I think Lil' Ye doesn't treat you sincerely either,"

"Grandpa, can you not view Lil' Ye with eyes of an older person? He's different from other people."

Xiao Hai still wanted to argue, but then gave up when he remembered Old Man Xiao's stubbornness.

"Never mind. No need for this dinner. I don't want to pry into what Lil' Ye was thinking, nor do I want to know if he can treat me sincerely. What's more, don't you think that Lil' Ye is really like one of your old friends?"

"Who!"

"Grandpa Gu."

The moment Xiao Hai finished, Old Man Xiao fell deep into his thoughts.

"Grandpa, think about before. It was because you like to think too much into people that Grandpa Gu left, aren't I right?"

"How dare you!"

Ugh.

Old Man Xiao, who was sitting on the chair, suddenly coughed up a mouthful of blood and fell onto the ground.

After staying in the living room for a long time, Ye Zichen found the living room to be a bit sinister and terrifying.

He didn't dare to take out his phone to look at the group chat. God knows if there's any security cameras in the mansion spying on him.

Dong, dong, dong.

Urgent footsteps came down from the stairs to the second floor. Ye Zichen raised his head, then saw Xiao Hai run towards him anxiously.

But Ye Zichen was a bit confused.

Xiao Hai had left from the door, but he didn't see him enter once again.

How did he come down from the second floor.

“Hai-ge, shouldn't you explain it to me?”

Ye Zichen's expression was sullen, while Xiao Hai grabbed hold of his arm.

“I’ll explain to you later. Lil’ Ye, save our family’s old man first.”

Chapter 42 – How Can A Ghost Girl Be So Cute

Ye Zichen followed Xiao Hai up to the second floor.

Old Man Xiao lay on the bed with a pale expression. He exhaled much more than he inhaled, it seemed like he was about to suffocate.

“What’s going on?”

“I angered him.”

Guilt flashed across Xiao Hai’s eye, causing Ye Zichen to sneer.

“You truly came to Old Man Xiao’s room just now.”

Xiao Hai wanted to explain, but Ye Zichen waved his hand, signaling him that there was no need to.

The blood on the ground had not dried yet, it was nearly black. That wasn’t the blood that a normal person would cough up.

Most importantly, Ye Zichen felt like this room had a heavy yin aura about it.

Ye Zichen already felt the sinister aura in the living room, but

when he walked into Old Man Xiao's room, he noticed that the yin aura actually came from here.

“Ye-zi, look, my grandpa...”

When Xiao Hai saw Ye Zichen wander around in the room without even looking at Old Man Xiao's condition, he became extremely anxious.

Ye Zichen put his finger on his mouth to indicate for him to be quiet and scanned the room continuously with faint golden eyes.

“Burn this painting!”

Ye Zichen pointed to the painting at head of Old Man Xiao's bed.

“This is something treasured by my grandfather. I can't make the decision.”

“Then I'm not going to save him.”

Ye Zichen shrugged then prepared to walk out. Xiao Hai clenched his teeth and said.

“Alright, I'll burn it!”

“I want it burnt now!”

Xiao Hai clenched his teeth, then took down the painting and burnt it in front of Ye Zichen. Only then did Ye Zichen smile in satisfaction, then he moved his right hand back and clenched his fist.

“Alright, I’ll be going now. Prepare a car for me!”

“Leaving? Then my-my grandpa...”

“He’ll be fine in a moment.”

Ye Zichen smiled meaningfully.

Xiao Hai instantly understood. Actually Old Man Xiao did not cough up blood due to being angered, it was due to that painting.

But he was unable to understand why.

After getting on, Xiao Hai wanted to get the driver to send him back, but Ye Zichen refused.

When Ye Zichen was about to leave the Xiao family, he rolled down the windows and raised his eyebrows towards Xiao Hai.

“Remember, you owe me an explanation. Also, your family’s old man will wake up after I leave, hurry up and accompany him. Tell him that I don’t like to be tricked.”

After the car started and left, Xiao Hai stood in the doorway for a long time.

Ye Zichen actually knew everything.

It really was as Ye Zichen had said. Old Man Xiao opened his eyes after he left the estate.

Xiao Hai sat beside the bed and helped the old man up.

“Grandpa, are you okay?”

“Lil’ Ye saved me again?” A flash of helplessness flashed across Old Man Xiao’s eyes. Hearing that, Xiao Hai nodded, “Yes, Lil’ Ye told me to burn the painting at the head of your bed. He also told me to tell you that he doesn’t like to be tricked.”

“Painting?”

Old Man Xiao hurriedly looked up. Very soon, he unenergetically dipped his head once again and patted Xiao Hai’s shoulders.

“You’re right, he really is very much like Old Gu. I won’t interfere between the two of you. Go on now, I’m tired, I want to rest.”

When Xiao Hai left the room, Old Man Xiao sat up once again,

and sighed as he looked at the blank space above the head of the bed.

“Old Gu, in the end, someone burnt the painting you wanted to burn back then!”

After Ye Zichen left the Xiao family, he acted very weirdly. He continuously drove with one hand, while forming a fist with another.

“Let go of me!”

A cute yell suddenly sounded out within the near-empty car.

“Wait a moment.”

Ye Zichen smiled playfully, then let go of his hand after locking all the doors and windows.

“How can you see me!”

There was a girl in a light blue floral dress floating near the top of Ye Zichen’s car.

“Ignore the reason of why I can see you. I’m just curious, what’s your grudge with that old man?”

“He pissed off Grandpa Gu.”

“Grandpa Gu?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows? “Grandpa Gu is a person?”

“Mhmm, a living person,” the ghost girl nodded.

“He could see you as well?”

“Yeah, Grandpa Gu was very nice to me,” When the girl mentioned Grandpa Gu, she actually smiled. “Oh yeah, why did you burn that painting?”

“Don’t you know that the painting was absorbing your yin aura? It is a evil item, wouldn’t I burn it instead of keep it?” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at her and said. “Why didn’t you go and reincarnate after you died? What are you wandering around for?”

“I can’t,” The girl revealed a hint of depression. “I died before my time was up. The underworld isn’t accepting me. I can only wander around like this until my time in the world of the living is up, then go and reincarnate.”

Died before her time was up.

This was too shocking, if it wasn’t because Ye Zichen had even become sworn brothers with a deity, he really might have been shocked.

However, this ghost girl was quite pitiful, she actually died randomly before her time.

And she can't even reincarnate, and could only wander around the human world like this.

"Then what are you going to do?" Ye Zichen felt a sense of pity. If there was anything he could help the ghost girl with, he was going to.

"I don't know either," The female girl dipped her head helplessly and played around with the edges of her floral skirt. "When Grandpa Gu was here, the Xiao family was the place of my belonging. However, ever since Grandpa Gu left, I lost my home."

"How about you come with me?" Ye Zichen touched his chin. Seeing that, the girl frowned, "Why would I follow you, you are obviously a bad person? Are you lusting after my beauty, and want to do something to me... I'm telling you, I'm a ghost..."

"You have a delusion about rape!"

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at her in annoyance. She's a ghost, and he was human. Lusting after her beauty?

However, to be fair, that ghost girl did look quite good.

“You have it!”

The female girl leaped towards Ye Zichen. In Ye Zichen’s imagination, ghost girls should look terrifying with a green face and fangs. However, to be perfectly honest, this girl was actually kind of cute when she was angry.

Ye Zichen raised his arm and grabbed her wrist, then chucked her towards the top of the car.

“I have the teachings of the Great Sage, you can’t beat me.”

“You’re bullying me!”

The ghost girl started sobbing while she floated in the car. Seeing that, Ye Zichen blushed.

Is she really a f*cking ghost!

If she is, then why is she crying!

And she had to be so cute!

“Alright, it was my mistake, stop crying,” Ye Zichen raised his hand and pulled the ghost girl down to the front passenger seat. “See if there is anything you can possess on my body. At least you won’t be bullied if you follow me. Furthermore, I know some people, I might drink a few glasses of wine with Yama one day, and

he'll let you reincarnate.”

“You’re lying!”

“Who’s lying,” Ye Zichen took out his phone and opened the chat group. “You can read, right? Look at who is in the group.”

“Nezha, Canopy General, God of Thunder...”

Ha.

The ghost girl suddenly laughed.

“What are you laughing for!”

This was the first time Ye Zichen shared his secret, and this ghost girl actually laughed at him.

“You’re all crazy!”

Chapter 43 – Taking In The Ghost Girl

Ye Zichen zoned out when he saw the ghost girl's smile.

Why is that ghost girl so cute, this is too unfair.

Shu.

When the ghost girl noticed Ye Zichen's expression, she instantly floated to the top of the car and frowned, while covering the front of her chest.

“What are you doing, don't try to do lewd things to me.”

“Come on down.”

Ye Zichen raised his hand and yanked the ghost girl down by her leg. The car was only so big, so she couldn't hide anywhere.

“What are you doing, I'm telling you I'm a virgin female ghost. If you touch me, then misfortune will fall upon you.”

The ghost girl was completely vigilant. She looked as if Ye Zichen was really going to do something to her.

“Say, ghost girl, we are separated by life and death, don't be so narcissistic okay? There are loads of girls waiting for me to chat them up around me!”

Ye Zichen was afraid that the ghost girl wouldn't believe him, so he took out his phone and turned to Su Yan's Moments.

...

She can't have blocked him, right?

Seeing that there were no messages in Su Yan's Moments, he sent a message in a testing manner.

Hello!

Dearly Beloved has activated friend verification. You are not his (her) friend.

Please send a friend request...

"Ahahaha, you got deleted!"

The ghost girl's voice was extremely happy. Ye Zichen immediately made a "wait a moment" gesture, and clicked on Xia Keke's Moments.

Ha, he wasn't deleted this time.

"Look!"

Ye Zichen scrolled down, but that ghost girl was dazed.

“Keke.”

“You know her?”

Ye Zichen opened his eyes wide in shock when that ghost girl revealed a pitiful smile.

“How is she?”

It seemed like this ghost girl really does know Xia Keke.

“She’s great, she’s a school beauty at Polytechnic University.”

That’s great,” the ghost girl revealed a reminiscent look and smiled. “We said that we were going to get into Polytechnic University together before. I didn’t think that she truly ended up going to this university. Oh yeah, Xia Keke and I were great friends!”

Ye Zichen subconsciously gulped, and touched his elbow.

To be honest, he was getting goosebumps.

This ghost girl actually knew Xia Keke, and the two had promised

to get into the same university.

And the one they had chosen was Polytechnic University.

Thus, he could guess that they knew each other in high school.

That was because there are only so many universities in the minds of children in primary or middle school.

“Can I ask an intrusive question? When did you die?”

“Two years ago, right before the National Matriculation Examinations.”

The ghost girl’s face was full of smiles, but that smile was filled with unspeakable trouble.

Sigh.

Ye Zichen put his hand on his chest and breathed in and out several times.

He had a feeling that...

He had got mixed up into something huge.

Trouble before the National Matriculation Examinations...

Before her time!

Murder!

As goosebumps covered Ye Zichen's body, he deliberately ignored his thoughts in order to calm himself down.

“Back to the main topic, see if there's anywhere on me that you can stay. Just follow me in the future. Aren't you and Xia Keke good friends? If you come with me, then you might be able to meet her.”

“Is there a need?” The ghost girl shook her hand and smiled. “Even if we meet, can we chat like this?”

Ye Zichen clearly knew that it wasn't possible.

The reason he could see the ghost girl was due to the Great Sage's Fiery Eyes of Truth. Xia Keke was a normal person, how could she see her.

Humans and ghosts were different, they are not the same.

However, she saw the anticipation in the ghost girl's eyes.

“Yes!”

Ye Zichen replied with a smile.

The ghost girl's expression tensed, while Ye Zichen continued, "Believe me, a lot of weird things happen around me. Such as me being able to see you now. Stay by my side, I can help you get reborn."

"You're lying! It's impossible for you to do something that even Grandpa Gu couldn't do!"

"I don't know who is the Grandpa Gu you're talking about. I'm not him, so don't use him to judge me!"

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes. He didn't know who Grandpa Gu was, but he was definitely some sort of master since he had been able to see the ghost girl.

But, so what if that person was a master? He has the group!

Everyone in it are deities!

In order to help the ghost girl regain her confidence, Ye Zichen said another shocking thing.

"I promise that I will resurrect you and let you meet your parents and friends once again..."

Resurrection.

The ghost girl's body trembled. She bit her lips and gripped her fists tightly.

“There is something on you that I can stay on.”

“Point it out.”

“I can't find it, but I can sense it.”

Ye Zichen immediately thought of it. He opened his phone's Treasure Chest, and took out the Dragon Eye that he didn't know the use for.

“It's this, right?”

“Yes.”

With that, the ghost girl snuck into the Dragon Eye. After she entered, the dim Dragon Eye quickly shrank to the size of a glass bead.

Furthermore, it started to shine with white light.

“This is very suitable for me to live, it can nurture my soul,” The ghost girl's voice sounded rather joyful. Soon, she spoke up again

in a solemn tone, “Can you really revive me? Even Grandpa Gu...”

“I said it already, I’m me! Believe me!”

Ye Zichen caressed that shimmering Dragon Eye. The Dragon Eye flashed intensely for a moment, as if the ghost girl was laughing.

“Alright, I’ll believe you. Tell me your name.”

“Ye Zichen.”

“Hello, I’m Liu Jing.”

When they got back to the school, it was right when the dorms were about to close. Ye Zichen rushed in right before it closed, then saw the animals strip dancing in the dorm.

“Hey, why did you bring me here.”

Liu Jing, who was in his pocket, immediately exclaimed after they entered the room. Ye Zichen slapped the Dragon Eye and said quietly.

“Isn’t this what a male dorm is like! If you don’t want to see, then just stay in the Dragon Eye.”

“Aren’t I just curious? I’ve never been to university, isn’t it fine

to satisfy my curiosity?”

“Then stop being so shocked.”

“Zichen, what are you muttering to yourself for?” Kang Peng ran over in his boxers, causing Liu Jing to scream out, causing Ye Zichen’s eardrums to vibrate so much that it hurt.

“Ye-zi, are you unwell?”

“I’m fine, just let me rest properly for a moment,” Ye Zichen didn’t take a shower, and directly laid down on the bed after stripping.

“Hey, go and shower!” Liu Jing said in dislike.

“Nope,” Ye Zichen turned around and covered himself with his blanket. Liu Jing put her hands on her waist and snorted, “Alright, you’re not going to wash, right...”

“Ahhhhhh...”

Ye Zichen’s face was completely green when he walked to the public shower room with his bucket and towel.

He was kind of regretting bringing this ghost girl back out of good will, he clearly brought a mistress over.

“Hurry up and wash, I’ll wait here for you.”

Liu Jing sat on the windowsill outside the bathroom and gazed up and the moon outside.

Ye Zichen glanced at her, then walked in with his shower gel.

After he turned on the tap, he closed his eyes and allowed the water to wet his hair. One name kept on repeating in Ye Zichen’s mind.

Liu Jing...

He doesn’t know what kind of story will unfold for her in the future.

However...

That ghost girl is really cute!

Chapter 44 – Linking

Ye Zichen zoned out as he sat on the chair of the mansion, while holding his phone.

It was as if Monkey Bro had disappeared from the Heavenly Court. He no longer flamed Erlang Shen in the group, nor did he brag with Ye Zichen on WeChat.

Ye Zichen looked at their last chat history.

The last message was from several days ago.

“Great Sage, where did you go to have fun? I haven’t seen you around.”

There was still no reply after a long time.

Ye Rong put the washed grapes on the stone table in the courtyard, while Lil’ White followed behind her proudly as it wagged its tail.

It’s tsundere-look caused people to be unable to resist her at all.

“Zichen, eat some grapes.”

Hearing that, Ye Zichen put away his phone, took out a grape and chucked it into his mouth.

Lil' White sat beside his feet and looked towards the palte.

As if saying: Give me one as well.

Ye Zichen casually chucked a few grapes from the plate. Lil' White leaped.

Zoom, zoom, zoom.

The three grapes directly entered Lil' White's mouth without touching the floor at all.

Oh wow, pretty good.

Ye Zichen grabbed another handful and chucked them at Lil' White.

None of them fell on the floor either.

Lil' White wagged its tail in disdain, then left proudly with its head held high.

“This little thing...”

Ye Zichen laughed, while Ye Rong also smiled when she looked at Lil' White.

“Lil’ White is very smart, it’s like it can understand what we’re saying.”

“Of course, didn’t you see who chose it?”

What Ye Zichen actually wanted to say was ‘Of course, how could a dog from the Heavenly Court be bad’?

“Zichen!”

After eating grapes for a bit, Ye Rong spoke up after a brief hesitation.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and sat straight.

“What is it?”

“Although I have Lil’ White accompanying me, mom still feels a bit bored while staying alone at the mansion every day.”

Ye Zichen could understand as well. There was hardly anyone in the mansion area.

Ye Rong couldn’t even find anyone to chat with. Furthermore, she also did a bit of sales back in the village, she would naturally be a bit frantic since she suddenly quietened down.

Actually, there were a lot of jobs, but it would depend on what it was.

Ye Zichen can't exactly tell his mother to continue selling fruits, he didn't want to see his mother get tired.

“What do you want to do? Furthermore, we have to have a startup fund if we want to do some sort of business, your son is completely poor right now.”

Ye Zichen wanted to listen to Ye Rong's thoughts. Furthermore, him saying “completely poor” was not a lie, he still owed people money.

Although he didn't need to return it, he still felt like it was owing money.

Ye Rong took out a card and put it onto the table. Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“This card...”

“This is the demolition fee for owe home. I don't know why they gave two million!”

“Since they gave it, then we'll keep it.”

There was no doubt that the extra money was from that grandson, Huang Ming.

Right now, that grandson would be completely terrified when he sees him, just like a mouse seeing a cat.

He might have scared him to the point that he pissed himself back at the village. Truth be told, Ye Zichen didn't know why this grandson was that afraid of him.

“Then maybe we should do something with the money on the card?” Ye Rong asked.

Ye Zichen was truly troubled by this question. He had never started a business before, the money in his hands was like ill-gotten wealth.

“Just keep the money with you for now. I'll go and ask my friends to see what is suitable for you to do.”

“That's fine.”

Ye Rong smiled, and put away the card.

“Oh yeah, son, don't university students date? Why have I never seen you bring anyone back?”

Ye Zichen could only run away.

“Hey, I didn’t think that your family was rather rich, you can stay in such a high class mansion.”

Liu Jing smiled playfully at Ye Zichen when he got in the car.

Ye Zichen smiled coyly and rubbed Liu Jing’s head.

“I told you, you’ll definitely have a good time if you follow me.”

Tsk.

Liu Jing snorted.

However, she felt a certain feeling in her heart.

One cause of it was the head rubbing just now, her head haven’t been rubbed in such a long time. Ye Zichen was the first one that could touch her after she became a ghost.

Even Grandpa Gu could not do it before.

All of a sudden, her confidence in Ye Zichen increased by a large amount.

As Ye Zichen was driving, he suddenly saw an old man running sneakily down the side of the road.

Isn't that Su Yan's grandpa?

It seemed like he had escaped successfully once again.

Beep beep.

Ye Zichen pressed the car horn twice. When Old Man Su saw Ye Zichen, his eyes brightened, then ran over and directly sat in the front passenger seat.

"Lil' Ye, hurry. Start driving."

"Aiyo, he's squishing me."

Liu Jing was sitting in the front passenger seat just now, so when Old Man Su got on the car, he had directly sat on top of her.

Ye Zichen snickered, causing Liu Jing to curse.

"You're still laughing, hurry up and make the old man get up for a moment."

Ye Zichen held back his laughter. Meanwhile, Old Man Su got a bit anxious when he saw that Ye Zichen still didn't start driving.

"Lil' Ye, what are you doing! Hurry up and drive. They'll catch

up soon.”

“Alright, alright. But, Old Man Su, can you lift your butt for a moment?”

Ye Zichen nearly laughed out loud when he said this. Old Man Su was also a bit confused by this, but he still chose to lift his but.

“I’m finally free.”

Liu Jing sighed, the floated onto the back seat. Ye Zichen also held back his laughter and asked Old Man Su.

“Where to?”

“Doesn’t matter, anywhere that I can drink is fine!”

“Sure.”

Ye Zichen slammed down on the pedal, causing his car to disappear from the road like a bolt of lightning.

Not long after he left, a group of men in military clothing appeared in the spot they were on just now. He watched as Ye Zichen’s car sped away and shouted into the walkie-talkie.

“I couldn’t catch up to Chief. He got onto a car with the plate

number XXXXXX. Requesting aid.”

Ye Zichen chose to park near a barbeque store.

He still remembered that Old Man Su likes this. What's more, people his age shouldn't like places like a bar.

After ordering a bunch of barbeques, Ye Zichen and Elder Su started to directly drink from beer bottles.

“Lil' Ye, such is fate.”

“Yeah.”

Ye Zichen chuckled, it really was fate, he had met Elder Su both times Elder Su escaped.

“Old Man Su, you are looking better and better.”

Ye Zichen put the beer to the side, and took a bite off a lamb skewer.

“Lil' Ye, I feel like it's all thanks to your wine,” Old Man Su took a bit off a skewer and said. “I would secretly take a few sips if the wine you gave me every day. Every time I drink it, I feel a bit better, and my body seems to get better as well.”

“Yeah, it might be because Old Man Su satisfied his alcohol thirst, and got into a good mood.”

“That’s true.”

Old Man Su chuckled.

After a few rounds, Old Man Su and Ye Zichen’s topic gradually changed to Su Yan from being about alcohol.

“Lil’ Ye, have you contacted my granddaughter recently?”

“Don’t talk about it.”

Ye Zichen shook his head and sighed. They did have some sort of relationship before, but the f*cking string snapped.

He had been feeling troubled about the broken string.

“What? My granddaughter didn’t get interested in you?”

“Yes, and no,” Ye Zichen didn’t know how to reply. However, Old Man Su chuckled, “Do you need this old man to help link the two of you again?”

Chapter 45 – Su Yan’s String Is Linked Again

“What’s the price!?”

Ye Zichen blurted out without thinking.

Old Man Su smiled and wiped his mouth with his hands.

“Do you still have more of the wine...”

Slam.

Ye Zichen immediately threw a green gourd onto the table. Old Man Su was stunned for a long while, and looked meaningfully at Ye Zichen.

He raised his eyebrows slightly, then soundlessly suppressed his shock.

It was as he had thought, that brat is not normal.

Perhaps, he might really be someone from there.

The moment Ye Zichen took out the green gourd, he also felt that he was being a bit impulsive. He had directly withdrawn the monkey wine from the WeChat’s Treasure Chest. He did not carry any on him.

The old man must have been shocked when he saw me suddenly take it out, right?

Secretly he sneaked a glance over at Old Man Su, the old man was touching the gourd extremely lovingly.

“I probably wasn’t found out.”

Ye Zichen felt rather lucky. Meanwhile, since the old man was also a person that kept his word, he picked up his phone and dialed Su Yan’s number.

Approximately twenty minutes later, a beautiful figured appeared underneath the bright road lights.

When Su Yan arrived, she would occasionally look behind her, as if she was staying vigilant to see whether there was anyone following her.

When she appeared beside Old Man Su, she smiled wryly with a helpless expression.

“Grandpa, why did you sneak out to eat again?”

“Grandpa just like these things, it’s not like you don’t already know,” Old Man Su rubbed his beard and laughed. Su Yan sighed and sat opposite the old man, then said. “If dad finds out, he’ll beat

me to death.”

“Does he dare!”

The old man glared, causing a mighty aura to flow outwards subconsciously.

“He’s your father, and he’s just my son in front of me! If he dares to hit my darling granddaughter, I’ll skin him alive.”

Su Yan also laughed. At that moment, the green gourd fell into her sight.

For some reason, Su Yan frowned slightly.

“Grandpa...”

“You noticed,” Old Man Su held the gourd in his hands and chuckled. Then he took off the cork and poured a mouthful into his mouth. “This is good wine. Seeing this gourd, you probably know who came to find you, right?”

“How did you end up with him again?”

Su Yan frowned, bit her lips, then stood up.

Seeing that, Old Man Su quickly shouted towards behind him.

“Lil’ Ye, hurry up and come out. My granddaughter’s going to run away soon.”

At this moment, Ye Zichen finally walked out from a dark corner near the barbeque store.

His face was covered with an awkward smile as he waved towards Su Yan.

“Su Yan.”

Su Yan glared at him fiercely. The scene of Xia Keke kissing him was still fresh in her mind. Thus, she turned around and walked outside, while ignoring him. Ye Zichen quickly caught up and grabbed her arm.

“?”

Su Yan swept her gaze towards the place where the two of them touched. Ye Zichen quickly retracted his hand and rubbed his arm anxiously.

“Su Yan, I didn’t do it on purpose.”

“Mhmm.”

Su Yan’s gaze was filled with coldness. It was a bone-piercing

coldness that worried Ye Zichen.

“I think that there’s been some misunderstandings between us.”

Ye Zichen hesitated for a moment, then decided to tell everything to Su Yan.

It wasn’t that easy to bump into Old Man Su. Bumping into him this time was pure chance. If he didn’t explain this time, then god only knows when he would have to wait until the two of them can settle their differences.

The differences might even turn harder and harder to settle as time passes. Then, he might really have no chance with the goddess.

“I don’t think that there’s any misunderstanding between us.”

Su Yan did not give any face for Ye Zichen, but her actions sold out her thoughts.

She didn’t leave!

This meant that she wanted to hear Ye Zichen’s explanation. Otherwise, everything would end if she just directly had turned around and got in a taxi.

“This is your girlfriend? So pretty! How did you make her angry?

Did you cheat on her?”

Liu Jing teased in midair. Ye Zichen frowned, and shouted.

“Shut up!”

“You’re telling me to shut up? Fine! I’ll shut up!”

Su Yan was shocked by Ye Zichen, so she turned around and left without saying anything else.

“Don’t, Su Yan, I wasn’t talking about you...”

Old Man Su smiled kindly and gazed at Ye Zichen and Su Yan act like they were flirting.

He took a sip of the monkey wine and exclaimed softly.

“Young people are lively.”

Speaking of which, Ye Zichen finally stopped Su Yan, but she didn’t look at him with a nice expression.

Su Yan raised her delicate chin and hugged her shoulders.

‘I’ll give you a minute...”

One minute!

This wasn't a lot of time. He definitely wouldn't have time to finish telling the situation from start to finish.

"Fifty seconds left."

"I didn't start yet!"

"Forty-five seconds!"

"Stop hurrying me. Let me organize everything!"

Ye Zichen took a deep breath and calmed down his complicated mood down.

"The situation at the police station is like this. The scene you saw of Xia Keke kissing me was fake. Why did she kiss me? It was mainly..."

Ye Zichen blabbered on a lot, without even taking a single breath.

After speaking about the entire situation, Ye Zichen put his hands beside his legs like a primary school student, while he waited for Su Yan to react.

“There’s more that... You haven’t talked about.”

Su Yan raised her eyebrows, causing Ye Zichen to scratch his head and fall into deep thoughts.

There wasn’t anything else that he had to say?

“Give me some hints?”

“It just happened!” Su Yan said in an unfriendly tone. Ye Zichen immediately understood.

“You’re talking about what happened at the dorms. That was also a misunderstanding...”

Blabber, blabber.

Ye Zichen immediately spoke up honestly. When he finished, Su Yan hugged her shoulders and laughed coldly.

“So romantic, a world shattering anger for a woman...”

“Su Yan, you have to believe me! Helping Xia Keke was purely due to you. As for Li Jiayi, it was purely a coincidence. She was my classmate. What’s more, I didn’t do anything to her!”

“I don’t have that much face.”

Su Yan twitched her mouth, but felt a sweetness in her heart.

Due to her!

However, thinking about this guy's recent behavior, she still wasn't going to be nice to him.

After so long, he actually did not try to send any message to her on WeChat.

He didn't even look for her after she deleted him!

However, she did misunderstand about him and Xia Keke.

Dingdong.

Marriage string received.

Possessor: Ye Zizhen, Possessed: Su Yan.

Current affability level: 50.

It was even higher than it was before!

Ye Zichen's eyebrows raised up.

“Su Yan, you’re not angry anymore?”

Seeing that Su Yan’s expression improved, and that the marriage string improved, Ye Zichen asked in a testing manner.

Su Yan lowered her gaze, and looked at him in a judging manner.

“Are you sure that you didn’t touch Li Jiayi? How did you solve...”

“It’s not quite convenient for me to tell.”

“I’m saying tell!”

Su Yan frowned once again. He actually dared to hide it from her, he was simply too much!

“Then come over, I’ll tell you in secret.”

Ye Zichen indicated for Su Yan to come over, while Su Yan turned her ear towards him.

Very soon, Su Yan’s face turned completely red. She raised her hand and hit Ye Zichen.

“Scoundrel...”

Chapter 46 – Huge Scene!

Differences settled.

Ye Zichen walked back to the barbeque store shoulder to shoulder with Su Yan. Old Man Su sat on the chair and swept his gaze playfully on the two of them.

“The couple got back together?”

Although Ye Zichen knew that Old Man Su wanted to get him and Su Yan together, he didn't think that he would say something that was so very obvious.

More importantly, why did Old Man Su want to do that?

Purely for the monkey wine?

If it's like that, then Su Yan's was truly too little.

Thankfully the person that offered the monkey wine was him. If it was anyone else, he would definitely cry in the bathroom.

On the other hand, Su Yan's beautiful face was completely red. She bit her lips and pouted as she slammed the table.

“If you say anything like that again, then I won't sneak you out anymore.”

“Aigo, grandpa spoke to much.”

Old Man Su chuckled.

After eating for another half an hour or so, Old Man Su was also satisfied, so they prepared to leave.

“Big bro, that brat seems to be the Ye Zichen that Young Master Fu talked about!”

A red-hair underling pointed towards Ye Zichen, while five or six young man immediately came over.

“Hey, you don’t say. It really is.”

The bald big bro touched his shining bald head, and revealed a savage smile.

“Our fortune is pretty good, we actually directly met the business we were looking for.”

“Hey, you damn scoundrel, they’re looking for you!” Liu Jing, who was floating in midair, shouted.

“Lil’ Ye, they are looking for you?” Old Man Su also frowned slightly.

Although Su Yan didn't speak up, it was obvious that there was more worry for Ye Zichen in her eyes than anyone else.

“Brat, you are Ye Zichen, right?”

The baldie touched the thick golden chain on his neck, opened his mouth full of yellow teeth and walked towards Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen stood his ground without moving. It seemed like Fu Chengming had tasked these people with the job of dealing with him.

He didn't think that Fu Chengming would have acted this quick!

“I am.”

Ye Zichen replied indifferently.

“Alright, not bad, you dare to admit it,” the baldie touched his bald head and said. “Young Master Fu wants us to break one of your legs, look...”

“Young man, this is a lawful society. Aren't you afraid of the law punishing you?”

Old Man Su couldn't quite accept it, and spoke up. When the baldie heard this, he laughed maniacally.

“Old fellow, you actually dared to speak about the law with laozi? I’m telling you, laozi is the law around here. What laozi says is the same as the emperor’s orders. Hold that brat!”

“You can’t do this, otherwise, we’ll call the police.”

Su Yan immediately jumped out due to her being worried for Ye Zichen’s safety. When the baldie saw Su Yan, his gaze sharpened.

“I never would have thought that there’s a girlie here. What, this gigolo is your man? You’re worried about him?”

The baldie reached out his hand to touch Su Yan’s cheeks. Seeing that, Ye Zichen, who was unmoving during all this, took out a beer bottle on the table.

Bang!

And directly slammed it on his head.

“Do you not believe that I will break your four limbs if you dare to touch her!

“Brat, you are seeking death!”

“It seems like you don’t believe it.”

Ye Zichen had smiled kindly, but soon, it turned extremely sharp.

He raised his leg and kicked the baldie's stomach. F*ck, this grandson actually wanted to touch Su Yan.

Su Yan is his woman, he will murder anyone who dared to touch her.

“What are you blanking out for? Go.”

The baldie, who slammed onto the lamppost, roared angrily at his underlings. Ye Zichen picked up the beer bottle that was smashed, as a golden light arose from his eyes, and snorted coldly at the baldie's underlings.

“Stand still if you don't want to die.”

When they saw Ye Zichen's faint golden eyes, the underlings instantly dumbled out on spot.

“Did you know that the thing you shouldn't have done most was to touch her?”

Ye Zichen stabbed the shattered parts of the beer bottle into the position of the baldie's collar bone.

“Actually I didn’t want to use violence in front of Elder Su and Su Yan, but why did you have to touch her.”

Bang.

Ye Zichen swung a fist on the baldie’s face, instantly transforming the right half of his face.

“Oh yeah, I said that I will break your four limbs...”

Crack.

Ye Zichen stepped heavily onto the baldie’s left arm, resulting a clear crack of the bones to be heard.

That pitiful smile caused everyone to be shocked.

“Hurry up and call the police, a death might happen later.”

The customers in the barbeque started to call the police.

At the same time, Old Man Su had a call.

“Dad, why did you sneak out again, and you even left your security behind. Where are you now, I’ll come and get you.”

“Heh, where am I? I’m being surrounded by a group of

delinquents. Just now, that delinquent leader also nearly took advantage of my darling granddaughter. Su Qihu, do as you see fit.”

Slam.

Elder Su furiously hung up the phone, then sat down and looked towards Ye Zichen’s position.

For some reason, he had started to like Ye Zichen a bit more.

He was harsh and merciless enough when he moved. He was truly talented!

It seems like he had to find a way to trick him to his side, that sort of talented person would only have a good future ahead him!

All of a sudden, Elder Su looked towards Su Yan.

When he saw Su Yan’s nervous expression...

Elder Su instantly felt like it was all set.

WEEoooWEEoooWEEooo...

A loud police siren rang out.

“Don’t move, put your hands up.”

A clear voice sounded out behind Ye Zichen, causing him to casually throw the baldie, who was half dead, onto the floor.

Ye Zichen turned around, and couldn’t help but shake his head with a smile when he saw the female officer with a gun.

“Officer Lin, we really are destined to meet each other.”

He counted the number of police cars that had been driven over. There was eight.

They really did think highly of him.

“It’s you again, I knew we would meet again,” Officer Lin smiled coldly and waved towards the police behind her, signaling them to arrest Ye Zichen.

“Wait.”

Ye Zichen smiled, indicating that they needn’t be in such a hurry.

Officer Lin frowned, then yelled.

“What sort of tricks do you want to play now?”

Ye Zichen walked a few steps backwards with a smile, and arrived beside the baldie.

The baldie's eyes became filled with terror when he saw that Ye Zichen had returned.

“Don't you still have a leg that's not broken? Don't worry, I'll break it for you now!”

Crack.

“Ye Zichen! Put your hands up, otherwise, I'm going to shoot!”

Officer Lin roared.

“Don't worry, he won't die.”

“You actually dare to assault the victim in front of me. I guess you were looking down on me.”

“Don't take it so seriously, it hurts your feelings, aren't I right?” The corner of Ye Zichen's mouth rose as he pointed at the baldie on the floor. “I said that I will break his four limbs from the start. A person has to keep his promise, and break it when I say so. Otherwise, how am I supposed to go around if I left a leg for him?”

“This is truly too much. Arrest him!”

Officer Lin roared. However, Elder Su, who has been sitting on the chair stood up and snorted.

“I want to see who dares.”

At that moment!

Ten odd military keeps stopped outside the barbeque store, while men wearing military uniforms walked down from the car with a stern expression and ran in front of Old Man Su and lined up in an orderly manner.

“Report! The guard company has assembled!”

Chapter 47 – They’re All People With A Temper

Elder Su’s stance even shocked Ye Zichen, who then looked at the people around Elder Su.

A full guard company!

Could Elder Su be a major person in the military?

Doesn’t that mean Su Yan is a powerful third-generation?

The officers that had come to arrest Ye Zichen also stopped. The military and police were two different departments, but they were an entire guard company. More importantly, they also had more people.

“Captain, are we still arresting him?”

“Yes.”

Officer Lin frowned. No wonder this brat was so cocky, he actually had connections in the military.

If anyone had come this time, then they might truly allow him to leave.

However, he was unfortunate, and met her.

“Guard company!”

“Yes!”

The guard company with several tens of people stood straight. Old Man Su also chuckled.

“The little fellow over there did it to save me, this old man. Do you understand the rest?”

With that, Old Man Su waved and walked to the side.

“Guard company. Everyone, execute the mission!”

The several tens of people from the guard company surrounded Officer Lin and the other officers. At the same time, two men holding military rifles stood in front of Ye Zichen.

“Captain...”

“Captain what? Arrest him.”

Officer Lin also got annoyed. Wow, trying to scare her?

She wasn't the type of person to yield. Don't you want to use

force, then let's try.

“I'll permit you to shoot those who resist. I'll carry the burden if there's any issues!”

All of a sudden, they stood off against each other, while being completely annoyed.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen, who was hearing back felt that all of them are people with a temper. The pitch-black barrels pointed at each other. If anyone misfires...

Doesn't that make it his responsibility!

How did it randomly turn into such a huge issue?

Ye Zichen scratched his head and patted the guard company member in front of him.

“Excuse me, I-I want-want to say a few words.”

The man looked towards Elder Su. When he saw Elder Su nod, he moved aside to allow Ye Zichen to walk through.

“Arrest...”

Ka!

The man behind Ye Zichen instantly raised up the gun. This caused Ye Zichen, who was standing in the middle, feel like his head was about to explode.

F*ck you.

Fight by yourself, why are you raising your guns when laozi is in the middle.

Although I have Unbreakable Body, it can't stop hot weapons!

“Nobody move!”

Ye Zichen shouted, then ran in front of Old Man Su, then muttered a few words.

“Lil’ Ye, this...”

“Old man, I know you are doing this for my good. But the country is promoting the cooperation of police and civilian, we can't trouble them, right? What's more, if the news of you, a major person, going against the police with the guard company gets out, it isn't good for you.”

“Alright, but if they trouble you, find me...”

“Sure.”

After dealing with one side, the situation was much easier to solve. The entire guard company returned to Elder Su's side with his indication.

Ye Zichen also ran towards Officer Lin.

“Let's go.”

“Arrest him.”

Even though Ye Zichen solved such a huge problem, Officer Lin did not show a nice expression to him.

The surrounding officers instantly surrounded Ye Zichen and wanted to put cuffs on him.

“What's this. Let's not use handcuffs, I won't be able to run.”

Ye Zichen said as he indicated towards Elder Su with his eye for Officer Lin to see. Officer Lin hesitated for a moment, then said.

“Never mind.”

“I'm also coming with you. This started because of me!”

Seeing that Ye Zichen was about to be brought into the police car,

Su Yan, who was worried about him, also ran over.

Officer Lin glanced at her, then looked at Elder Su's expression, before raising her eyebrows and saying.

“Bring them away together.”

After the police car left, on a table outside the barbeque store that wasn't that far away from the scene.

“Young Master, he was taken away, we...”

“Go back and tell Fu Chengming that we aren't accepting this mission.”

The young man squinted his eyes and finished the glass of beer. The elder opposite him also smiled understandingly.

“True, I can tell that Su Qian cares about that young man a lot. There is no need for us to offend the Su family for the Fu family.”

The young man nodded without denying in. At the same time, Ye Zichen's words surfaced in his mind.

I said that I will break his four limbs. A person has to keep his promise!

“He is an interesting person.”

As Ye Zichen looked at the familiar interrogation room, he couldn't help but shake his head and smile.

It was unknown when it had begun, but he gradually became a frequent guest at the police station.

Slam.

Officer Lin walked in with a cold expression and slammed the notebook onto the table.

“Wait, Officer Lin, why are you so angry.”

Officer Lin sat on the chair without replying. She lifted her head and scanned Ye Zichen's body with an interrogative gaze.

“Name.”

Hearing that, Ye Zichen shook his head and smiled.

“Don't you know what I'm called? You were shouting my name just now at the barbeque store.”

“Don't argue with me. You committed a crime, do you understand?”

“But I helped you out a lot just now, do you understand?” Ye Zichen stood up from the chair, walked in front of the interrogation desk and bent down on it.

“Do you know who the old man was just now. If it wasn’t for me, a little police like you fighting against him would end up on the court martial.”

“Stay away from me.”

Officer Lin lifted her hands and pushed Ye Zichen away.

Just now, there was only a distance of two centimeters between them. Their noses were even about to touch each other.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but gaze at her collar, and revealed a naughty smile.

“Officer Lin is truly busty.”

Slam.

Officer Lin slammed the table, while the huge noise shocked Ye Zichen.

“Woman, what’s with you? Always being so shocking.”

Officer Lin's eyes were filled with coldness as she yelled at Ye Zichen.

“Stay back in your seat.”

Ye Zichen sighed softly, then returned onto his chair. The moment he sat down, Officer Lin spoke up again.

“Say it, why did you maliciously wound him?”

“How did I maliciously wound him?” Ye Zichen opened his eyes wide in franticness and shouted exaggeratedly. “That grandson insulted my fiend first, and even tried to make a move. Can't I teach him a small lesson?”

“Heh, you call that a small lesson? You broke his four limbs,” Officer Lin laughed coldly.

“You don't know who that girl is, right? That was Old Man Su's granddaughter, a true powerful third-generation. Did you not see the guard company? I did it to help him. Otherwise, he would have died.”

Ye Zichen acted like he was thinking for the baldie. Hearing that, the corner of Officer Lin's mouth raised slightly, after which she slammed the table again.

“Stop making excuses with me. I’m telling you, no matter what you say, that was malicious wounding. What’s more, you maliciously wounded him in front of me. I won’t just let this go. Also, for someone like you to fall into my hands, it’s your misfortune!”

It seemed like Ye Zichen had angered Officer Lin quite a bit, as her sizeable chest heaved up and down.

“Officer Lin, the way you said it made it sound like you’re picking on me,” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows slightly. Then, he stood up from the chair with a naughty smile and bent down on Officer Lin’s interrogation table again.

“Are you interested in me?”

Chapter 48 – Liu Jing’s Strangeness

Ye Zichen had a naughty smile as he stared into Officer Lin’s eye without avoiding her gaze.

All of a sudden, a hint of skin attracted his vision. He subconsciously looked down...

Slap.

To be honest, Officer Lin’s slap didn’t hurt Ye Zichen at all.

He touched his cheeks, then returned onto the chair and crossed his legs, while he raised his eyebrows.

“It wasn’t intentional, it was a pure subconscious reaction. To be fair, it’s your fault, since it’s an interrogation, why didn’t you button up your collar?”

“You...”

“You what? Don’t you know that I’m still a university student, and am in the middle of the innocent puberty? Isn’t this clearly forcing me to commit a crime?” Ye Zichen retorted. Then, a naughty smile surfaced on his face. “I get it now, no wonder you come back yourself every time you interrogate me and shut the door so tightly. Do you have ill intentions towards me?”

“Shao Yang!”

Officer Lin was so angry due to Ye Zichen that her lips turned pale, thus, she toared towards outside the door. Not long later, the door to the interrogation room was pushed open and an officer ran in frantically.

“Take him away.”

Shao Yang glanced at Ye Zichen, who crossed his legs like he didn't care, and placed the phone in his hand onto Officer Lin's table.

“Captain, take the call first. Our chief called.”

Officer Lin's expression changed. Last time, Ye Zichen had managed to leave just because she took the call!

This time, he took way too much advantage of her, if she lets him leave...

“Lil' Lin!”

A voice from the phone sounded out. Officer Lin bit her lips, then glared at Ye Zichen fiercely before listening to the call.

“Yes, in my hands!”

“Why?”

“He hurt a person in front of me!”

“Alright, I understand.”

Slam.

After a few simple conversations, Officer Lin furiously hung up and walked in front of Ye Zichen front the interrogation desk.

“I can leave now, right?”

Ye Zichen smiled, then unrulily stretched in front of Officer Lin.

A piercing cold light filled Officer Lin as she said.

“You’re pretty amazing, there’s always someone to help you.”

“How do you know whether I’m amazing? You’ve never tried it,” Ye Zichen smiled playfully, causing Officer Lin to raise her hand in an attempt to hit him.

“Hey, a police officer can’t hit people,” Ye Zichen raised his hands to stop Officer Lin’s action, then walked out of the door with his eyebrows raised.

Right when he was about to go out of the door, he suddenly stopped, swept his gaze over Officer Lin's body, before finally stopping at the place that stood out.

“Don't just develop there, develop your brain as well!”

The, he turned around and waved towards Officer Lin, before leaving the interrogation room at a moderate pace.

Crack.

Officer Lin, who was standing within the interrogation room, clenched her fist. The officer behind shrunk his neck when he saw this and quickly ran out from the interrogation room.

“Ye Zichen, I have truly remembered you.”

When Ye Zichen walked out of the interrogation room, he saw Su Yan waiting outside the entrance to the police station.

Elder Su and the guard company were also beside her. At the same time, there was also a square-faced man that he has never seen before.

The man was expressionless, and clearly not a person that was good at speaking. Ye Zichen felt a very uncomfortable chilling aura from him.

“Lil’ Ye, they didn’t trouble you, right?”

Elder Su was the first to walk up to him, while Su Yan’s expression also relaxed slightly.

Only the square-faced man was still looking at him using a judging gaze.

“Who is this person?”

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth and commented silently, but he still chuckled casually on the surface.

“How would they dare to do anything to me? It’s pretty good when I don’t do anything to them!”

“Ye Zichen, it’s great they you’re fine.”

After Su Yan looked at the expression of the square-faced man a few times, she stepped forward.

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Su Yan increased by 100. Current affability level: 150.

Although a hero saving a beauty was cliché, it was this sort of

cliché plot that was able to capture the hearts of countless beauties.

Su Yan was no exception.

The moment Ye Zichen stood up for her, she felt that all of his negative points before turned good.

“Ye Zichen, right? Thank you for helping my daughter, Su Yan, and my father.”

At this moment, that square-faced man, who hadn't said a word till now, spoke up. However, Ye Zichen was unable to feel that he was being thanked from the tone.

Yet, Ye Zichen did find something else out.

This guy was Su Yan's father!

Ye Zichen felt a bit frantic meeting with his father-in-law so soon!

Ye Zichen smiled embarrassedly, scratched his head and replied humbly, “It's no big deal.”

Su Yan's father did not say anything else to him. He merely reached out his hand to call the car over and signaled Su Yan and Old Man Su to get in.

“Dad, I want to go back to school!”

“Get in the car!”

There was no doubt in Su Yan’s father’s voice. Su Yan bit her lips, then after hesitating for a brief moment, she walked into the car without saying anything against him.

“Ye Zichen, take care.”

Su Yan rolled down the window and shouted towards Ye Zichen right before the car left.

Ye Zichen smiled with a nod, and waved towards Su Yan. However, he smiled wryly in his heart.

That father-in-law seemed hard to deal with!

“Zeze, it seems like your girlfriend’s dad doesn’t think much of you!”

Liu Jing floated down from the sky and smiled playfully. Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at her, then took out his phone to dial Chief Liu’s number.

However, he did not notice that when he flipped to Chief Liu’s number, the expression of Liu Jing, who was in midair, suddenly changed.

“Thank you, Liu-ge.”

Ye Zichen already sent a message to Chief Liu before arriving at the police department.

It was clear that Chief Liu had did something behind the scenes for him to escape the demonic claws of Officer Lin so quickly.

“Welcome, this is a small issue. Even if I didn’t do anything, you would still be fine.”

Ye Zichen clearly knew that Chief Liu was talking about Elder Su, but since Chief Liu had helped, he still needed to thank him.

“Still, thank you, Liu-ge.”

“Don’t be so courteous with Liu-ge. Oh yeah, Liu-ge has a small request.”

“What is it?”

“Come over to Liu-ge’s home when you have time. My wife has some troubles, and recently her body isn’t so great, so I wanted to ask you to come and have a look.”

“No problem.”

After Chief Liu ended the call, Ye Zichen returned the phone to his pocket.

When he lifted his head, he saw that Liu Jing's expression as very weird.

“Hey, what are you thinking about?”

Hearing that, Liu Jing shuddered, and replied with a natural smile on her face.

“Nothing, who were you calling just now?”

“A friend, he's kind of an old bro,” Ye Zichen chuckled.

“Then what did you guys talk about?” After saying this, Liu Jing's eyes flashed with a clear interest.

“Just a few simple words, and I thanked him. The old bro told me that his wife's condition isn't so good, then asked me to go and have a look when I have time,” Ye Zichen didn't think so much into it. He merely told her about the contents of the call. When he finished speaking, he raised his eyebrows, “I've never seen you get so interested before, why are you so mindful of it this time?”

“Nothing, nothing. Then go and have a look sooner rather than later. No matter what, Chief Liu helped you out.”

“We’ll see when we have time.”

Ye Zichen shrugged. He doesn’t possess any medical skills, nor is he a psychologist. He only saves people purely with the Great Recovery Pills he has.

Old Lord Taishang doesn’t appear often. The Great Recovery Pills were all from the salaries of the heavenly soldiers.

A day in heaven was a year on earth.

God knows when Old Lord Taishang will give out Great Recovery Pills again, and Ye Zichen still had to save some for him and his mother in case of emergencies!

Chapter 49 – The Great Sage’s Life-Saving Monkey Hair

Liu Jing’s expression turned more and more unnatural. She stared closely at Ye Zichen for a few moments.

Then, she reminded him of treating the issue properly before returning into the Dragon Eye.

Ye Zichen only felt that Liu Jing was a bit weird, but he didn’t think too much into it.

At the same time, with in Bingcheng’s Xiao family home.

“Dad, your body condition does not allow you to mess around like this.”

Su Qihu frowned as he sat on the sofa, while looking at Elder Su, who was grabbing the gourd tightly.

“I know my body the best. There is only benefits and no drawbacks for me to drink this wine.”

“You can’t be like this...”

“Stop bullshitting, just who’s the father here!”

Old Man Su straightened his back, causing Su Qihu to instantly give up and shrug.

“Dad, I’m doing this for your own good.”

“Heh, stop saying useless stuff with this old man. I must keep the monkey wine.”

Su Qihu could only show a helpless expression as he looked at Elder Su, who was not backing down. After a long while he finally let out a long sigh and said.

“Alright, I’ll listen to you. But you definitely cannot be greedy. You truly can’t drink too much wine with your body.”

Seeing that Su Qihu gave in, Elder Su showed a satisfied smile and nodded.

“This old man knows this. I still want to live to the day that my darling granddaughter gets married!”

Su Qihu also nodded slightly. At this moment, Old Man Su put the gourd to the side, then leaned forward.

“What do you think about that lad?”

“Which one?” Su Qihu asked in confusion.

“The one that saved Lil’ Yan and I today,” Old Man Su reminded.

“Nothing special,” Su Qihu shook his head. When he saw Old Man Su’s dark expression, he momentarily blanked and said, “Dad, you can’t be wanting Su Yan to go out with that sort of person, right? I’m telling you. I definitely will not agree!”

“Why are you not agreeing, Lil’ Ye is a great kid. What? Do you want to use Lil’ Yan in a political marriage?”

Old Man Su glared, Su Qihu did not intend to give in at all.

“Dad, this is definitely impossible. Even if I don’t use Lil’ Yan in a political marriage, I won’t put her in the hands of those sort of people.”

“That means you want to?”

“Don’t care about whether I want to or not. I said no, so it’s no!”

With that, Su Qihu turned around and walked outside.

Su Yan walked down from the second floor, she had heard Elder Su and Su Qihu’s entire conversation.

“Grandpa, will my dad truly use me for a political marriage? I don’t want to. I don’t want to live the kind of life where a single word makes me spend the rest of my life with someone I’ve never

even met.”

Elder Su patted her head when he saw his darling granddaughter’s sad eyes.

“Grandpa will not let you become a sacrifice. What’s more, your dad won’t do that sort of thing.”

“But what he said just now...”

“He was just mad at me,” Old Man Su smiled. Then he looked at the green gourd on the side, “Since you don’t want a political marriage, what do you think about being with Lil’ Ye?”

“I...” Su Yan hesitated for a long time, then murmured. “I don’t dislike him.”

“Not disliking is liking,” Old Man Su chuckled and picked up the green gourd. “Alright, go back and rest. Just leave the rest of the stuff for grandpa to handle.”

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen was woken up from his sweet dream by the sound of WeChat. He blurrily found his phone.

Ever since he had brought Liu Jing, this little ghost girl back, she would wake him up at seven o'clock sharp every day.

She was even more accurate than an alarm.

For once Liu Jing didn't wake him, his phone, his phone just had to ring.

He picked up his phone and unlocked the screen.

F*ck, no wonder Liu Jing didn't call him yet, it's only f*cking six thirty.

Who the hell sends him a message so early in the morning.

Ye Zichen, who was still sleepy, looked at his phone...

"You finally live, my great sage."

All of a sudden, he was completely devoid of sleepiness.

Ye Zichen gulped and sat up from the bed and opened the chat with the Great Sage.

Monkey King: Haha, I've returned!

Monkey King: This trip truly tired I, Old Sun, out.

Tired out?

He went to work?

Ye Zichen thought about it a while, then sent a message in a testing manner.

“Great Sage, where did you go to work?”

Dingdong.

Instant reply!

Monkey King: You should also know that us deities are not like mortals. Our lives are extremely long. Recently, the Heavenly Court has been a bit crowded, that old brat, the Jade Emperor, told I, Old Sun, to clean up the barbaric places and expand our land.

So he went to take over territories.

Ye Zichen smiled understandingly, then started chatting with him.

Ye Zichen: Who went to expand the land? I saw that none of the celestial friends seemed to have gone.

Monkey King: He, there's no need for that many people to clean up the barbaric lands. I, Old Sun, with a Jingu Bang is enough. Oh yeah, Erlang Shen wanted to steal Old Sun's job, and so I beat him up.

Ugh.

No wonder Erlang Shen didn't take the initiative to find him recently, it seems like he got beaten by the monkey king, so he had to tend to his wounds.

However, that Erlang Shen was his sworn brother, so he did feel a bit bad.

Yet, in Ye Zichen's heart, he still wanted to become sworn brothers with the Great Sage.

He was definitely the number one existence in the Heavenly Court since he could beat up Erlang Shen!

He definitely had to get on good terms with that person.

Ye Zichen rubbed his hands and looked around the room. He noticed that there was a cup noodle that Zhu Yubai had left from when he was playing games the previous day.

Scan.

Send.

Dingdong.

Monkey King received your red packet.

Monkey King: Hehe, what treasure is this now?

Ye Zichen: This is something that this little deity received in a secret location. Since the Great Sage has been troubled having to fight in the barbaric lands, this little deity doesn't have much to give to Great Sage. Thus, I can only use a cup noodle to express my thoughts.

Monkey King: Cup noodles?

Ye Zichen's heart leaped.

He actually accidentally said the name out. But no worries, he could save it.

Ye Zichen: This is the name this little deity had given it. It is called cup noodle...

Ye Zichen blabbered a bunch of stuff to the Monkey King. He was clear about the monkey's personality, this sort of knowledge was like Xuanzang reading scriptures.

Monkey King: Alright, just tell Old Sun how to eat it.

Ye Zichen: Soak it in water.

Monkey King: Alright, Old Sun understands.

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Monkey King increased by 5. Current intimacy level: 175. It is 25 away from Trusted.

The Intimacy Level increased again.

Although the increase was a bit little this time, it was still better than nothing.

Not long later, the Monkey King replied with an awkward emoji.

Monkey King: I, Old Sun, doesn't have anything nice on hand to give you.

Ye Zichen: No worries, it's fine with the Great Sage's intention.

Monkey King: That's no good. I, Old Sun, is not that kind of person that likes to take advantage of people.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen couldn't help but twitch his mouth. Did the Great Sage not take much advantage of people in Journey to the West?

He would just pocket whatever nice stuff he saw. The people at the Heavenly Court were unable to do anything about it.

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen momentarily blanked, he didn't think that the Great Sage really would send something.

He clicked open the red packet.

You received Monkey King's red packet.

Life-Saving Monkey Hair x1

Chapter 50 – First Meeting

Life-Saving Monkey Hair

What the hell was this?

Monkey King: This Monkey Hair can save your life once. Remember, don't use it until you have no other choice.

Ye Zichen finally reacted when he saw the Great Sage's message.

Just how did the Journey to the West cartoon song go? A single monkey hair could create ten thousand monkeys!

Could it be that hair?

If it's like that, then it's a huge present.

Ye Zichen: Thank you, Great Sage.

Monkey King: We're bros, no need to be so courteous. Alright, I, Old Sun, has to go and have a taste of this treasure. Ttyl.

Then, the Monkey King disappeared. Meanwhile, Ye Zichen clicked open the Treasure Chest to see its description.

Monkey Hair: One of the Great Sage's three Life-Saving Monkey

Hairs, there is miraculous power inside. The actual usage is unknown, the method of usage is unknown.

It really f*cking is!

Gulp.

Ye Zichen gulped, then sneakily took the Monkey Hair out.

The Monkey Hair was a light-yellow color. It was kind of the same with a person's body hair. If a sudden gust of wind blew in at that moment, he really would lose it.

Just as he was about to put the Monkey Hair back into the Treasure Chest, the little ghost girl, Liu Jing, suddenly floated out from somewhere.

“What!”

This truly scared Ye Zichen, resulting in his hand shaking as he raised his head.

“Can you not scare people like that, you'll scare them to death.”

“That's good, then you can be with me.”

A hint of shyness flashed across Liu Jing's eye when she said this.

However, Ye Zichen ignored her and set his gaze back onto his hand.

The Monkey Hair was gone!

“My Monkey Hair!”

Ye Zichen said anxiously.

“What Monkey Hair,” Liu Jing had a dumb and moe look on her face. Ye Zichen raised his hands and pointed at her a few times, but only slapped his thighs out of anger in the end.

Life-Saving Monkey Hair, the Life-Saving Monkey Hair that the Great Sage gave him.

It was gone.

Ye Zichen stared at his empty hands dumbly. He really wanted to slap himself.

What the heck did he take it out for? That’s great now, it was completely gone.

Ye Zichen had wanted to look for it, but gave up in the end.

Don’t talk about using the Fiery Eyes of Truth, even if there was a

microscope, it would be hair to find a piece of hair like that when its fallen onto the floor.

“Liu Jing...”

Ye Zichen pointed at Liu Jing for a long while without saying anything. He can't exactly get mad at her, this girl didn't do it on purpose.

If he had to blame anyone, he just had to blame his crappy luck.

Ye Zichen let out a long sigh, then directly covered his head with the blanket to sleep.

“Don't sleep. Do you have time today?”

“No!”

“Then when are you going to have a look at Chief Liu's wife?”

“None of your business.”

Ye Zichen covered his head with his blanket and completely ignored Liu Jing, who continued to make a ruckus outside.

F*ck, the Life-Saving Monkey Hair was just gone like that.

However, the moment he covered himself with the blanket, a light-yellow hair suddenly appeared on his arm, completely hidden within all the other hairs.

After finishing a day of lessons, Ye Zichen walked out of the classroom, while dragging his tired body along.

The ghost girl, Liu Jing, floated in front of him, just wandering around as she pouted without saying anything.

“Can you stop annoying me?”

Ye Zichen stopped. Quite a few students around him heard his words and looked over.

However, when they saw the empty space in front of him, they all revealed a confused expression.

After seeing everyone's gaze, Ye Zichen rubbed his hair and continued to walk out. However, the ghost girl, Liu Jing, floated over with a pout once again.

“Hey, have you considered what I told you this morning?”

Ye Zichen ignored her and walked towards the sports field. Liu Jing followed closely behind him and shouted.

“Are you listening or not?”

Ye Zichen continued to walk forward.

“Stand still!” Liu Jing roared at Ye Zichen due to getting a bit angry.

Ye Zichen stopped, then looked at Liu Jing with a helpless gaze, while sighing.

“Just what do you want.”

Liu Jing had been really weird recently, she had continuously pestered him to go and treat Chief Liu’s wife.

He has never seen her so warm-hearted before!

“I want you to treat Chief Liu’s wife.”

See? Again.

Ye Zichen pretty much listened to this every day, it was to the point that his head was about to explode.

“Why are you so worried about Chief Liu’s wife’s sickness? Is she your relative!?”

“I’m helping you do some good deeds, do you understand?” Liu

Jing rolled her eyes and put her hands on her waist. “If someone like you, who does do anything proper and only screw girls over every day, doesn’t do more good deeds, you’ll end up in hell.”

“Can you say something nicer?”

Ye Zichen’s expression darkened, he was only twenty something. Liu Jing made it sound like he was about to die.

“I don’t care, hurry up and treat Chief Liu’s wife.”

Just as Ye Zichen and Liu Jing were arguing intensely, a white-haired and youthful looking elder appeared in front of Ye Zichen.

“You are Mr. Ye Zichen, right?”

The old man, who suddenly appeared, actually knew him. This caused Ye Zichen to momentarily blank out and nodded.

“Yes, why do you know me?”

The elder laughed softly, then pointed behind him.

There was a young man, whose hair had been dyed gray, at the place he pointed towards. The young man even waved towards Ye Zichen when he saw that Ye Zichen had looked his way.

“What do you mean?”

“Our family’s young master wants to get to know you,” The young man smiled slightly, and made a “please” gesture.

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth and raised his eyebrow.

“I don’t want to know your family’s young master.”

With that, Ye Zichen wanted to leave.

“Mr. Ye, if you’re going to be like that, this old man will be very troubled,” the elder raised his arm to stop Ye Zichen.

“What, this is a university. Do you want to fight me here? Even if you do, you might not be able to match me, old man.”

Ever since he ate the Body Enhancing Pill and got the secret scripture of the Unbreakable Body, Ye Zichen no longer acted cowardly when it came to fighting.

If this old man really wanted to fight him, then he didn’t mind trying.

Even when the school investigates, Ye Zichen can say that this old man was causing trouble for him.

However...

“Mr. Ye, you are definitely unable to be defeated by this old man. But, have you thought about your family?”

Ye Zichen’s expression tensed, as he grabbed the elder’s collar.

“What do you mean?”

“Mr. Ye, don’t worry, this old man is just reminding you in good well. The mansion your mother, Ye Rong, lives in, seems to be at Riverside New Town!”

Crack.

Ye Zichen clenched his fist and stared at the old man for a long while, then turned around to look at the young man, who was not far away.

The young man waved towards him with a smile once again. After a long while, Ye Zichen took a deep breath, then released the elder and walked towards the young man, who was not far away.

“Mr. Ye.”

The young man smiled kindly and raised his hand.

Ye Zichen hit his hand away, while his eyes were filled with anger.

“Your action seems a bit too despicable.”

“What is Mr. Ye saying. I just want to get to know you.”

The young man continued to maintain his faint smile. Ye Zichen raised his hand picked the young man up by his collar.

“I’m telling you, come at me if there’s anything. If you dare to touch even a hair on my mother, I will make you regret coming to this world.”

Bang.

Ye Zichen chucked the young man onto the school’s grass, then walked towards the sports field without turning back.

Chapter 51 – Dog Father

The young man with smoke color hair flattened his wrinkled clothes and smiled meaningfully at Ye Zichen's back, then nodded.

“Young Master, are you okay!?”

The elder seemed to have walked rather slowly, but his speed was very quick. He walked the distance of ten-odd meters in a few steps.

“How could I not be?”

The corner of the young man's mouth raised, while a hint of dissatisfaction flashed across the elder's eyes.

“That brat truly did not appreciate your kindness.”

“Most powerful people would of course have a bit of pride.”

The young man indicated the elder to not mind Ye Zichen's attitude and smiled faintly.

“Elder Hua, you might not know, but there's a virgin ghost girl that had died before her time beside Ye Zichen.”

Hearing that, Elder Hua momentarily blanked out, then laughed happily.

“He deserves it. Virgin ghost girls specifically take male yang auras from men. No, wait, Young Master, you said one that died before her time?”

The young man nodded slightly and scratched his nose.

“Most importantly, that young man seems to be able to see this virgin ghost girl and can even communicate with her.”

Elder Hua’s expression suddenly changed, while his moving lips uttered not a sound.

After a long time, he asked in a testing manner.

“Could he have opened the Heaven’s Eye?”

“I’m not sure whether he actually did or not, but this person isn’t normal. It seems like he might be the same as our Gu family, and is from that place,” the young man shook his head smiled lightly, then left.

The elder immediately followed him. When they left, people would be able to notice that...

The grass they stepped on did not show any signs of being trampled.

After arriving at the Ye family mansion, Ye Zichen sat outside on the stone chair in the courtyard without saying anything.

He clenched his fist tightly. He just couldn't understand why someone would set their eyes on him and even affect his family.

“Zichen, have some fruits.”

and chit-chatted with her. However, he continued to think about possible countermeasures in his heart.

If he specifically looked for bodyguards, Ye Rong would definitely worry, thus, it would cause the opposite effect. Most importantly, normal bodyguards might not be able to match up to those people.

At that moment, Lil' White raised its proud head and walked out of the mansion. When it saw Ye Zichen, it laid beside Ye Rong with a tsundere look.

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen's eyes brightened.

Wouldn't Lil' White work just fine?

No matter what, that guy is a dog from the Heavenly Court, it just might have some special abilities.

“Lil' White, come over.”

Ye Zichen squatted in front of Lil' White and clapped his hands. Lil' White looked at him in disdain and ignored him.

F*ck, this damn dog.

You're not coming to me? Alright, then I'll go over.

Ye Zichen walked in front of Lil' White in a few steps and lifted it by the neck.

“Mom, I'll play a bit with Lil' White.”

“Go.”

Ye Rong smiled warmly in response.

Dong.

Ye Zichen casually chucked Lil' White onto the gravel road outside the courtyard. Lil' White agilely flipped around and landed stably on the ground.

After that, it raised its head in a tsundere-like manner and tilted its head in disdain.

“This dog is so interesting.”

Liu Jing giggled in midair. Hearing that, Lil' White lifted its head and bared its fangs towards her.

“It can see me?”

Liu Jing momentarily blanked. On the other hand, although Ye Zichen was rather surprised, it wasn't as if he couldn't understand.

Anything was possible for a species from the Heavenly Court.

Lil' White once again nodded its head in a tsundere-like manner once again. It seemed like it could even hear Liu Jing's words.

Liu Jing, who was in the air, instantly became interested in Lil' White. She came down from the sky and squatted in front of Lil' White in an attempt to pat it.

Umu... Woof, woof...

“You really can see me.”

Seeing that Lil' White didn't want to let her touch it, Liu Jing retracted her hands and looked at it with a smile.

Lil' White raised its paws and started to draw circles on the ground, causing Ye Zichen to slap its head.

“Stop getting pretentious with us, laozi has business with you.”

Woof, woof...

Lil' White became angry, a mere mortal actually dared to hit this celestial dog's prideful head.

It immediately leaped up towards Ye Zichen's head.

Smack.

It was met with another hand.

This time, Lil' White became smarter, it merely bared its fangs at Ye Zichen before walking away towards the courtyard.

A smart dog doesn't mind taking temporary losses, it is too young right now, when it grows up...

However, what it doesn't know was that a poodle like it can't grow much larger.

“Did I let you leave?”

Ye Zichen yanked it back by the tail and raised his eyebrows towards it.

“Lil’ White, actually I have something to request of you.”

Lil’ White instantly glared and bared its fangs towards Ye Zichen, before starting to bark.

It seemed like it was saying, you bully me even though you have something to request of me!

Ye Zichen chuckled, then reached out to touch Lil’ White’s head. Lil’ White instantly tried to bite him, but it was met with another slap.

“Stop getting pretentious with me. I’m telling you, you can’t beat me.”

Umu,,,

Lil’ White wagged its tail and lowered its proud head.

Seeing that it submitted, Ye Zichen started to get into business.

“You’re a dog from the Heavenly Court, do you have any special abilities?”

It wagged its tail and nodded.

“Do you, or do you not?”

It wagged its tail and nodded!

“Do you believe that I’ll beat you up.”

Ye Zichen raised his hand as if he was going to hit it. Lil’ White immediately looked towards Liu Jing.

“I know what Lil’ White is saying.”

Liu Jing immediately stopped Ye Zichen, causing him to look at her in confusion.

“You know?”

“Yeah. I don’t know why either!”

“Then what did it say?”

“Lil’ White said to me that as a dog from the Heavenly Court, he naturally has special powers, but he’s still too young, so he doesn’t know how to do anything except getting pretentious.”

“Then what do I need you for,” Ye Zichen swore loudly in anger. This damn dog is truly strange, he pretends like he’s so fierce all the time, but he only knows how to be pretentious.

Woof, woof...

“What did he say now?” Ye Zichen turned his head towards Liu Jing.

“He said that when he grows up, he’ll become amazing, even normal heavenly soldiers would not be able to beat him,” Liu Jing translated.

Ye Ziichen’s expression tensed. Even heavenly soldiers could not defeat it, that’s pretty strong.

Although he didn’t know just how strong heavenly soldiers were, since they were people from the Heavenly Court, then they would be people that mortals cannot defeat.

The dog was even stronger than heavenly soldiers, then wouldn’t it be invincible in this lower realm.

“How can you grow up!” Ye Zichen said once again.

Woof, woof...

“He said that he can’t absorb any energy eating the stuff from here, so he can’t grow at all. It would be good if you can get something from the Heavenly Court.”

“No problem!”

Ye Zichen's eyes brightened, doesn't he just want the food from the Heavenly Court.

Just how simple is that.

Don't forget, his sworn brother is a major dog owner in the Heavenly Court.

Woof, woof...

"What did he say now?"

"He said you're boasting."

Liu Jing couldn't help but resist laughing as she translated it, but her heart was filled with surprise.

This dog could see her, and she could understand what this dog was saying. Most importantly, this dog and Ye Zichen was actually talking about stuff like the Heavenly Court...

All of a sudden, she remembered the chat group that Ye Zichen showed her.

Were they really a bunch of deities?

Ye Zichen also got annoyed since he was looked down upon by a dog.

“Little bastard, wait until laozi brings you food from the Heavenly Court, when that happens...”

Woof, woof!

“What did he say now?”

“He said that if you can get it, then it would be fine even if he admits you as his father,” Liu Jing translated honestly.

Chapter 52 – Hao Wen Got Out Of Prison

Ye Zichen expressed his opinion with his reply. He didn't want to become a dog father, nor did he want a dog son like Lil' White.

Ye Zichen reached out his hand to pat Lil' White's head, then chuckled.

“Don't try to get close with laozi, laozi will definitely get you some food that the Howling Celestial Dog eats. Just work properly for laozi when that happens.”

Lil' White's head instantly bobbed up and down like he was drumming.

Ye Zichen did not need Liu Jing to translate in order to understand that Lil' White had agreed.

Ye Zichen opened his friend list in WeChat and chose to talk to Erlang Shen. Of course he wouldn't directly go and find the Howling Celestial Dog, dog only knows what his woofs meant.

“Bro.”

Ye Zichen greeted him intimately, and added three emojis with a smoking soldier.

Dingdong.

Approximately five minutes later, a “1” appeared on Erlang Shen’s profile pic.

Erlang Shen: What happened?

Although it was just a text message, Ye Zichen could still feel the depression of this sworn brother.

Ye Zichen: Why so depressed?

Erlang Shen: Don’t mention it, I’m too embarrassed to talk about it.

Ye Zichen instantly understood. The Great Sage had told him before that he had beaten Erlang Shen up.

It seemed like the Great Sage wasn’t kidding about it.

Due to Erlang Shen’s poor mood, all of a sudden, Ye Zichen was unsure of how he should ask Erlang Shen for the dog food.

What he didn’t expect was that Erlang Shen was rather understanding, and directly got to the point.

Erlang Shen: Bro, you must have contacted me for some business, right?

Ye Zichen: There really is something <insert a row of awkward emojis>

Erlang Shen: If there's anything, just say it. As long as I can do it, I will definitely do it properly for you.

This was the value of Trusted. The other person would have absolute trust in him.

Ye Zichen licked his lips. He wasn't the kind of person who liked to bullshit, so he got straight to the point.

Ye Zichen: Do you remember the Howling Celestial Dog sending a few dogs in red packets a while ago?

Erlang Shen: That did happen.

Ye Zichen: I got one back then. However, you know that I'm in a secret location rightnow, there isn't much that a dog can eat here. Ever since it followed me, it has been eating terrible food, so it thinned down a lot.

Erlang Shen: Understood.

Dingdong.

Without saying anything else, the red packet arrived.

You received Erlang Shen's red packet.

Heavenly Court Dog Food x5.

Ye Zichen opened WeChat's Treasure Chest and clicked on the Heavenly Court Dog Food and chose to withdraw one.

A shining bone fell onto the gravel road.

Woof, woof...

Lil' White revealed an excited expression and leapt towards that bone with a howl.

"I... Ye Zichen, how did you do it?"

Liu Jing, who had been floating in midair opened her eyes wide, that bone appeared so suddenly, it was like a magic trick.

Especially since she had watched Ye Zichen and Erlang Shen chat and saw him open the WeChat Treasure Chest.

In her time, WeChat didn't seem to have that function.

"I told you already, big bro knows people from the Heavenly Court. Yet, you don't believe him."

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at her, this could be said to be his most private secret. He didn't even tell Ye Rong.

The main reason that he could let Liu Jing know without any worries was because she was a ghost girl, no one could talk to her aside from him.

There was another reason, which was – she was just too cute.

Ye Zichen returned to the chat with Erlang Shen with an intent to thank him, but saw a message.

Erlang Shen: I'm running rather short recently, it wasn't much dog food, but it should last a while. When I get my salary, I'll send more to brother.

He wasn't lying to Ye Zichen, the first day he joined the WeChat group, he saw this fellow complaining about being poor.

Erlang Shen definitely had an important position in the Heavenly Court, he was definitely something like an upper class.

But he actually said that he was running short.

Ye Zichen smiled slightly.

It seems like Landlord can be started in the Heavenly Court very

soon!

Thinking of that, Ye Zichen directly sent a message to Erlang Shen.

Ye Zichen: Bro, don't worry, I'll teach you a way to earn money after a while. I'll definitely let you earn everything back.

The moment he sent this, Erlang Shen pretty much replied instantly.

Erlang Shen: Then tell me directly, why do you have to wait.

Ye Zichen: The time is not right.

Ye Zichen smiled badly and ignored Erlang Shen's question, as he stuffed his phone into his pocket.

Mahjong, Landlord, Dice...

These were things he will definitely advertise in the Heavenly Court, but he needed to maximize their benefits.

Just what could he earn if he handed it out easily.

He needed to get them interested in it, and then tell them when the time is ripe...

The effects of it would definitely double that way.

When Ye Zichen looked towards Lil' White, he saw that Lil' White had already finished the bone.

Ye Zichen saw that he was sleeping soundly on the floor, but he could feel that the aura around Lil' White was gradually rising.

It seemed like he was absorbing that bone.

As the number one dog in the Heavenly Court, the Howling Celestial Dog definitely ate high-class things. It was natural for a poodle like Lil' White, who was even eliminated in a contest, to need to absorb it for a while after eating it.

Right now, what Ye Zichen needed to do was wait for Lil' White to wake up.

Three days later.

During the three days, Ye Zichen would go to the mansion the moment he gets out of class.

One of the reasons was because he was worried about Ye Rong's safety. The second was because he was concerned with Lil' White's situation.

During this period of time, Ye Rong had wanted to bring Lil' White to the vet for a checkup multiple times, but Ye Zichen had been able to stop all her attempts.

“Zichen, Lil' White has just been sleeping every day, do we really not need to bring it to see the vet?”

Ye Rong looked at Lil' White, who was laying in his own bed, and frowned a little.

Ye Zichen was also worried.

Lil' White was his chip to protect Ye Rong, if something happened to him, Ye Zichen really didn't know what to do.

It was fortunate that Ye Zichen could feel Lil' White's situation, and he didn't seem like he was in danger.

Buzz.

The phone in his pocket rang. When Ye Zichen took a look at the caller ID, the corner of his mouth raised slightly. Then, he said a few words to Ye Rong before leaving from the mansion.

“What is it, you miss me?”

The person that called him was Xiao Yumei, ever since she confirmed her lovers relationship with Ye Zichen, Ye Zichen's

manner of speaking towards her turned much more affable.

“Heh, I thought you forgot about me. You actually didn’t contact me in so long.”

“Ugh...”

Ye Zichen revealed a troubled expression. It was indeed his fault for not contacting Xiao Yumei, and there was no getting out of it.

Ye Zichen didn’t speak for a long while, as he held the phone. At that moment, Xiao Yumei’s laughter rang out from the phone, while she comforted him.

“Alright now, I know you’re busy. I don’t blame you. Originally, I didn’t want to disturb you, but...”

Xiao Yumei wanted to speak, but then stopped herself. Ye Zichen could tell from her tone that she definitely had something very important to tell him.

“But what?”

“Hao Wen came out,” Xiao Yumei said with a solemn tone. However, she might have been scared of Ye Zichen getting worried, so she immediately added, “He didn’t come and cause any trouble for me.”

“What!”

Ye Zichen’s expression tensed, “Where are you, I’ll immediately come and see you.”

Chapter 53 – Zichen-Gege

Ye Zichen hurried over to Xiao Yumei's place with the quickest speed possible. After he got a simple understanding of the situation, he immediately called Xiao Hai.

The situation of Hao Wen actually coming out of prison was something that Xiao Hai had not expected.

Thus, they decided to meet up at a coffee shop near Xiao Yumei's jewelry store.

“Zichen, don't worry. Hao Wen doesn't dare to do anything to me.”

Xiao Yumei smiled gently, calming Ye Zichen's anxious heart.

Ye Zichen smiled, but the solemnity in his eyes did not disperse.

A person with nothing to lose isn't scared of anything. If someone like Hao Wen who had nothing left really does go mad, nobody would know what sort of outrageous thing he might do.

What's more, Xiao Hai had collected infinite evidence that should have caused him to stay in prison forever. Yet, he actually was released barely any time later.

That clearly meant that a huge power was supporting him.

“Lil’ Ye.”

At that moment, Xiao Hai also hurried over with a tense expression. Ye Zichen quickly stood up from the chair and greeted him.

“Hai-ge, are there any hints?”

Xiao Hai patted his shoulders with a serious expression, “Sit down and we’ll talk.”

There were quite a lot of people in the coffee shop, so Ye Zichen had specifically found a corner to sit down.

“When you called me just now to tell me that Hao Wen had come out of prison, I was also very shocked. After that, I used my contacts to gain an understanding of the situation, and the result I came to was that... Hao Wen has some sort of power backing him.”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, it really was as he expected. However, this wasn’t important, the most important thing was whether it was possible to put Hao Wen back in there again.

After explaining his thoughts, Xiao Hai shook his head with an apologetic smile.

“Lil’ Ye, don’t blame Hai-ge. Our Xiao family is just a business

family. Furthermore, our family business is not that huge. There are levels where the Xiao family cannot reach into.”

Xiao Hai’s meaning was very clear. The power behind Hao Wen was not one that their Xiao family could compare to.

That caused Ye Zichen’s heart to sink. Xiao Hai was someone of the highest class from the people he knew.

Even Xiao Hai couldn’t do anything.

Ye Zichen sighed, then chuckled lightly after looking at Xiao Hai’s apologetic expression.

“Hai-ge doesn’t have to feel sorry. Even if Hao Wen did come out, he wouldn’t dare to make any move recently. I’ll take the appropriate measures for whatever situation comes up. There’s no way that he dares to try anything.”

“Call me any time if you need any help. As long as Hai-ge can do it, I’ll do it for you.”

“Then, thank you, Hai-ge.”

Then, Xiao Hai left. The boss of such a corporation like him must have a lot of things to handle in one day. The fact that he could find time to meet Ye Zichen personally is giving Ye Zichen more than enough face.

After drinking all the coffee in the cup in one gulp, Xiao Yumei held Ye Zichen's hand with a smile.

“Don't worry, it'll be fine.”

The warmth from the back of his hand caused Ye Zichen's tensed eyebrows to gradually loosen. He turned his hand around and held Xiao Yumei's hand, then smiled.

“Where are we going later?”

“Tiantian's birthday is the day after tomorrow, I want to go and buy her a birthday present.”

Xiao Yumei would reveal a happy smile unconsciously whenever Tiantian is mentioned. Immediately after that, she looked at Ye Zichen and asked with a slight hesitation, “Do you have time later? How about we go together?”

“Sure!”

Ye Zichen really liked the cutie, Tiantian. The “Daddy” she had shouted when they first meet had stunned him.

What he didn't expect was that the fake father was truly about to get promoted to a real dad.

It seemed like this was fate. Perhaps, this was the doing that that old brat's, Yue Lao, doing.

Yue Lao cries.

I'm not taking the blame for this!

Xia Keke held a Chanel Flap Bag in the Chanel Store on the fourth floor of Business Plaza.

“Miss, you have good taste, that is the best-selling bag in our store.”

The clerk introduced the purse passionately. If she could sell this bag, then she would get quite a bit of commission as well.

From the look of Xia Keke, she didn't seem like the type of person that couldn't afford it either.

“Really?”

Xia Keke's eyes brightened, but then she noticed the price.

24580.

“So expensive.”

Xia Keke stuck out her tongue, then put the bag back. Seeing that this deal was about to be done for, the clerk quickly used her ultimate line.

“Beauty, this is the last Chanel Classic Flap Bag in caviar leather. What’s more, this is a limited edition one, if you miss it, then that really is it.”

“Mhmm...”

Xia Keke pouted. Although she was reluctant to part with it, she truly didn’t have that much money.

“Keke, since you like this bag, I’ll buy it for you?”

Jing Wan walked over from the side. Girls always have friends with them when they go shopping. This time, it was Jing Wan that had invited Xia Keke out.

“No need, never mind.”

Xia Keke shook her head, the reluctantly looked away from the bag and prepared to walk out of the store.

At that very moment, her dimmed eyes brightened once again. She romped out of the store like an excited bunny.

Ye Zichen was walking around Business Plaza by himself. When

they were coming over, Xiao Yumei had received a call from the manager in her shop, so she had returned.

However, she did leave Ye Zichen with a difficult mission.

Picking out a present.

This truly troubled Ye Zichen. He hadn't known Tiantian for a long time, so he didn't know what exactly she would like.

“Zichen-gege!”

A coquettish voice sounded out. Immediately after that, Ye Zichen felt someone grab his arm.

“Xia Keke.”

He completely blanked out when he saw Xia Keke hugging his arm.

He looked at her with a completely confused expression and thought back to the coquettish voice just now.

Goosebumps immediately rose up all over him.

“Keke.”

When Liu Jing, who was floating in the air, saw Xia Keke, she called out softly.

Ye Zichen sighed in his heart, then frowned towards Xia Keke after giving Liu Jing a comforting look.

“What are you doing? Let go of me!”

“Nooo...” Xia Keke stretched out her reply like a child and held Ye Zichen’s arm tightly.

What made Ye Zichen even more speechless was that Xia Keke actually started rubbing all over his arm.

“Hurry up and let go of me?”

This time, Ye Zichen’s words kind of went against his thoughts. To be honest, he did rather enjoy it when Xia Keke started to rub herself all over his arm.

However, due to Liu Jing, who was above him, he could only pretend to be a gentleman.

“I’m not letting go, just not letting go.”

After that, not only did Xia Keke not let go, she did it even more.

Ye Zichen was beyond thrilled. However, he managed to maintain the annoyed look on his face.

“What exactly do you want?”

“Zichen-gege, come with me.”

Xia Keke yanked Ye Zichen’s arm to the Chanel store and pointed at the bag she looked at just a second ago, then said with a cute look.

“Zichen-gege, how about buying this bag for me?”

Chapter 54 – The Script Shouldn't Be Like This!

Ploy!

This was definitely a ploy!

At the beginning, Ye Zichen was rather confused why Xia Keke became so clingy all of a sudden.

Even if they were connected by the marriage string, their affability level was only 10. Such intimate actions were impossible.

“No wonder.”

Playfulness filled Ye Zichen's eyes, while Xia Keke smiled idiotically while maintaining her pout and looking innocently at him.

“You want me to buy the bag for you?”

Jing Wan and the clerk from earlier also walked over. Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and smiled towards Jing Wan.

“Jing Wan the major streamer is also here, you two together?”

“I invited Keke to come with me.”

Jing Wan smiled warmly. Even though Ye Zichen had attacked and nearly shattered her dreams at the cold drinks shop, she still didn't give up on them.

Furthermore, she did not give up on the idea of inviting Ye Zichen to her team either.

“Isn't this great, major streamer Jing Wan is so rich, isn't it fine to get her to buy it for you?”

Ye Zichen indicated towards Jing Wan, while Xia Keke bit her lips. She directly let go of his arm and clenched her teeth.

“Stop bullshitting, are you buying it or not?”

Xia Keke resumed her normal personality and directly threatened him. The difference in personality caused Ye Zichen to laugh.

“You're begging me to buy the bag for you and yet you're threatening me?”

Feeling like there seemed to be a chance, Xia Keke giggled and shook Ye Zichen's arm again.

“Then Zichen-gege, help me buy the bag, okay!”

“You want the bag?”

Xia Keke nodded like a pecking chick, while desire shone in her eyes. Ye Zichen smiled, then slowly brushed her hand away from his arm.

“But I’m not buying it.”

Ye Zichen wasn’t an idiot, he had peeked at the bag’s price.

Twenty something thousand!

What kind of idiot would spend twenty something thousand to buy a purse?

What he was wearing totaled to less than two thousand yuan.

“Ye Zichen!”

Xia Keke opened her eyes wide in anger. However, Ye Zichen acted like he wasn’t afraid of anything and shrugged in response.

“Stop shouting, no matter how much you shout, I can’t possibly buy it for you.”

“Give it to her.”

Liu Jing, who was floating in midair, suddenly ordered Ye

Zichen. He looked up speechlessly, and saw Liu Jing smiling like a little devil.

“If you want to sleep peacefully in the future, then listen to me. I don’t need to sleep.”

Crack.

Ye Zichen clenched his teeth with a lot of force. He was regretting bringing Liu Jing back with him more and more now.

He f*cking brought a master back.

Liu Jing did not speak up again, but Ye Zichen knew that this master was definitely not joking with him from her creepy smile.

If he didn’t buy it, she definitely would do exactly what she said.

“Clerk, wrap the bag up, I’m going to buy it.”

He couldn’t defeat this ghost girl, so he could only submit. Ye Zichen got the clerk to wrap the bag up with a clench of her teeth. He thought it through, it was just twenty thousand yuan.

Wasn’t it extremely easy for him, who had the Fiery Eyes of Truth, to earn money?

“Wait!”

At that moment, a voice of disagreement sounded out outside the Chanel store.

Ye Zichen turned around, and a hint of speechlessness flashed across his eyes.

The world truly was a small place, he could bump into Guo Qiang and Yao Yue even when coming to the mall.

When Ye Zichen saw Yao Yue, his gaze had remained on her for a few moments. No matter what, she was a girl that he had dated for a long time.

However, from the looks of it, she had a pretty good life with Guo Qing. What she was wearing was far superior to what she wore when she was with him.

“Ye Zichen?”

Yao Yue stopping the clerk just now was purely because she wanted the bag. She had seen it two hours earlier and had got interested in it.

However, she definitely didn't have the money to buy it, so she had been waiting for Guo Qiang to come over.

She couldn't help but resist calling out when she saw that her bag was about to be bought when she was outside the store.

She never would have thought that the person buying the bag was actually Ye Zichen.

“Can you afford the bag? This bag is twenty something thousand yuan!”

Yao Yue walked in with her arm around Guo Qiang's, while displaying a mocking expression. Then, she very quickly displayed a coquettish look.

“Qiang-ge, I want that bag.”

Ye Zichen rubbed his temples and shook his head.

“Yao Yue, why must you go against me?”

“What happened?”

Xia Keke and Jing Wan also walked over. Ye Zichen twitched his mouth and said softly.

“My ex, she found a rich dude. She just keeps on going against me for no reason, I don't understand why.”

Xia Keke pouted as a hint of disdain flashed across her eyes.

She didn't think well of those sorts of women.

Jing Wan's expression was the same, but she didn't make it that obvious.

"Going against you, do you even have the right for that?" Yao Yue's eyes were full of disdain. Then, she shook Guo Qiang's arm, "Qiang-ge."

"We'll buy it. Isn't it just Chanel. If you want to, I'll help you buy the entire store,"

Guo Qiang chuckled coyly. Actually, he was kind of pretentious when saying that.

He was just unhappy why a crap like Ye Zichen would always be surrounded by beauties.

School beauty Su Yan, and now school beauty Xia Keke, and most importantly, there was also the one on the side...

She seemed to be the super idol Jing Wan from a certain streaming site!

Why was this poor brat's luck so good!

Actually, this was merely because he was behind on the times. If he read the school net more, it was unknown whether he would still think that.

“Clerk, give me a bag of the same kind.

Guo Qiang waved his hand, while the clerk gave a light smile.

“Sir, this is the last one in our store.”

“Qiang-ge...”

Yao Yue acted coquettishly once again. Seeing that, Guo Qiang licked his lips and laughed coldly.

“I’ll pay fifty thousand.”

He was raising the price!

Ye Zichen snickered. Does Guo Qiang really think that he doesn’t have a temper? Even a person made out of mud would have a bit of temper, not to mention him, a living human.

“A hundred thousand.”

Ye Zichen shouted out without blinking.

“A hundred and fifty.”

“Two hundred!”

“Three hundred!”

“Five hundred!”

Under Ye Zichen and Guo Qiang’s competition, a chanel that was merely twenty something thousand had its price rise exponentially.

Xia Keke and Jing Wan pulled on Ye Zichen, signaling him not to continue.

Even Liu Jing, who was in the air, also told Ye Zichen to stop.

Stop?

How was that possible?

A man relied on face, telling him to stop...

“A million!”

Guo Qiang also decided, he understood very well that it was no longer a matter about the bag, it was a matter about face.

“1.5 million.”

Ye Zichen rose the price without thinking, while the clerk immediately went dumb.

She never would have thought that the situation would escalate to this degree.

The customers in the mall all gradually surrounded the store. A bag was going to sell for more than a million and neither of them seemed to see the other right.

All of them wanted to see who the bag ended up with.

“Two million!” Guo Qiang clenched his teeth once again, while Ye Zichen picked his ear and laughed softly, “Three million!”

Actually, Ye Zichen didn’t have that much money on his card, he merely wanted to con Guo Qiang of more money.

Ye Zichen was sure that this grandson, Guo Qiang, would definitely add more on due to face. When that happens, he’ll immediately give up.

Guo Qiang would earn face, but he would lose his money.

However, who would have thought...

“Alright, it’s yours.”

Guo Qiang suddenly smiled playfully and gave up on the competition.

Ye Zichen instantly was dumbstruck.

What the hell? That doesn’t make any sense!

Chapter 55 – Gu Tian

How could you not work your shoes if you kept on walking on the riverside?

This definitely counted as Ye Zichen screwing up when he was extremely confident.

He maintained his confident smile, then mocked Guo Qiang meaningfully.

“Young Master Guo is giving up just like that? When we first met, Young Master Guo seemed to have thrown several thousand yuan coolly on my face.”

“I truly cannot compare to Young Master Ye.”

Ye Zichen couldn't believe it. Guo Qiang actually submitted.

However, when Ye Zichen saw his mocking smile, he understood that this grandson was definitely waiting him to jump into the trap.

Fine.

Messing with me.

Ye Zichen laughed coldly and casually took out two thousand

yuan from his wallet. He used the same cocky attitude as Guo Qiang had and threw the money onto Guo Qiang's face.

“Take these and buy yourself some decent clothes, if you want to pick up a girl, you gotta have the cash to do so.”

Guo Qiang's face immediately turned green.

It was the same action, the same words...

These were clearly words that he had spoken to Ye Zichen.

“Fuck off.”

Ye Zichen pointed to outside the Chanel store. He had to chase this grandson away quickly, then he would be able to confuse the clerk a bit and buy the bag for the original price.

“Young Master Ye's teaching are on point.”

Ye Zichen didn't think that Guo Qiang was so tolerant, he actually endured this insult with a faint smile.

“The bag goes to Young Master Ye now. Clerk, hurry up and package the bag for Young Master Ye. Three million is an astronomical amount.”

As Guo Qiang emphasized the price of the bag, Ye Zichen's face twitched.

Guo Qiang only endured all of it, because he was sure that Ye Zichen didn't have that much money on hand.

If Ye Zichen really couldn't pay, then he would be able to pay Ye Zichen back twice over.

This truly troubled Ye Zichen. He truly lacked the money to buy it.

“The bag is mine.”

At that moment, a young man with smoke-colored hair walked out from the crowds.

When the clerk saw that young man, her expression immediately changed as she dipped her head to greet him.

“Young Master Gu.”

From the looks of it, he seemed to be a frequent customer of this Chanel store.

Ye Zichen twitched his eyebrows, and thought to himself. Why was he so unlucky today, he actually bumped into that guy again...

However, him taking it is for the best, Ye Zichen didn't need to lose face!

At the same time, the manager of the store also came over after hearing that.

“Young Master Gu, why have you come?”

“My good friend is buying a bag in our store, and actually met someone that raised the price with ill intentions. What the hell was a manager like you doing?”

The young man with smoke-colored hair frowned, causing the manager to immediately reply in fright, “Young Master Gu, I didn't know anything about it.”

Actually, the manager knew everything about it, just now, he was thinking that no matter who buys the bag with such a high price, he would be able to earn a chunk. He didn't expect Young Master Gu to actually show up.

“Heh,” Young Master Gu snorted coldly and said. “Young Master Ye is a good friend of mine, do you know what you should do now?”

“Yes, yes.”

The manager quickly pulled the clerk inside, while Young Master Gu also looked towards Guo Qiang with disdain.

“Just now, I heard you say that you could buy this entire shop for the woman beside you if you wanted? Then I’ll sell the shop to you, fifty million, it’s a fair price.”

With that, Young Master Gu reached out his hand towards Guo Qiang, clearly indicating for him to pay up.

Guo Qiang was just getting pretentious when he had spoke like that just now. Although his family was indeed a bit rich, he can’t possibly have several tens of millions of pocket money.

“No money? What are you pretending to be a big shot for!”

Young Master Gu spoke without giving him any face. He clapped his hands, and the guards of the mall immediately rushed over.

“Young Master Gu.”

“Ask these two people to leave. Oh yeah, take a photo of them, then hang a sign outside our mall. Dogs and them are not allowed in!”

“Understood.”

Then, the guards dragged Guo Qiang and Yao Yue away, while ignoring their resistance.

At that moment, Young Master Gu finally walked in front of Ye Zichen with a smile and reached out his hand.

“Young Master Ye, can we get to know each other now? I’m Gu Tian!”

Ye Zichen didn’t hold any good will towards the brat in front of him and that geezer had actually threatened him back then. However, the other person did help him out of a tight spot, so he shouldn’t really put on airs.

“Ye Zichen.”

At the same time, the store manager and the clerk also placed the wrapped bag onto Gu Tian’s hands. Gu Tian casually handed it over to Ye Zichen with a smile, “Treat it as a gift from me, Young Master Ye.”

“Oh, here.”

Ye Zichen directly chucked the bag into Xia Keke’s hands after receiving the bag.

Xia Keke looked at the bag Ye Zichen handed over in surprise, while a blush surfaced on her cheeks.

“Thank you.”

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Xia Keke increased by 100. Current affability level: 110.

Ye Zichen knew it would turn out like this, he just didn't think that the affability level would increase by so much.

However, when he thought about it, Xia Keke did so much for such a bag. If she was a normal girl, she might even repay him with her body.

In comparison, Xia Keke controlled herself pretty well.

"I didn't think that Young Master Ye was an emotional person as well. An earth-shattering rage for a beauty. Three million was not a confidence that a normal person could have. However, this beauty is definitely worth Young Master Ye being so impulsive."

Hearing Gu Tian's words, Xia Keke blushed even more.

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Xia Keke increased by 10. Current affability level: 120.

Ugh.

Ye Zichen was speechless, he was terrified of her affability level increasing too much. What if Xia Keke really falls in love with him?

The thing hardest to accept was a beauty's favor.

He already had a woman beside him. He was afraid that he would disappoint Xia Keke.

However, now Gu Tian had done it. A single sentence cause the affability level to rise again.

“Do you have any business with me?” Ye Zichen was truly afraid of Gu Tian's shitty mouth bullshitting anything else that would cause the affability level to rise again.

“I really do have something that I want to chat with Young Master Ye about,” Gu Tian didn't deny it either.

“Then let's go,” Ye Zichen walked towards the door first. This completely confused Gu Tian, the last time he saw Ye Zichen, Ye Zichen had acted with hostility, but this time...

Could it be that speaking good about Ye Zichen was of use?

Thinking that, Gu Tian couldn't help but chat a bit more with Xia Keke.

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Xia Keke increased by 30. Current affability level: 150.

Ugh.

When Ye Zichen, who already walked outside the Chanel store received that notification, he nearly coughed up blood.

Gu Tian, f*ck you!

Within a music restaurant on the sixth floor of Business Building.

A lovely piano song swirled through the air in the restaurant, and the joyous sound would turn anyone's mood better.

But Ye Zichen...

His face was even darker than dirt.

“Ye Zichen, you truly have good taste. I dare to say that the beauty is definitely truly natural without any additives. She is completely first rate, because you're worth it.”

Until now, Gu Tian assumed that Ye Zichen only treated him like that due to Xia Keke.

That was why he couldn't help but mutter a few more words to try to improve their relationship.

“Can you shut your damn mouth?”

Just how low was this brat's EQ for him to be so naïve in reading the mood? If it wasn't because of his help within the shop earlier, Ye Zichen would definitely slap him a few times so that he would clear up a bit.

Huh...

Gu Tian was a bit confused.

From Ye Zichen's tone, he seemed to have said the wrong thing?

That doesn't make sense!

He'll just change the approach...

“Young Master Ye, I have no other thoughts about that beauty, I just thought that you two were a great match!”

Bang.

There was no way they could possibly chat.

Chapter 56 – Lil' White Wakes Up

In the end, Gu Tian finally managed to get Ye Zichen to stay with a lot of effort.

However, he was still completely certain that Ye Zichen only got mad because he had said the wrong thing, but the direction he was thinking in was still correct.

“What did you want to say to me?”

Ye Zichen leaned back in the chair and curled his lips.

At the same time, Liu Jing floated above Gu Tian's head and kept on making faces at him. This was something that Ye Zichen had told her to do...

Since this bastard spoke poorly, then let him be taught a lesson.

“Err... Can you tell the beauty above me to stop messing around first?”

...

Both Ye Zichen, who was sitting in the chair, and Liu Jing, who was floating in the air, were stunned.

“You...”

Ye Zichen stared at him, but was unable to say anything as he gulped. Gu Tian raised his eyebrow and shrugged, “Young Master Ye, we’re the same kind of people.”

Ye Zichen signaled Liu Jing to return back to the Dragon Eye. Then, he licked his dry lips as a spark flashed in his eyes.

“You can see her?”

“Yeah, I also know that she’s a virgin ghost girl that died before her time,” Gu Tian’s lips revealed a bright smile. “Young Master Ye can be so close with the ghost girl, and also had an item that can accept her. Is Young Master Ye going to say that we’re not the same kind of people?”

Ye Zichen stayed silent for a moment.

It seemed like this guy with a low EQ treated him as the same. Thus, after a brief moment of thought, Ye Zichen replied, “Alright, we are truly the same. But, what do you want from me?”

“Actually, it’s not much,” Gu Tian took a sip of the drink on the table. “I was also there when Young Master Ye acted out at the barbeque shop.”

“Fu Chengming sent you?”

Ye Zichen asked since Gu Tian specifically mentioned the barbeque shop, and the incident was rather huge. However, Gu Tian didn't seem to be someone that needed to use the relationships of other people.

“What did he ask you to find me for? He wants to deal with me?”

Gu Tian raised his eyebrow, he didn't think that Ye Zichen could actually guess from his short words that Fu Chengming had sought him out previously.

This made him even more certain about his thought of getting to know Ye Zichen better.

“Fu Chengming did find me before. However, I refused after seeing Young Master Ye at the barbeque shop.”

“Then what did you find me for?”

“It's just to get to know you and make a friend.”

“I don't want to be your friend.”

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes towards Gu Tian and got up to walk out of the restaurant.

Gu Tian quickly followed and asked, “Why? How have I caused Young Master Ye to dislike me?”

“The geezer that came looking for me me out at the school the other day was yours, right?”

“Yeah!”

“He threatened my family then. I hate other people threatening my family.”

“That wasn’t on purpose,” Gu Tian explained with a wry smile. “I would never threaten Young Master Ye with your family.”

“Oh, but I still don’t want to be your friend.”

“Why is that?”

“Think about it yourself.”

With that, Ye Zichen took out his phone to have a look at the time, then disappeared in the flow of the crowd within the mall.

He hadn’t had a chance to buy Tiantian’s birthday present yet, how could he have the time to talk with this sort of person with negative EQ.

Gu Tian thought about it on the spot for a long time, after a while...

He thought of Xia Keke once again.

Gu Tian took out his phone and spoke, "Help me investigate a person."

In the end, Ye Zichen bought a Barbie back to the mansion. Ye Rong became completely stunned when she saw the doll in Ye Zichen's hands.

"Zichen, you like these sorts of stuff?"

This Barbie was the birthday present Ye Zichen had chosen for Tiantian in the mall. He only brought it here because he was afraid that the other people at the dorm would think too much into it,

He did not expect that even his own mother distrusted him.

"This is for someone else."

Hearing the explanation, Ye Rong let out a sigh of relief. This only made Ye Zichen sigh helplessly in his heart. He then asked, "Is Lil' White awake?"

"Nope, still sleeping."

Ye Rong's eyes showed a hint of worry. Lil' White had been accompanying her recently, alongside the fact that Lil' White was

very bright, it caused her to like him a lot.

Lil' White's recent situation truly worried her.

“Lemme go and see.”

Ye Zichen replied, then walked towards the living room. Ye Rong nodded, “Don't go back to your dorm later. Mom will make red-cooked pork for you tonight.”

“Sure.”

Ever since he brought Ye Rong here, Ye Zichen had barely kept her company. When he saw his mother's look of anticipation, he really wouldn't bring himself to refuse.

Ye Rong instantly smiled after hearing Ye Zichen's reply of confirmation, then she quickly walked out of the mansion.

Lil' White was still lying asleep in his usual place. Even Ye Zichen got a bit worried since he didn't get up after so long.

Ye Zichen sat down onto the sofa, then looked at Lil' White for a long time before calling Liu Jing out.

“It's safe now?”

Liu Jing stuck her head out sneakily and looked around. She only floated out without worry after seeing that it was Ye Zichen's home.

“That brat said that his name is Gu Tian, is he from the same place as the Grandpa Gu you know?”

“How would I know? But since he can see me and his surname is Gu, I think they should be family.”

Liu Jing twitched her mouth at Ye Zichen, then floated all around the mansion.

Ye Zichen allowed her to wander around the mansion, then fell into deep thought.

People with supernatural abilities had already appeared in his life. Gu Tian might very well be what Chief Liu and many other people had mentioned to him...

Someone from that place.

He was about to come into contact with the people from that place, he wasn't sure if it was good or bad.

Most importantly, he didn't want Liu Jing to get hurt.

Gu Tian's words back then had revealed a lot of important hints.

He mentioned that Liu Jing was a virgin ghost, and specifically mentioned that she died before her time.

There must be something more to it.

Otherwise, he definitely wouldn't deliberately mention both of these points, and would have just called her a ghost girl.

A huge energy suddenly appeared from the mansion, while Ye Zichen was deep in his thoughts.

Ye Zichen opened his eyes and saw that Lil' White, who was lying down, had all his fur stand up.

Liu Jing also floated over after feeling this abnormality. She looked down at Lil' White and said, "What happened to Lil' White?"

"You're asking me, but how would I even know?"

Ye Zichen was speechless. If he didn't have that WeChat group, he would still be a mundane commoner.

How was he supposed to know the answer to such a difficult question.

"Oh wow, daddy feels so great!"

Lil' White still looked like a poodle, but what shocked him was...

Lil' White talked.

“Lil' White.”

Ye Zichen was unable to hide the shock in his heart as he shouted towards Lil' White with open eyes.

“Oh, boss.”

Lil' White wagged his tail and jumped out of his place, and revealed a flattering expression.

“Boss, you are my true daddy from now on. I'll do whatever you tell me to do.”

F*ck, the dog spoke...

If he took a short of it and chucked it onto Weibo, he might even make it onto the headlines.

However, Lil' White's “true daddy” way to calling Ye Zichen's expression to sullen. He raised his hand and smacked its head, “Who the f*ck is your true daddy! I don't have a dog son like you. Don't bullshit, you should have evolved after eating the Howling Celestial Dog's dog food!”

“Of course,” Lil’ White raised his prideful head cockily, but what faced him was Ye Zichen’s five-finger mountain once again.

“Stop putting on airs with laozi. Say it, what secret technique did you learn!?”

Chapter 57 – The Class Rep’s Invitation

Just as Liu Jing and Ye Zichen were waiting to hear what sort of shocking secret ability Lil’ White had gained in anticipation, what awaited them was...

“Boss, I didn’t learn any secret abilities.”

Slap.

Ye Zichen slapped Lil’ White to the side of the sofa, causing Lil’ White to rub his head in a human-like fashion and he looked at Ye Zichen with innocent eyes full of hurt.

“Boss, why did you hit me?”

Slap.

All that awaited him was another slap.

This time, Lil’ White was smarter. He stared Ye Zichen with eyes full of hurt and sat on the floor.

After a while, Ye Zichen finally spoke.

“Did you come to act moe with the two of us?”

Lil' White shook his head.

“You’re shaking your head?”

Ye Zichen took out a dog bone from his phone and placed it onto the tea table. Seeing that, Lil' White reached out his tongue and jumped up to snatch it.

Slap.

Another slap.

“Boss, why are you always hitting me?”

Lil' White was beyond hurt.

Ye Zichen pointed at the bone on the tea table and said, “This is the dog food I got from Erlang Shen. It was for the Howling Celestial Dog. It’s the dog food that the number one dog in the Heavenly Court eats. Even laozi wants to take a few bites. You’re telling me that you didn’t learn anything after eating it?”

“Didn’t I just start? The reason the Howling Celestial Dog could become the number one dog in heaven is mainly due to having a good boss. What’s more, think about how long the Howling Celestial Dog has been eating them compared to me, I’ve only had one.”

Lil' White couldn't help but argue for himself, but what he faced from Ye Zichen was another slap.

“So? Are you suffering under me or what? Alright, don't eat this dog food. Of course, my mom likes you, so I can't starve you to death. I'll buy you several dozen bags of normal dog food tomorrow. You can live the rest of your life in peace.”

Ye Zichen put away the dog bone on the tea table. Seeing that, Liu Jing, who was floating in the air, couldn't stand it anymore. She couldn't help but speak up, “What are you getting angry with the dog for?”

At the same time, Lil' White also held the edge of Ye Zichen's trousers, and refused to let him go.

“I'm getting angry with it?” Ye Zichen sneered. “I have the time to care about it?”

“You're still saying that you're not getting mad? Tsk...”

Liu Jing rolled her eyes at Ye Zichen, while Lil' White also released the edge of his trousers.

“Boss, just don't get anxious and angry for now. Let's be logical. Yes, I did eat the dog food of the number one dog in the Heavenly Court, but I only just now started to eat it. The Howling Celestial Dog was so much worse than me when it just started following Erlang Shen. Didn't he take a long time to eat his way to the spot of

the number one dog!? The fact that I can speak after just eating one bone means that my potential is already top notch.”

Actually, Ye Zichen also knew what Lil’ White spoke to be true. The main issue was that he had too much anticipation for the dog bones.

This caused him to find it hard to accept it when Lil’ White said that he didn’t learn anything.

Ye Zichen looked at Lil’ White, who was squatting on the floor, then reached out his hand to rub Lil’ White’ head.

“I didn’t hit you too hard, right?”

“This isn’t much,” Lil’ White raised his head and stuck out his tongue. “Boss, can I have another one of those bones?”

“No, you slept so many days after eating one bone. My mom got so worried about you. What’s going to happen if you keep on sleeping?”

“No, the reason I slept was because I just ate it, so there was an absorption process. Since I have eaten it once already now, it won’t happen anymore.”

Lil’ White opened his dog mouth and reached out his tongue. Ye Zichen sighed helplessly, then chucked the bone over.

“Save it up, I only managed to get five of them.”

Thus, Lil' White ran over to the other side of the mansion with the dog bone in his mouth. As Ye Zichen looked at him waving his tail, he couldn't help but chuckle, “Oh yeah, don't speak when my mom comes back, okay?”

“Understood.”

That night, Ye Rong made an entire table of dishes. Ye Zichen's bowl was never empty during dinner. The moment he doesn't have any food in his bowl, Ye Rong would definitely get him enough food to conjure up a small hill in his bowl.

The meal made Ye Zichen so full that he could barely move.

When he finally laid on the bed in his bedroom, Ye Zichen's fists clenched for some reason as he thought about his mother's happy smile just a while ago.

He had been raised by his mother enduring a lot.

Thinking that, he swore that he would definitely let his mother leave a good life, and he'll make the man that had abandoned them pay the price.

Thus, Ye Zichen full into slumber with these thoughts in his

mind...

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Xia Keke increased by 20. Current affability level: 170.

Ye Zichen, who was in lesson, suddenly got a message like this, causing him to be completely confused. He immediately took out his phone and clicked on his marriage string with Xia Keke.

The affability level it showed was indeed 170, but he didn't do anything at all.

His confusion lasted till the end of the lesson. The moment he walked out of the classroom, he saw Xia Keke, who was standing in the corridor.

“Why are you here?”

Xia Keke raised her head with a blush.

At that moment, Ye Zichen was still getting confused about the random affability level increase, this scene only made him more confused.

Smooch.

Before he was able to react, Xia Keke directly kissed him on the cheek, and said with a blush, I received the gift you sent me, I really like it.”

With that, she ran away with a look of embarrassment.

Ye Zichen blanked out.

He didn’t send any present!

Was this a supernatural event?

“Hey, why are you like this? You already have a girlfriend, why are you still leading Keke on?”

Liu Jing floated angrily in front of Ye Zichen. However, Ye Zichen could only reply innocently, “I didn’t lead her on.”

“You didn’t? If you didn’t lead her on, then why would she kiss you? And she even said that you gave her a present!”

Liu Jing floated and put her hands on her waist.

“I really didn’t send her any presents, nor do I want to lead her on.”

Ye Zichen was truly troubled. He took a few deep breaths, then

sighed, “You are beside me every day. You should be clear about whether I sent her one or not. I was at my mom’s place the entire day yesterday, and got called to go to lessons with you this morning. How could I have gotten the time to send her any presents.”

Liu Jing thought about it, then realized that Ye Zichen was right. She was right by Ye Zichen every single day, he definitely wouldn’t be able to hide anything from her.

Thinking that, Liu Jing couldn’t help but get confused, “Then what’s going on?”

“How would I know?” Ye Zichen showed an expression of speechlessness.

Seeing that, Liu Jing pouted, “Alright, alright, stop pretending to be innocent here. It doesn’t matter whether you sent a gift or not, you already earned it when Keke kissed you once. Don’t look troubled like you suffered a huge loss now.”

“I feel troubled.”

“Tsk, I really want to hit you.”

Liu Jing snorted and rolled her eyes, then returned back to the Dragon Eye.

The day light caused a lot of harm to ghosts like her, that’s why

she had to frequently return to the Dragon Eye in order to nurture her soul.

Ye Zichen maintained his confusion even when Liu Jing went into the Dragon Eye. This was too weird!

At that moment, Ye Zichen felt another person beside him. Her turned around and saw Sun Yige standing beside him.

Sun Yige was their class rep, and one of the four school beauties of the Polytechnic University.

She was usually a girl of few words. Rumors had it that she wanted to become class rep in order to change her introverted personality, but she was still like that after two years.

If it wasn't due to there being more guys in the class, she might had already lost her position of class rep.

Although Ye Zichen had been classmates with her for two years, he didn't have much contact with her. They were the kind of people that wouldn't even say a word or two to each other within a year.

The fact that she appeared in front of Ye Zichen did shock him.

“You're looking for me?”

Ye Zichen pointed at himself.

Sun Yige nodded in confirmation, “Mhmm.”

Chapter 58 – Old Man Su Is In Danger

The fact that the beauty class rep actually had business with him truly surprised Ye Zichen.

“Class Rep Sun, I wonder what do you need this puny one to do. As long as this puny one can do it, the task shall definitely be done properly.”

Ye Zichen acted just like a servant in tv shows. Seeing that, Sun Yige wanted to laugh, but didn't.

That's what introverted people were like, they didn't really like showing their mood to others.

“You don't need to be like that.”

Sun Yige's voice was sweet like honey. Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, before listening to her continue.

“It's the school's 60th anniversary soon, the school requests every single department to put on a few shows, I want to ask you...”

“To do a show.”

Ye Zichen finished Sun Yige's unfinished sentence. Hearing that, she nodded slightly.

“About that... I... Actually... It’s...”

Sun Yige stuttered, but didn’t manage to finish her sentence, as if she was worried about Ye Zichen refusing.

Ye Zichen smiled, “Sure, I’ll do it.”

A joyous smile immediately surfaced on Sun Yige’s face. She used a tiny voice and replied, “Thank you.”

Then, Ye Zichen waved and left after nodding and smiling towards Sun Yige.

Ye Zichen truly felt bad for this class rep after seeing her be like this after being a class rep for so long.

Ye Zichen couldn’t say that her sort of personality was bad, he could only say that it would be truly disadvantageous for her when she needs to step into society.

Ye Zichen shook his head and sighed softly when he saw the goddess Su Yan swiftly run outside school. He wanted to call out to her, but at that exact moment, his phone rang. He put his phone beside his ear, while his expression turned extremely solemn very quickly.

At the entrance of the school half an hour later.

A silver sports car stopped in front of Ye Zichen. The car door opened, and Su Yiyun hurriedly ran down from the car with an anxious expression.

“Ye-zi.”

“How is the old man?”

Su Yiyun’s entire expression displayed just how nervous he was. Ye Zichen had wanted to comfort him, telling him not to worry, but Su Yiyun grabbed him and dragged him into the car.

After they got in, Su Yiyun kept on pushing down on the pedal with no fear for his life.

Ye Zichen’s heart sunk after seeing his serious expression.

“Ol’ Three, don’t worry too much, I’m sure your family’s old man will get better.”

Within Bingcheng Number One People’s Hospital.

The lights in the emergency room were still lit, while ten-odd people stood in the corridor right outside it.

Every single one of them had a solemn look in their eyes as they stared intently at the bright light of the emergency room.

Tatata...

Hurried footsteps sounded out from the end of the corridor. It was Su Yiyun and Ye Zichen.

“Lil’ Yan, how is grandpa’s situation?”

Su Yiyun asked Su Yan, who was getting worried as she stood in the corridor. Su Yan turned her head, bit her lips and shook her head.

“Ol’ Three, you and Su Yan...”

Ye Zichen didn’t quite know how to react when he saw this. Su Yiyun let out a long sigh and nodded.

“Su Yan is the child of my uncle. I’m her older brother.”

“Doesn’t that mean...” Ye Zichen looked at Su Yan in shock, then pointed towards the operation room, “It’s Old Man Su inside?”

Su Yan nodded slightly. When Su Qihu, who was standing right outside the entrance of the operation room heard this, he turned around. Seeing Ye Zichen, he immediately frowned, “Who brought him here?”

Su Qilong also turned around. When he saw Ye Zichen, who was

beside Su Yiyun, his eyes suddenly brightened.

Perhaps it was due to him being too worried about his old man, he actually forgot about this master.

On the other hand, his son did remember to bring this master here.

“Uncle, I brought him here.”

Su Yiyun raised his head and replied, while meeting Su Qihu’s gaze. Su Qihu glared at him and cursed, “Is this somewhere that just anyone can come?”

“Qihu, Lil’ Ye is no commoner,” Su Qilong reached out his hand and patted Su Qihu’s shoulder.

“Older brother, you know him as well?” Su Qihu revealed a shocked expression. When he saw the other person nod, he sighed with a frown, “Older brother, I don’t care what relationship he has with you guys. But just what sort of place is this? Do you know the background of this brat? You guys actually allowed him to come.”

“Qihu.”

From Su Qihu’s tone, Su Qilong could tell that his little brother seemed to have a huge issue with Ye Zichen.

However, he was certain that Ye Zichen was definitely a master from that place.

“Qihu, stop talking, if you have the time to do that, you might as well pray that dad will be alright.”

Su Qihu went silent, clenched his teeth, then turned around.

Thirteen hours later, the operation was still on-going.

Ye Zichen and Su Yiyun smoked as they leaned on the wall in the smoking area. Neither of them had uttered a single word in the past thirteen hours.

After smoking their cigarettes, the two of them walked towards the operation room together.

At this moment, Su Yiyun suddenly pulled on Ye Zichen's shoulder.

“Ye-zi, if the doctor can't manage to save my grandpa, do you have any way to save him?”

At that moment, Ye Zichen finally noticed that Su Yiyun's eyes were completely red.

Ye Zichen could tell that Su Yiyun was very nervous at the moment, and he was under a tremendous amount of pressure. Ye

Zichen smiled and patted him on the shoulders.

“Old Man Su is fortunate and destined to live long, the operation will definitely be a success.”

“No, I need you to give me a certain answer. I believe in you more than those doctors.”

Su Yiyun stared right at Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen touched the phone in his pocket. The effects of the Great Recovery Pill could save those people that were on the brink of death. He couldn't be certain that whether the Great Recovery Pill would have any effects if anything really happened to Old Man Su.

“Ye-zi, give me an answer.”

“Yes!”

Only then, Su Yiyun finally relaxed his tensed nerves. He laughed loudly and bear-hugged Ye Zichen.

“Thank you.”

Su Yiyun relaxed a lot after hearing Ye Zichen's promise.

When the two of them returned to the corridor of the operation room, they saw that the operation had already been completed.

“Dad, how did grandpa’s operation go?”

Su Yiyun quickly ran over, but when he saw Su Qilong and Su Qiuhu’s expressions, he looked towards Ye Zichen.

“Director Su, Major Su, I’m truly very sorry.”

The main surgeon this time was an elder around sixty with the name of Deng Cheng.

“Hahaha.”

Just as everyone tried to silently accept this fact, Su Yiyun suddenly loud out loud and swore towards Deng Chen with red eyes, “Charlatan!”

“Lil’ Yun!” Su Qiuhu roared at Su Yiyun. Deng Cheng was an existence that was at the pinnacle of modern medicine, he was someone that Su Qiuhu had invited over in person.

“What, is someone that couldn’t succeed an operation not a charlatan.”

Su Yiyun laughed.

Slap.

Su Qihu slapped Su Yiyun, “Lil’ Yi, stop messing around!”

Su Yan was already covered in tears, but when she saw Su Yiyun get hit, she silently walked beside him and sobbed, “Ge...”

Su Yiyun ignored the pain on his face. He merely turned towards Ye Zichen and laughed, “Ye-zi, your promise is still effective, right!”

Chapter 59 – Black And White

Impermanence

Ye Zichen had merely wanted to give Su Yiyun something to believe in in order to get himself back together in the smoking area.

However, everything happened just as Su Yiyun had said.

The operation truly failed.

Was his promise still in effect?

Ye Zichen couldn't help but ask himself. Did he truly had the ability to save Elder Su; who even someone at the pinnacle of medicine couldn't?

“Ye-zi! Answer me!”

Su Yiyun roared like a maniac. Ye Zichen raised his head and took a deep breath.

“Yes.”

Everyone was confused by Ye Zichen and Su Yiyun's conversation. Only Su Qilong's eyes lit up.

“I can save Old Man Su, but I have conditions.”

Ye Zichen’s words invoked a variety of emotions, both the Su family and the hospital workers were shocked.

“Young man, you can’t just randomly say things.”

The person who spoke up was also a rather reputed expert in medicine, and he was there during the operation.

Elder Su, who was inside, already lacked any possibility of living. Or else, they wouldn’t have stopped the operation.

“Brat, this isn’t the place for you to brag.”

Su Qihu was also shocked by Ye Zichen. However, Ye Zichen merely smiled lightly and said, “Don’t question the truth in my words. The fact that you guys can’t do it doesn’t mean that no one can.”

“Young man, do you study medicine?” Deng Cheng asked when he felt Ye Zichen’s confidence.

Ye Zichen nodded without denying anything. Actually, he studied to be a vet, but he needed the chance to enter the operation room.

If he boldly said that he was a vet...

Then he had no possibility of entering.

“Alright, I’ll give you the chance.”

Deng Chen called over the medical staff to bring over a sterilized jacket for Ye Zichen. Meanwhile, Su Qihu was unable to understand why Deng Cheng agreed, “Professor Deng...”

Deng Cheng raised his hand to stop Su Qihu’s words with a smile, “Since this young man is so confident, then we might as well let him try. Of course, this requires the acceptance of your family. However, I feel like both you guys and Elder Su need this chance.”

At the same time, Su Qilong also added on the side, “Qihu, Lil’ Ye is not normal. Believe him.”

Since the two people with the most right to speak spoke up, Su Qihu could only clench his teeth and move out of the way.

“I said that I have conditions.”

“Raise your conditions after you succeed.”

Su Qihu didn’t like the look of Ye Zichen at all, so his tone was not particularly friendly either.

Ye Zichen wet his lips and said, “I want to raise it now!”

“Say it!”

“After I succeed, you cannot use Su Yan for a political marriage.”

Ye Zichen looked over at Su Qihu’s furious gaze.

Actually, Ye Zichen was rather afraid of Su Qihu in his heart. Su Qihu’s time in the military caused him to always have a murderous aura about him that was hard to endure.

However, Ye Zichen didn’t care about him anymore for a chance to help Su Yan and Elder Su.

“Don’t thinking about lying to me, I can tell whether you speak truth or lies.”

Ye Zichen’s eyes flashed gold, causing Su Qihu to feel stunned all of a sudden.

When he came back to himself, his gaze had a hint of wariness as he looked towards Ye Zichen.

“Alright.”

“If Su Yan wants to be with me, you cannot stop her.”

Su Yan, who was covered in tears, blushed, while many of the surrounding medical staff also showed an understanding expression.

No wonder this young man would act like this, it was actually for this girl.

Even more people started to wonder, if this young man completely had no chance and merely wanted to show himself off.

“Don’t hesitate, Elder Su doesn’t have much time. Give me an answer.”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows when Su Qihu did not give a reply after a long while.

“Fine,” Su Qihu glared at Ye Zichen. “However, if you fail, then you cannot have any contact with Su Yan in the future.”

“You are truly a great son.” Ye Zichen smiled mockingly. “Don’t worry, I won’t fail. Remember your promise.”

With that, Ye Zichen walked into the operation room.

Deng Cheng, who was behind him spoke up, “Do you need help? I can be your assistant.”

“No need,” Ye Zichen’s reply was cold, resolute and extremely

confident. When he walked into the operation room, the door of it closed behind him.

Deng Chen looked towards Su Yan, he saw Su Yan clench her fists as she prayed, while the back of the hero-like figure from just now appeared in his head.

Perhaps, this young man can truly succeed.

A white cloth already covered Elder Su within the operation room. This was the declaration of them failing the operation.

Ye Zichen clicked on the Treasure Chest within WeChat and withdrew a Great Recovery Pill.

“Lil’ Ye, why did you come in?”

A question sounded out from mid-air. Ye Zichen raised his head, and saw Elder Su’s soul floating in the air.

“Elder Su!”

When he shouted this, the Great Recovery Pill in Ye Zichen’s hand fell and clattered on the floor.

The soul exiting the body means that the person was utterly and completely dead.

The Great Recovery Pill was no longer of any use.

“Oh? Lil’ Ye, you can see me?”

Elder Su revealed an expression of shock and floated beside Ye Zichen.

Liu Jing also came out of the Dragon Eye at that exact moment and stretched.

“Aiya, sleeping is so nice. Ye Zichen, why did you ran into an operation room?”

When she saw Elder Su, who was also floating in the air, she immediately shouted out, “A GHOST!”

“What are you shouting for? Are you not a ghost?” Ye Zichen reached out his hand and dragged Liu Jing down. At the same time, he smiled wryly towards Elder Su and nodded, “Elder Su, I can indeed see you.”

“Haha, I knew that you, Lil’ Ye, were no normal person.”

Elder Su did not reveal too shocked of an expression, it was as if he had predicted all this.

“Good, Lil’ Ye, since you came, then help me pass on a message to my two sons.”

“Hubby, it seems like this is the place,” a sharp voice suddenly sounded out in the operation room. When Elder Su heard this sound, his body started to tremble intensely.

“This is it,” a slightly coarse voice sounded out. Not long later, two ghosts with tall hats and a sigil on their heads appeared in the air. One of them wore white clothing, and the other one wore black clothing.

The Black and White Impermanence!

Ye Zichen was shocked for a moment, he didn't think that the Black and White Impermanence truly existed and were even a f*cking couple.

It seems like the two of them came to take Elder Su away.

“Elder Su, come behind me,” Ye Zichen shouted.

Hearing Ye Zichen's shout, Elder Su immediately went behind him.

“Didn't the higher ups say that there was only one dead ghost? Why are there two? And there's also a living person as well!” White Impermanence's sharp voice sounded out once again.

Black Impermanence looked towards Ye Zichen.

“Tsk, the heck does a living person have to do with us. However, this ghost girl, virgin ghost girl, she died before her time. This type of ghost needs to wait until their time is up even if they wanted to reincarnate. But, zeze...”

Black Impermanence licked his lips with his long tongue and rubbed his hands, “This virgin ghost girl is so beautiful.”

White Impermanence’s expression stiffened, it was clear that her man became interested in this virgin ghost girl. However, she was the weak one in the family, so she didn’t dare to speak up even though she was angry.

Just as the Black Impermanence finished speaking, the two of them walked towards Elder Su and Liu Jing with chains in their hands. Just as they made half of the distance, White Impermanence suddenly stopped, “hubby, that living person seems to be staring at us.”

Chapter 60 – I'm A Ghost Servant

Slap.

Black Impermanence raised his hand and hit White Impermanence hard on the head.

“Stop bullshitting, how could a mortal even see us?”

Black Impermanence ignored his retarded woman and walked over towards Liu Jing with his huge chain, while putting on a kindly appearance.

“Little sister, do you want to get reincarnated to be human? Older brother is the Black Impermanence of the underworld, I can take you to get reincarnated.”

“Aren't you just an intern!”

The White Impermanence muttered.

Since the ‘customer base’ of the underworld had gradually increased, so did the number of ghost servants in the underworld. For example, the Black and White Impermanence that had come to capture the deceased this time were the subordinates that the two Lord Impermanences of the Twelve Yin Generals had hired.

Liu Jing blinked, and looked towards Ye Zichen, who was at the

side.

Since the two of them had been together for a long time, they did have a certain level of cooperation.

Liu Jing understood what to say just based on his looks.

“Black Impermanence-gege, is what you said true?” Liu Jing showed a look of really wanting to reincarnate.

“Of course, as long as you come with us, I guarantee that you can get a good home.”

White Impermanence rubbed her head and walked over, however, her words had a hint of threat to it.

Liu Jing did not care about the White Impermanence’s threat, she didn’t even think about leaving with the Black Impermanence.

She merely asked for fun!

“But...” Liu Jing hesitated for a moment. The Black Impermanence quickly spoke up, “But what?”

“I don’t want to leave my boyfriend.”

Liu Jing immediately hugged Ye Zichen’s shoulder. Seeing that,

the Black and White Impermanence revealed an understanding expression.

Normal ghosts would slowly forget about their experiences in the mortal realm, but a virgin ghost girl wouldn't.

She would remember everything that had happened during her lifetime, and would stick to someone that was very important to her while she was alive.

Especially men...

The Black and White Impermanence's chains were unable to chain up ghosts like Liu Jing that died before their time. This was the sole reason why they did not use force.

White Impermanence was happy that this pretty ghost hesitated but the Black Impermanence was annoyed.

"Little sister, humans and ghosts are different. It's impossible for you to be with your boyfriend. Also, you will hurt him by absorbing the yang aura from him if you stay at his side."

The Black Impermanence advised with a caring voice. However, the White Impermanence said indifferently on the side, "I think that's pretty good."

Black Impermanence raised his hand to hit the White Impermanence once again in anger, even Ye Zichen couldn't stand

this sort of domestic violence anymore.

He raised his hand and grabbed Black Impermanence's arm and threw him to the side.

"This is your woman, she should be cared for by you with your life. She isn't supposed to be hit by you."

"Are-Are-Are you a human or a ghost?"

Ye Zichen's move completely stunned the Black and White Impermanence. How could a mortal see them, much less grab him?

"Of course laozi is human, when laozi's yang aura is so strong.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes towards Black Impermanence and walked towards White Impermanence.

White Impermanence was shocked. She stood in her place and looked at Black Impermanence, who fell onto the floor. For some reason, she wasn't worried at all.

Thinking about Black Impermanence's actions of being a ghost servant throughout so many years.

The two of them might truly have been married when they died, but they only had the name of a couple left now.

“Go and chat with Liu Jing and Elder Su over there. You guys aren’t going to be able to take these two ghosts away.”

“Okay.”

White Impermanence nodded, then walked towards Elder Su and Liu Jing.

However, when the White Impermanence spoke, she actually no longer screeched.

Ye Zichen didn’t notice this detail as he walked towards Black Impermanence with his hands on his waist.

“Stay away from me, I am a ghost servant of the underworld.”

Black Impermanence raised his dry hand and pointed at Ye Zichen. Yet, his trembling tone revealed the terror buried in his heart.

A mere mortal could actually see him, and even catch him...

“I don’t care if you’re a ghost servant or not. What? You can take me away?”

Ye Zichen raised his hand and slapped the Black Impermanence.

“Ugh...”

Black Impermanence didn't react, but Ye Zichen sucked in a breath of cold air and shook his hurting hands.

His face seemed to be made out of stone.

“Slap yourself!”

Ye Zichen placed his hands behind his back and ordered Black Impermanence to act.

“I am a ghost servant.”

“Ghost servant my ass, it doesn't matter even if Yama comes.”

Slap.

Black Impermanence clenched his teeth and slapped himself.

“You're pretty amazing when you can only bully a woman,” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows at Black Impermanence, who was on the floor. “Slap yourself two more times, you are the kind of people laozi dislikes the most.”

“Don't cross the line too much, I am a ghost servant.”

“Are you slapping or not? If you aren’t, then I’ll help you,” Ye Zichen glared.

Seeing that, Black Impermanence gulped, then slapped himself two more times.

Ye Zichen finally nodded in satisfaction after seeing that.

“Go and apologize to your woman.”

“Don’t cross the line too much, I am a ghost servant.”

“Are you going or not?”

Black Impermanence directly stood up, walked over in front of White Impermanence and gave a deep bow, “Sorry.”

“Be more earnest.”

Ye Zichen raised his foot to kick him. Black Impermanence looked backwards, but when he saw Ye Zichen glare at him with wide open eyes, he instantly shrank his neck and apologized to White Impermanence, “Sorry, I shouldn’t have hit you.”

“Slap yourself two more times.”

Slap slap.

Black Impermanence perfectly carried out Ye Zichen's request, then got thrown back into the corner.

“Tell me, who told you to come and capture Elder Su?”

Black Impermanence already lost all of the resistance that he had at the start. If Ye Zichen was a ghost, he might have opposed with force.

But Ye Zichen was human...

Ghost servants had regulations stating that they couldn't make a move on living people without any orders. If they broke it, then they would be dispersed to nothingness.

Actually, this regulation was rather good, since mortals were unable to see ghosts, and ghosts were not allowed to make a move on people. This also ensured peace between the two realms.

But f*ck, this guy can see ghosts.

What's more, the guy could even catch him.

“Hero, this little one was merely carrying out orders, it is unrelated to this little one.”

He was so terrified.

Black Impermanence's submission was something that Ye Zichen did not expect, but he wasn't the kind of person that liked to bully the weak.

Since the other person had submitted, he had no interest in bullying him anymore.

"I'm telling you, you can't bring these two ghosts away."

Black Impermanence instantly cried, "Hero, we can choose to not bring that virgin ghost girl away, but we must bring the geezer away. His time is already up, the higherups sent us over to take care of him."

"He'll be alive later."

"Hero, stop kidding. Mortals have a set period of life, when it is used up, then it is over. What's more, soul departure has already occurred, even if you find a way to allow him to get more time to live, there's no way for his soul to return to his body."

Ye Zichen thought for a moment, then pointed at Black Impermanence, "Squat here. See if I don't beat you up if you dare to stand up."

"Yes, yes, yes..."

Black Impermanence squatted obediently in the corner, while Ye Zichen walked back over to the others.

“How is it? What did he say?”

Liu Jing asked.

Ye Zichen shook his head in reply, “Black Impermanence said that Elder Su’s time is up. However, from his words, there seems to be something that can increase the time someone has. But then he said something about soul departure...”

“Soul departure is the separation of the soul from the body,” White Impermanence spoke up with an older-sister-type voice.

“Then how can I return the soul to the body?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“I’m not sure, but the Heavenly Court...” White Impermanence paused, then said. “Sorry, I really want to help you, but regulations prohibit me from saying too much.”

“What you have said already, it’s enough...”

Ye Zichen smiled. Everything was good when the Heavenly Court was mentioned.

After all, he had the Heavenly Court’s WeChat group!

Chapter 61 – The Chance Is Here

Ye Zichen opened the chat group and saw that most of the people inside were bragging. Ye Zichen typed out a message, hesitated for a moment, then deleted it without daring to send it.

He was afraid of being found out.

It was better to send his question through private message.

Ye Zichen clicked on his chat with Erlang Shen...

Ye Zichen: Bro, do you have anything that can increase the duration of a lifetime?

Erlang Shen: How... Why would I have something like that. Those durations are merely for mortals, the lifetimes of us deities are eternal.

Ye Zichen thought to himself, it truly was like that, when he read Erlang Shen's reply, but he at least had to ask who would have something like this.

Ye Zichen: Then do you know who does?

Erlang Shen: There shouldn't be anyone in the Heavenly Court with something like this. However, the Peaches of Immortality from the Queen Mother's Immortality Peach Garden's are able to

increase the duration of a mortal's life time. If you really want one, the monkey should have some. If you want peaches, he's definitely the one to go to.

Ye Zichen: Thanks.

Ye Zichen immediately opened his chat with the Monkey King after exiting the chat with Erlang Shen.

Ye Zichen: Great Sage.

Monkey King: What business do you have with Old Sun? Did you get some good treasures again? <insert a row of anticipation emojis>

Ye Zichen smiled wryly, then typed on the screen.

Ye Zichen: This little deity has a request for Great Sage.

Monkey King: Go on.

Ye Zichen: I wonder if Great Sage has any Peaches of Immortality from the Immortality Peach Garden?

Silence.

Ye Zichen felt a bit anxious when he saw that the Monkey King

had suddenly stopped replying.

Elder Su needed the Peaches of Immortality to extend his life.

After a long time, the Monkey King finally replied with a message that turned Ye Zichen completely speechless.

Monkey King: How did you know that Old Sun has some Peaches of Immortality? Did the news of Old Sun stealing peaches get leaked?

The f*ck, he stole peaches again.

The Monkey King had stolen peaches from the Immortality Peach Garden in Journey to the West.

He didn't think much of it when he was younger, but after growing up, everyone started to make fun of the Monkey King.

Who was the lamest person in Journey to the West!?

Answer: Sun Wukong.

As for the reason...

He had managed to freeze the all fairies of the Immortality Peach Garden, but he didn't do anything except going in to eat peaches!

Thinking about that, Ye Zichen had a thought.

If he could learn the Body Freezing Technique from the Great Sage...

Zeze, then wouldn't he be amazing.

Wait, no, his purpose was to ask for a Peach of Immortality.

However, Ye Zichen felt a bit shameless, so he couldn't help but ask.

Ye Zichen: Did you freeze the fairy again?

Monkey King: How did you know!? <insert several shocked emojis>

F*ck, he's truly lame!

Ye Zichen mocked the Monkey King several times in his heart. However, what the Monkey King had said did reveal that the Great Sage did indeed have Peaches of Immortality.

Ye Zichen: Don't care about how this little deity found out. Great Sage, can you give this little deity a Peach of Immortality?

Monkey King: Old Sun, I, didn't steal much, this is a rare good.

The underlying meaning was that Ye Zichen should exchange for it with his 'sincerity'.

Ye Zichen: Great Sage, this little deity needs the Peach of Immortality desperately. As for the item of exchange, wait for this little deity to go back before sending it to Great Sage.

Monkey King: Then what are you using to exchange for it?

Ye Zichen: Two rows of Wahaha.

Monkey King: And two cup noodles.

Ye Zichen: Deal.

Dingdong.

The Monkey King sent a red packet over the moment he sent the news.

Damn.

You received the Monkey King's red packet.

Peach of Immortality x1

Ye Zichen clicked open the Treasure Chest and read the Peach of Immortality's effects.

Peach of Immortality: A 500 years old Peach of Immortality from the Queen Mother's Immortality Peach Garden.

Effects: Improve health and lengthen lifespans. Increases lifetime by 20 years.

Ye Zichen finally stopped worrying after seeing that.

He already found the thing he needed to increase a person's lifetime, the remaining thing was to return the soul to the body.

Ye Zichen thought about it for a while, then decided to ask the Great Sage just in case.

Ye Zichen: Great Sage, do you have anything that can return the soul to the body?

Monkey King: Nope, but if you want something like that, you'll have to find Old Lord Taishang. That old brat's Nine Reincarnation Soul Pill is a pill to return the soul to the body. But that old Daoist might not give it to you.

Old Lord Taishang!

Ye Zichen sighed in his heart.

Actually, he already thought about how Old Lord Taishang would have something to return the soul to the body, but he didn't add Old Lord Taishang as a friend yet.

He had only added three people from the group: Yue Lao, Erlang Shen and the Monkey King.

What's more, they had taken the initiative and added him, and their intimacy level were all above Friendly.

If he wanted the Nine Reincarnation Soul Pill, he had to take the initiative this time and add Old Lord Taishang as friend.

Nobody knew what was their intimacy level...

Ye Zichen thought about it, then sent a message of thanks to the Monkey King. He immediately replied with a message that told him to hurry up and send the treasures over before the two stopped chatting.

Ye Zichen opened the member list of the WeChat group and clicked on Old Lord Taishang's icon.

To add or not to add, that is the question.

Ye Zichen thought about his bet with Su Qiuhu and Elder Su, who

was floating behind him.

He made his decision.

Add.

Dingdong.

I have accepted your friend request. Now let's chat!

Accepted.

Ye Zichen immediately glanced at the intimacy level.

Cold.

Old Lord Taishang: ?

Ye Zichen had never met any deities that would send just a symbol.

He gulped, then bravely sent a message.

Ye Zichen: Old Lord Taishang, this little deity has a request to beg of you.

Old Lord Taishang: ?

It was another f*cking question mark.

It seems like this Old Lord Taishang was pretty cold.

However, if Ye Zichen recalled at the intimacy level of cold, he could understand there wasn't anything else the other person could reply him with.

If Old Lord Taishang was any more intimate, the intimacy level wouldn't be cold.

Ye Zichen: I want to ask Old Lord Taishang for a celestial pill.

Old Lord Taishang: What pill?

Ye Zichen: Nine Reincarnation Soul Pill.

There were no more replies.

Even though Ye Zichen waited ten minutes, Old Lord Taishang did not send any reply.

It truly was as the Monkey King had said. This pill was definitely rather valuable, so Old Lord Taishang was reluctant to give it out.

Ye Zichen sent another message with the mindset of just giving it a shot.

Ye Zichen: Old Lord, is that alright?

Old Lord Taishang: What is your celestial title? Why have I never heard of you?

It's finally here.

Ye Zichen's heart jumped.

That was exactly what he was worried about. Celestial title, how could he have any celestial title.

Ye Zichen let out a long sigh, then got ready to show off.

Ye Zichen: I am Erlang Shen's brother and am good friends with Yue Lao.

Old Lord Taishang: Oh? <insert three shocked emojis>

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Old Lord Taishang increased by 20.
Current intimacy level: Cold.

Bringing people up truly was good.

It seemed like the Heavenly Court was more or less the same with the mortal realm. As long as you would bring people up every now and then, everyone are good friends.

Ye Zichen beat the iron while it was hot after seeing a sliver of hope.

Ye Zichen: Old Lord, if you don't believe it, then you can ask. As for my celestial title, this little deity would really find it inconvenient to say it.

Old Lord Taishang: Oh.

Old Lord Taishang did not even reply him after ten-odd minutes.

Just as Ye Zichen was getting impatient...

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Old Lord Taishang increased by 80.
Current intimacy level: Friendly.

Ye Zichen nearly jumped up in excitement after seeing this message.

It's Friendly now.

According to his experience dealing with these deities. As long as the intimacy level was friendly, his false identity would definitely not be seen through.

Most importantly, the chance has come!

Chapter 62 – White Impermanence Wants To Add His Wechat

Ye Zichen did not immediately go and message Old Lord Taishang after receiving the news of their intimacy level rising.

Being in such a hurry would not end up in business. Ye Zichen was sure that Old Lord Taishang would take the initiative in contacting him.

It was as he had expected. The other side sent him a message only several tens of seconds later.

Old Lord Taishang: Fellow Daoist, I chatted with Yue Lao for a bit just now. You didn't get anxious from waiting, right?

See? His attitude completely changed.

Ye Zichen: Not too much. I was merely wondering about Old Lord Taishang's Nine Reincarnation Soul Pill...

Old Lord Taishang: The pill is definitely there, it's just that...

Ye Zichen: Old Lord, just say whatever you want to say directly.

Old Lord Taishang: I heard that fellow daoist gave Yue Lao a box of Yuxi.

Old people like these were truly more interested in stuff like cigarettes.

Ye Zichen: This little deity can use cigarettes to exchange a pill from Old Lord.

Old Lord Taishang: Okay, but I want five boxes.

Five boxes!

Ye Zichen laughed.

That geezer sure was black-hearted enough. Ye Zichen had merely given Yue Lao two boxes of Yuxi in total.

However, it's alright. Ye Zichen wasn't afraid of him being greedy, he was afraid of him not wanting anything for Ye Zichen to trade.

A business transaction could be made when there were needs.

Ye Zichen: Alright.

Old Lord Taishang: Send it.

Ye Zichen: Wait a moment.

Ye Zichen let out a long sigh, then put his phone into his pocket before walking to the Black Impermanence's side.

Ye Zichen was definitely a dangerous person in Black Impermanence's eyes.

When he saw Ye Zichen walk over, he instantly cried once more, "Big bro, what do you want with me now?"

Ye Zichen reached out his hand to grab Black Impermanence's arms and snorted.

"I have to go out shortly. I'm not fine with you staying here, so you're coming with me."

The Su family and a lot of experts from the hospital were waiting outside the operation room.

If Ye Zichen really could save Elder Su, then it would be a miracle in the history of medicine.

Although nobody thought that Ye Zichen could actually succeed, they did hope that they would hear good news.

Crack.

The door to the operation room opened. Ye Zichen was holding

something in front of him with his right hand and walked out from the operation room.

“Ye-zi, how is it?”

Su Yiyun was the first to rush over. Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and looked at everyone, “I need five boxes of cigarettes.”

“I’ll go and buy them immediately.”

“I’ll also need a juicer and a small cup.”

“I’ll buy everything for you in one go.”

With that, Su Yiyun ran outside from the operation room. Ye Zichen sat down on a chair to rest his eyes while maintaining the grabbing action with his right hand.

“Brat, what sort of tricks are you trying to pull!?”

Su Qihu walked over with a glare. Ye Zichen opened his eyes and raised his eyebrows, “Don’t care about what sort of tricks I pull, isn’t it fine as long as I can save him?”

Save him.

Could the things just now be used for saving Elder Su?

All of the doctors were shocked. They had never heard of how saving people required cigarettes and juicers after many years of being a doctor.

A light flashed across Deng Chen's eye as he asked with suspicion, "Little fellow, are you sure that you're not kidding?"

Ye Zichen had a decent impression of Deng Cheng, because Deng Chen did not have the usual prideful airs of people in high positions, and because Deng Chen was very friendly.

Ye Zichen nodded towards him and smiled, "Of course I'm not kidding. It's just that my method of treatment is different from yours."

Deng Chen stopped asking questions. Meanwhile, Su Yan stood at a close distance looking at Ye Zichen, while biting her lips.

It was very hard for her to describe her feelings towards Ye Zichen at that moment.

Thanks, admiration...

She wasn't sure.

Merely half an hour later, Su Yiyun hurried back with a carton of Zhonghua and a juicer over,

“Ye-zi.”

Su Yiyun looked at Ye Zichen in anticipation after he handed over what Ye Zichen needed.

Ye Zichen laughed softly, “I can definitely save the old man.”

Bang.

The door to the operation room closed once again.

Ye Zichen casually threw Black Impermanence to the corner and opened the row of cigarettes. He scanned it and directly sent it to Old Lord Taishang.

Dingdong.

Old Lord Taishang received your red packet.

Dingdong.

You received Old Lord Taishang’s red packet.

Nine Reincarnation Soul Pill x1

Old Lord Taishang was a honest person, so he directly sent the pill over after receiving Ye Zichen's red packet.

Ye Zichen: Thank you, Old Lord Taishang.

Old Lord Taishang: There is no need for thanks, it's just business.

Old Lord Taishang was clearly very rational.

Ye Zichen took a look at the intimacy level that didn't change. It seems like it wasn't going to be that simple to increase his intimacy level with Old Lord Taishang.

As expected of the Three Pure Ones!

However, that didn't matter, what mattered was that he had the pill.

Ye Zichen opened his WeChat Treasure Chest and withdrew the Peach of Immortality as well as the Nine Reincarnation Soul Pill.

A huge peach the size of seven or eight normal peaches instantly appeared in Ye Zichen's hand, alongside a black pill.

"Lil' Ye, this..."

Elder Su was a bit stunned. On the other hand, Liu Jing was no

longer surprised, but the first time she saw this, her reaction as about the same as Elder Su's.

“Elder Su, this is my secret. I hope you won't tell other people.”

Ye Zichen had a serious look in his eyes.

Elder Su nodded understandingly, “This old man knows what should be said, and what shouldn't be.”

Ye Zichen stopped worrying after hearing Elder Su's steadfast reply.

“Then let's start returning the soul to the body.”

Ye Zichen placed the Nine Reincarnation Soul Pill into Elder Su's mouth in order to call his soul back, then squeezed out the juices of the Peach of Immortality for Elder Su.

Ten-odd minutes later...

Ye Zichen pushed open the door of the operation room and walked out tiredly.

He arrived in front of Su Qihu under everyone's gaze and stared straight into Su Qihu's eyes, “Don't forget our promise.”

Zoom.

Everybody outside the operation room rushed into it. Only Su Yan stood in the doorway as her tears flowed uncontrollably.

“Ye Zichen, thank you.”

When Ye Zichen left the hospital, it was already early in the morning. There were very few cars on the streets.

Ye Zichen walked on the streets alone as the road lights extended his shadow.

“Ye Zichen, that guy seems to be following us the entire time.”

Liu Jing, who was beside him, twitched her mouth. Ye Zichen turned around and saw White Impermanence following him.

“Is something the matter?”

Ye Zichen stopped and watched White Impermanence swishing her sleeves around, trying to express something that he could not comprehend.

“Just say whatever it is.”

Ye Zichen felt that White Impermanence was rather pitiful. She

had a husband that would flirt around outside, but she didn't dare to say anything about it. What's more, she even had to endure domestic violence.

He didn't know whether the Underworld had marriage laws, but if the couple were here, a simple piece of paper would allow her to sue Black Impermanence in the court.

White Impermanence hesitated for a long time, then slowly walked towards Ye Zichen.

“Uhhh, can I add you on WeChat?”

Suddenly, a phone appeared in White Impermanence's hand.

Ye Zichen subconsciously took a glance at it.

A knockoff.

Ye Zichen smiled after seeing this. So the Heavenly Court and the Underworld also used phones.

All of a sudden, a new business opportunity surfaced in Ye Zichen's mind.

Chapter 63 – Taibai Jinxing Sought Him Out

“Ye Zichen, she wants to add your WeChat!”

Ye Zichen was only able to react when Liu Jing, who was above him, shouted. He smiled coyly and said, “Ahh, sorry, I was lost in thought just now.”

Ye Zichen smiled softly after adding White Impermanence as his friend on WeChat, “You have to act stronger when you’re with Black Impermanence in the future. If he dares to bully you anymore, then just WeChat me. Just watch how I deal with him.”

“Mhmm,” With that, White Impermanence disappeared.

Not long after she left, Ye Zichen’s phone buzzed. It was a message from White Impermanence.

White Impermanence: Thank you.

“Hey, say, you really are good at chatting up girls. Humans are one thing, but you’re not letting ghosts get away either.”

Liu Jing revealed a face of disdain towards him. Hearing that, Ye Zichen couldn’t help but chuckle, “Do you think there’s something wrong with me? Chat her up? If I really wanted to chat up a ghost, I should chat you up shouldn’t I? You’re cute and are always by my side.”

“Tsk, only a ghost requires your chatting up.”

With that, Liu Jing went back into the Dragon Eye.

Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile, then took out the Dragon Eye from his pocket and laughed playfully, “Aren’t you a ghost!”

...

The next morning, Ye Zichen looked at his phone after washing up, and saw that it was full of messages of thanks from Su Yiyun.

There was also a message of receiving payment.

It was two million.

Ye Zichen didn’t need to think too much about it. Only Su Yiyun’s father would be able to hand that much out in one go.

Actually, Ye Zichen did have a bit of selfish intent when he chose to save Elder Su. This caused him to feel kind of guilty when he saw that someone had giving him such a huge red packet.

Dingdong.

Your trial of the Fiery Eyes of Truth (Level 1) has 72 hours of time remaining.

What the hell?

Ye Zichen looked at the reminder on WeChat.

Fiery Eyes of Truth trial time.

Stop messing around, the sole reason why he had been able to do so much was due to the Fiery Eyes of Truth.

It didn't say trial when it was first taken from the Great Sage at the time, why did it randomly turn into a trial. What's more, there's only three f*cking days left.

Dingdong.

Taibai Jinxing @ you in the chat group.

Ye Zichen instantly became confused.

What did Taibai Jinxing @ him for in the group?

Ye Zichen opened the WeChat group, and could only be shocked when he saw that the group had already exploded.

Erlang Shen, Monkey King, Yue Lao etc. all appeared in response to his being @.

The Sky Canopy General, God of Thunder, Mother of Lightning and Immortality Peach Fairy all started to watch the show.

Erlang Shen: Geezer, what did you @ my bro for?

Monkey King: Geezer, what did you @ my good friend for?

Erlang Shen: @Monkey King, my bro is a good friend of yours?

Monkey King: @Erlang Shen, you said that my good friend is your bro!

The flaming had begun!

Although those two people had started flaming, Ye Zichen's heart turned cold after seeing Taibai Jinxing @ him.

Taibai Jinxing: @Only Idealism, add me as a friend.

Ye Zichen didn't react after seeing that. He didn't do anything. Why the hell did this geezer want to add him as a friend?

He was been a standard lurker after he entered the group. The only time that he wasn't was when he turned on Erlang Shen impulsively, but in the end, they managed to settle their differences and swore to be brothers.

Why!

At this moment, Taibai Jinxing @ Ye Zichen once again.

F*ck.

Could he have been found out?

Fortune was not going to be trouble. He'll add him.

I have accepted your friend request. Let's chat!

The first thing Ye Zichen did was look at the intimacy level.

100.

Friendly.

Aiyo, friendly.

Ye Zichen instantly smiled. At the same time, Taibai Jinxing also sent him a message.

Taibai Jinxing: Do you know what I found you for?

Ye Zichen: This little deity doesn't know.

Taibai Jinxing: Are you sure you're a little deity? <insert several snicker emojis>

The hand Ye Zichen was holding the phone with quickly trembled, while Ye Zichen nearly chucked the phone away.

Taibai Jinxing knew that he wasn't someone from the Heavenly Court.

Ye Zichen: I don't understand Great Deity Taibai's meaning.

Taibai Jinxing: Stop pretending, I know your identity.

Ye Zichen's heart instantly felt cold, this geezer actually knew his identity. Then what was Taibai Jinxing finding him for? Was the geezer going to directly kick him out of the group?

If that's really the case, then there was no need to add him as friend.

Just directly kick him.

What's more, their intimacy level was Friendly.

Taibai Jinxing: Don't be nervous, I won't do anything to you.

Could you have forgotten how you came to this group? I invited you in.

Ye Zichen was stunned upon seeing that, then tried to carefully remember the situation when he just entered the group.

He really did seem to be invited into this group by Taibai Jinxing.

Ye Zichen: What do you want?

Taibai Jinxing: Hehe. <insert three snicker emojis> You added the WeChat of a ghost servant of the Underworld, right?

Ye Zichen: Yeah.

Taibai Jinxing: I'm going to give you a mission. If you accept, then I won't kick you out of the group and will give you a celestial title so that you can be like fish in water within the group. How's that?

To be honest, Ye Zichen had been suspicious of how he entered this group.

He had randomly been added into a deities' group, and started to snatch red packets from deities. This was definitely something akin to a free lunch from heaven.

Such a huge lunch could crush a person.

He had thought that there was a trap at the start. Alright, there really was a f*cking trap.

Ye Zichen: Great Deity Taibai, I'm just a mere mortal, what can I do?

Taibai Jinxing: Hehe, you don't seem to understand your own situation too well. But no worries, you'll slowly understand.

What did that mean?

What? Was he the reincarnation of a deity?

Isn't that bullshit?

At that moment, Taibai Jinxing sent another message.

Taibai Jinxing: Are you accepting it or not. Decide promptly, I'm very busy.

Ye Zichen licked his lips. Even if he knew that what there was a huge trap following this free lunch, he wasn't willing to easily give it up.

Ye Zichen: What is it?

Taibai Jinxing: Enter the inner circle of the Underworld. Tell me what actions the Underworld has at all times.

Spy.

Ye Zichen instantly understood, this geezer wanted him to be a spy.

He carefully considered it, he really didn't seem to notice anyone from the Underworld within the Heavenly Court's group.

Could the Underworld and the Heavenly Court had their relationship soured?

No wonder, then it seems like Taibai Jinxing had planned all this when he asked whether Ye Zichen had added a ghost servant as friend.

Ye Zichen: Then what benefits are in it for me?

Taibai Jinxing: As a mere mortal, isn't the ability to snatch red packets and earn treasures from both the Heavenly Court and Underworld a benefit already?

This crafty old fox.

However, Taibai Jinxing sent another message very quickly.

Taibai Jinxing: Of course, I can't possibly make you do it for free. How is it, are you accepting it?

Ye Zichen thought about it.

Taibai Jinxing wanted him to enter the inner circle of the Underworld to be a spy.

During so, he could publicly chat, brag, add friends and increase intimacy level in the Heavenly Court's group.

This seems to be a deal in which he wouldn't lose anything.

At that moment, he wasn't able to think of any kind of dangers. However, if he really notices any danger, then wasn't it fine for him to directly quit?

When that happens, he would have earned so much already.

Who cares about some stupid deities!

Ye Zichen clenched his teeth and replied Taibai Jinxing.

"I accept."

Chapter 64 – Treasure Shop

That old geezer, Taibai Jinxing, was definitely an old fox in the Heavenly Court.

He had a complete grasp of Ye Zichen's thoughts. Thus, Ye Zichen accepting it under the combination of his combination of threats and offers was all within his expectations.

Taibai Jinxing: Since you've accepted, then we have an agreement.

Dingdong.

A red packet immediately followed after he sent the message.

You received Taibai Jinxing's red packet.

Celestial Number: 1365

Celestial Name: Sky Sovereign Nameless (Cultivation Experience: 0, Level 1 Celestial Official)

Residence: 137 Willow Stone Alley, Thirty-Seventh Heaven

Taibai Jinxing: This is your identity in the group from now on, Sky Sovereign Nameless. Let me tell you, the Thirty-Seventh Heaven is a place only great deities can stay. You have to use your

identity well.

Taibai Jinxing said it like it was something amazing. However, Ye Zichen merely twitched his mouth.

So what if Taibai Jinxing gave him a residence in the Ninety-Ninth Heaven to live with the Jade Emperor and the Queen Mother?

Can a mere mortal like him actually go there!

In other words, it's completely useless for him.

Ye Zichen: You might as well give me some actual things instead.

Taibai Jinxing: One moment.

Dingdong.

Another red packet appeared on the screen. Ye Zichen quickly opened it.

You received Taibai Jinxing's red packet.

Cultivation Experience x3000

Ugh.

Ye Zichen nearly coughed up blood.

What the hell? Perhaps cultivation experience is actually useful for those deities?

But what does that have to do with him?

Ye Zichen: Can you give me something of actual use?

Taibai Jinxing: Don't think that it's not enough. A high cultivation experience allows you to raise your official rank in the Heavenly Court. That would only be beneficial towards you. What's more, this cultivation experience has way too many uses for you. Go and figure it out yourself.

Ye Zichen: ...

Taibai Jinxing: Don't be speechless, you will only beg me to give you cultivation experience in the future. Remember, get into the Underworld group as quick as possible.

Then, Taibai Jinxing irresponsibly left. Ye Zichen could only feel helpless towards all that.

He opened the Celestial Plate within his Treasure Chest with a sigh.

Celestial Plate: Sky Sovereign Nameless (Cultivation Experience: 3000, Level 3 Celestial Official)

What the hell is the use of this!

Ye Zichen really didn't want to retort about it, what use was it for him even if he was promoted to a Level 100 Celestial Official?

Immortality?

Never aging?

Or could he truly rise to become a deity and go to the Heavenly Court?

Ignoring the fact that he can't, even if he could, he wouldn't want to go.

Just as he wanted to close WeChat, he suddenly noticed that a new function appeared beside the Treasure Chest.

Treasure Shop!

Ye Zichen clicked open the Treasure Shop curiously, then bolted up from the chair.

He understood.

This cultivation experience was truly of too much use of him.

There were ten-odd pages full of items in it. Behind each of them was the cultivation experience that was required in order to exchange for it.

Ye Zichen clicked on “Misc Items.”

The Third Prince Nezha’s love letter.

Proof of the Ox Demon King’s adultery.

Megrez’s report.

Most terrifyingly...

There was also the fairy Chang’e’s underwear.

All of these things that didn’t seem to be of any actual use required astronomical amounts to exchange for them.

Items!

Heavenly Court dog food.

Heavenly Court plants.

Heavenly Court vegetables.

All of them were items that were labeled as “Heavenly Court” items. In comparison, these required a lower amount to exchange for them.

They ranged from several tens of cultivation experience to several hundred cultivation experience.

It was something that he could accept with his current amount of cultivation experience.

Then he clicked open the secret scripture types!

Secret Scripture of the Fiery Eyes of Truth (Level 1). Required amount: 1,000,000 cultivation experience. (The Level 2 secret scripture can be purchased after its purchase)

Secret Scripture of the Body Freezing Technique (Level 1). Required amount: 1,000,000 cultivation experience. (The Level 2 secret scripture can be purchased after its purchase)

Secret Scripture of the Seventy-Two Transformations (Level 1).

Old Lord Taishang's special medical book (Book 1)

Secret Scripture of Megrez's Photographic Memory.

“Such a sly old fox,” Ye Zichen couldn't help but swear. He didn't have to guess to know that the old guy was responsible for removing his Fiery Eyes of Truth.

Then the old guy brought up a bunch of crappy secret scriptures here for him to exchange.

So smart.

Ye Zichen felt a bit of admiration for that geezer, Taibai Jinxing.

Dingdong.

Your Fiery Eyes of Truth (Level 1) has 71 hours of trial time remaining.

The system sounded out once again. This time, the corner of Ye Zichen's mouth raised.

You want to take back my Fiery Eyes of Truth, right? Then I'll use enough of it first.

Within three days, Ye Zichen took Xiao Yumei and swept across

countless Ore Auctions. Since the amount he bought was far too much, he even received several hundred million of funds from Xiao Hai.

However, Ye Zichen did not lose anything from the stones that he bought, despite buying in such large quantities.

From that point onwards, Ye Zichen got a new title in the circles.

Stone God Ye Zichen.

Dingdong.

The trial period for your Fiery Eyes of Truth (Level 1) has ended. The secret scripture is retracted.

Ye Zichen finally relaxed after getting this message. He didn't waste any of the seventy something hours he had remaining for the Fiery Eyes of Truth. He turned towards Xiao Yumei, who was beside him...

To be honest, although Xiao Yumei was a beautiful woman, she was definitely a strong woman when working.

Within the three days, she had continuously stayed by Ye Zichen's side as they bought stones.

Ye Zichen was nearly dead from exhaustion, yet she didn't feel

any fatigue at all.

“Zichen, where are we going next?”

“Nowhere, we have enough jade in our hands. Let’s leave some chances for other people,” Ye Zichen sighed unenergetically.

Seeing his tired look, Xiao Yumei kissed him on his lips, “You’ve been troubled. Hurry up and rest.”

“Then what about you?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrow. However, Xiao Yumei giggled excitedly, “I have to process all this jade as fast as possible. Our jewelry shop can definitely expand several times with these jade.”

Ye Zichen shook his head and smiled helplessly, “You’ve been tired out these few days too. Just rest properly before going. What’s more, you don’t need to watch over the jade processing in person.”

Xiao Yumei reached out her hands, hook it around Ye Zichen’s neck and smiled, “I’ll send you back to rest first. As for me, you don’t need to mind.”

Ye Zichen could only sigh helplessly towards this and nod in agreement.

Xiao Yumei drove away hurriedly after sending Ye Zichen back to the entrance of the mansion’s compound.

Ye Zichen rubbed his hurting temples. At that moment, his phone rang. Ye Zichen couldn't help but smile wryly when he took a look at the caller ID. It seems like he isn't going to be able to rest.

Within a family restaurant half an hour later.

Su Yiyun had wanted to take Ye Zichen to a larger club, but Ye Zichen didn't have any interest in playing in his current condition, so they just settled down in a normal restaurant.

“Ye-zi, thank you so much for my grandpa.”

Su Yiyun raised his beer glass. Ye Zichen raised his own and touched Su Yiyun's beer glass with it and shrugged, “It was no big deal. How is Old Man Su recently?”

“Don't mention it, his body is indescribably good. Oh yeah, my grandpa said that he wants to treat you to a meal later, don't refuse it.”

“I won't, as for you...” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in annoyance. “You were actually siblings with the goddess Su Yan, you hid it pretty well.”

“Hahaha...”

Su Yiyun laughed loudly. Then, all of a sudden, he stopped and

raised his eyebrow, “Ye-zi, do you feel that beauty over there looks rather familiar?”

Chapter 65 – Reincarnation Of A Deity?

A girl that could cause a young master like Su Yiyun, who barely went to school each week, to recognize her, was definitely a beauty on the level of a school beauty.

Ye Zichen looked over and was shocked.

Sun Yige.

“Boss Sun, it’s time to pay.”

There were a few delinquent-looking teenagers. The one in the lead was one with red hair, who had a few ear holes on his ear. From the tone of his voice as he stood outside the restaurant, it seemed like he had come to ask for protection fees.

“Yang-ge, didn’t we just pay it last week?” The middle-aged man, who was wearing an apron, beside Sun Yige replied. He was clearly an honest person from first glance.

“Hmm? I came to receive the money last week?” the red hair raised his eyebrows and said with disdain in his eyes. “Hurry up and give me the money, I still have to get it from the next shop after getting it from you guys.”

“We just paid it last week. Why are you guys asking for it again? This is too much!” Sun Yige couldn’t help but speak up. It was clear how much courage she mustered up to speak to a group of

delinquents with her cowardly and introverted personality.

“Isn’t older brother caring for you? Otherwise, I won’t always come. How about this, come with older brother...” the red hair reached out his hand with a lecherous gaze and grabbed towards Sun Yige’s chin.

Bang.

Before his hand touched Sun Yige, the red hair directly sat onto the floor after getting kicked in the stomach.

“If you want to care for someone, then go home and care for your mom.”

“Ye Zichen, why are you here?” a joyous look surfaced in Sun Yige’s eyes.

Meanwhile, the subordinates behind the red hair all wanted to rush up when they saw their big bro get hit.

“All of you f*cking stop,” the red hair, who was sitting on the ground, scolded, causing his subordinates to stop.

“Young-Young Master Ye,” the red hair walked over respectfully. Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then looked at the red hair with his hands in his pockets. “You know me?”

“Young Master Ye, I was there when you were teaching the baldie a lesson at the barbeque store,” dense droplets of sweat started to form on the red hair’s forehead as he started to speak.

The baldie was somewhat of an amazing person in their circle, but what had happened to him? He got his four limbs broken by Ye Zichen.

He was just a lackey under his big bro. He was nothing in front of someone of Young Master Ye’s level.

Ye Zichen nodded after hearing that, then glared at the red hair, “Then you know what to do now?”

“Young Master Ye, I follow Da-ge, can you give him face?” the red hair gulped after hearing Ye Zichen’s words.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen frowned a bit impatiently, “Don’t mention people with me. Nobody is of use when it comes to me. Do you want to do it yourself? Or do you want me to do it?”

“I’ll do it myself, Young Master Ye. It’s fine by myself,” the red hair clenched his teeth and placed his arm to the ground, then shouted at a nearby subordinate. “Hit it.”

“Big bro.”

“I’m telling you to hit it,” the red hair revealed a savage expression. Seeing that, the subordinate beside him picked up a

baseball bat and smashed down on his arm.

Crack.

The red hair grunted. After a long while, the red hair stood up once again and gave a forceful smile, “Young Master Ye, are you satisfied?”

“Screw off, you’re not allowed to come collect protection fees from this shop.”

Hearing that, the red hair immediately ran away with his subordinates as if he was let off big time.

On the side, the Sun father and daughter were shocked. Ye Zichen also smiled lightly towards them and returned to Su Yiyun’s table.

“Ye-zi, saving a beauty as a hero in front of me isn’t that good, right?” Su Yiyun teased playfully the moment Ye Zichen returned to the table.

Ye Zichen smiled helplessly towards her and said, “That’s our class’s class rep, Sun Yige, I merely helped her out. How did it become me saving a beauty?”

“Sun Yige? One of the four school beauties alongside my younger sister?”

Ye Zichen nodded without denying anything. When he saw this, Su Yiyun smiled understandingly, “No wonder, I was saying why she looked familiar.”

“Man slut,” Ye Zichen laughed. At this moment, Sun Yige walked to their table and gave them a dish.

“This is something my father gave you guys.”

Ye Zichen didn’t think that this shop belonged to Class Rep Sun’s family.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

The school net had already said that Class Rep Sun was the only civilian beauty out of the four school beauties.

He didn’t think that it was true.

Su Yiyun looked coyly towards Ye Zichen when he saw Sun Yige walk over. Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in annoyance, then stood up to receive the dish, “Thank you, Class Rep Sun.”

“You’re welcome,” Sun Yige blushed and answered carefully. “It should be me that thanks you. Thank you for chasing those people away just now.”

“Ha, that sort of people only bully the weak, and are afraid when you oppose them forcefully. If you immediately smashed him on the head with a beer bottle, see if he dares to come over to get protection fees again,” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth.

Hearing that, Sun Yige immediately shook her head, “That isn’t good. We have to compensate him if we hurt him.”

Ye Zichen was not surprised by Sun Yige’s answer at all. Someone with her weak personality would definitely have this sort of thought.

Ye Zichen thought about it, then decided not to teach her any more delinquent ideas. He merely shrugged, “Then alright.”

“Mhmm,” Sun Yige rubbed the corners of her clothes with both of her hands as she blushed. “Oh yeah, I haven’t seen you in class recently, why...”

“Oh, I had some business these two days. I’ll definitely go back to class tomorrow.”

“Okay, then keep chatting, I’ll be leaving.”

“Take care, Class Rep Sun,” Ye Zichen sat back down onto the chair as he waved towards Sun Yige.

The moment Ye Zichen sat back down, Su Yiyun whistled towards him, “This School Beauty Sun is truly not bad.”

“Don’t have any bad thoughts about her. She’s not from the same world as you.”

Ye Zichen placed the dish that he just received onto the table and said, “Hurry up and eat it. I’ve been tired out like a dog these few days. I want to hurry back to go to sleep.”

The two of them finished and left from the small restaurant ten odd minutes after Ye Zichen’s hurry.

Sun Yige, who had been helping in the shop, watched the two people leave and bit her lips. Then she took out a pen from her pocket and wrote down Ye Zichen’s name on a notebook.

Ye Zichen was truly tired out after running around for a few days. He went back to his room to sleep after chatting with Ye Rong a bit when he got back to the mansion.

Nothing was said the entire night.

“Ye Zichen, quickly wake up.”

Ye Zichen heard someone call out to him beside his ear, while his mind and vision was still blurred. The familiar tone caused him to feel a bit speechless.

Liu Jing.

This master started to harm him again so early in the morning.

Ye Zichen suddenly sat up on the bed, just as he wanted to discuss with her about sleeping for half an hour more.

That's not right, weren't the Fiery Eyes of Truth retracted?

Ye Zichen opened his eyes and saw Liu Jing float in front of him with a face full of anger. She placed her hands on her waist and scolded, "You finally know how to get up? Do you know what time it is?"

Ye Zichen rubbed his eyes with force...

He could see her.

He rubbed his eyes again.

He really could see her.

Gulp.

Ye Zichen felt a bit frantic, he...

Suddenly thought of the words Taibai Jinxing said to him back then.

You don't seem to understand your own situation too well. But no worries, you'll slowly come to understand.

Could it be that he was truly the reincarnation of a deity!?

Chapter 66 – The Truth Shall Be Revealed

Ye Zichen was a bit confused as he looked at the students in front of him.

The Fiery Eyes of Truth had indeed been taken away. This was something he knew without a doubt. Ye Zichen deliberately stared at the passing schoolmates in order to prove this.

He could see different colored underwear before, but he couldn't then.

Ye Zichen looked up. He could still see Liu Jing.

That's weird.

Ye Zichen commented in his heart. At this moment, Liu Jing also floated in front of him and pouted, "Why did you start looking at me like that since earlier this morning?"

"No, how can you still talk to me?"

"Then why can't I talk to you?"

Liu Jing rolled her eyes. Ye Zichen rubbed his temples, seriously...

"Ye Zichen."

A soft voice suddenly called out behind him. Ye Zichen turned around and saw Sun Yige standing behind him with a smile.

Ye Zichen gave Liu Jing a cue for her to float upwards, then smiled towards Sun Yige, “Class Rep Sun.”

“Thank you so much for yesterday,” Sun Yige bit her lips as she dipped her head and thanked him.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen instantly shrugged helplessly, “Class Rep Sun, there’s no need to be so courteous, right? Have you read Water Margin? If you see injustice, then roar; make a move when you should. Just treat me as a hero from Mount Liang.”

He.

Sun Yige couldn’t help but giggle the moment Ye Zichen finished.

Her smile was like a blooming lotus flower in a pond. She was beyond beautiful, and should not be defiled.

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen was awestruck.

The smile continuously appeared in his mind. This sort of smile that could bring salvation to someone might be inerasable in his life.

“Ye Zichen!” Liu Jing, who was in midair, suddenly floated beside his ear and roared like a little lion.

This roar brought Ye Zichen back to his senses. He rolled his eyes at Liu Jing. Meanwhile, Sun Yige said with a blush, “The school anniversary is soon, you haven’t been at school these few days and haven’t’ decided on your show. You didn’t rehearse either...”

“I’ll just sing a song.”

“Sure, I’m going to rehearse now, do you want to go together?”

“Then let’s go.”

A school beauty was always the harvester of people’s line of sight in school. Ye Zichen once again enjoyed the jealous looks people of everyone as he walked with Sun Yige.

Ye Zichen thought about it carefully, it seems like three out of the four school beauties in school had been seen with him before, the only one left...

Apparently, it’s a senior from third year. It seemed like there wasn’t any chance for that to happen.

There were quite a few people that were at the rehearsal place. People were only able to go onto the stage to rehearse when the people on the stage left.

Ye Zichen decided to sit down on the chairs in the resting area when he saw the people in the front.

“Oh yeah, what song are you going to sing?”

“Later.”

“Okay, I understand.”

Sun Yige nodded and left with a light smile, while Ye Zichen started to rest his eyes as he sat on the resting area of the backstage.

“Hey.”

Ye Zichen looked up and opened his eyes when he heard the sound. Then, he closed his eyes once again after twitching his mouth in disdain after seeing the person in front of him.

“Ye Zichen, I’m calling you.”

Ye Zichen raised his hand and sighed, then crossed his legs like a big boss, while leaning back on his chair.

“Young Master Fu.”

“I heard you signed up for a show on the gala for the school anniversary?” Fu Chengming asked with an ambiguous attitude. It was no surprise to Ye Zichen that Fu Chengming knew that he also signed up for a show, since he was a student council member.

Ye Zichen shrugged without denying it, then raised his eyebrow, “Oh yeah, what instructions does Young Master Fu have? Oh yeah, I found something about you the other day. You were stripped and chunked into a park, then enjoyed both the school headlines and the city’s morning post. That felt pretty good, right? I heard that the morning post had censored it, otherwise wouldn’t have Young Master Fu gone completely famous from it?”

Fu Chengming’s face immediately darkened as his fists clenched with cracking noises.

The smile continued to remain on Ye Zichen’s face. To be honest, he was rather petty. Since the other person continuously hung on to him, if he acted too nicely, then wouldn’t he be too much of a pussy?

“Young Master Fu, what are you doing? Are you going to hit me? Come, come, hit here?”

Ye Zichen shamelessly stuck his face out. At the same time, someone from the student council called Fu Chengming’s name, causing Fu Chengming to snort, “Ye Zichen, don’t get too full of yourself, we have plenty of time.”

The resting area finally calmed down. Ye Zichen had rest for a

while longer, but the master Liu Jing popped out once again.

“Who is he? A love rival?”

“Why are you still so nosy after turning into a ghost,” Ye Zichen frowned speechlessly.

Liu Jing laughed, “I’m just curious, there was a dense smell of gunpowder just now. Zeze, he’s definitely a love rival.”

“Ugh, just treat it like I’m afraid of you.”

It was finally Ye Zichen’s turn to rehearse about an hour later.

Ye Zichen caused the entire venue to go silent with a simple “Later”.

However, what followed after the short silence was thunderous claps.

“Ye Zichen, I didn’t think that you would be so good at singing.”

Sun Yige said excitedly when Ye Zichen returned to the backstage. Ye Zichen smiled without denying anything, but his expression revealed a hint of sadness.

Ye Zichen wasn’t actually completely useless without the WeChat

group.

Yes, he was very good at singing.

He was able to pour his feelings into the song and cause anyone that heard his song to immerse themselves in it.

Actually, he wanted to apply for a music school a long long time ago.

However...

There were always regrets in life.

Buzz...

Ye Zichen's phone suddenly rang. He placed the phone beside his ear, then after a while, he hung up once again.

"Class Rep Sun, I'm going to leave first if there are no other matters."

"Okay." Sun Yige nodded, then smiled. "I'll be anticipating your performance on the school anniversary the day after tomorrow."

Ye Zichen nodded towards Sun Yige, then ran out with the quickest speed possible.

“Hey, what happened? Why so anxious?” Liu Jing sat in the front seat and asked in confusion.

Ye Zichen licked his lips and said, “Chief Liu’s wife suddenly fainted...”

“What!” Liu Jing screamed and revealed a hint of fright in her eyes. “Then why aren’t you hurrying.”

“Just how fast do you want me to go?”

Ye Zichen looked at the meter. He was already driving at 80 miles per hour on a road that had a limit of 60.

“I told you to go and help her take a look already. That’s great now, if anything really happens to her, I won’t let you off,” Liu Jing wrapped her hands together.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and did not reply, but his thoughts couldn’t be more confused.

Why was Liu Jing so worried about the situation of Chief Liu’s wife? Liu Jing had also acted like this when he mentioned Chief Liu’s heart attack.

A thought suddenly surfaced in Ye Zichen’s mind.

However, he quickly waved it away. If everything was really as he thought, then the problem was severe.

Phew.

Ye Zichen let out a sigh again, then stepped down on the pedal.

No matter what, the truth shall be revealed.

Chapter 67 – Requisitioning Your Car

Chief Liu's wife, Bai Yun, had already woken up by the time Ye Zichen arrived at their home.

“Lil' Ye, I'm so sorry, I troubled you to specifically rush over here.”

Ye Zichen sat on the living room's sofa, while Chief Liu smiled apologetically. At this moment, Bai Yun brought them some fruit.

“Lil' Ye, thank you for saving our family's Old Liu.”

“Sis is too courteous...” Ye Zichen replied with a smile. However, the hair on his back instantly stood up when he raised his head and looked at Bai Yun.

Bai Yun looked very young, since the passing of time did not leave too much of a trace on her face.

However, Ye Zichen could tell that she was deeply troubled from her eyes.

The troubles were heavy enough to crush her.

However, what truly shocked him was that, she and Liu Jing...

Looked exactly the same.

Ye Zichen turned his head with open eyes and saw that Liu Jing was pursing her lips tightly. Ye Zichen could tell the emotions that she wanted to express, but also tried hard to hide.

“Lil’ Ye,” Chief Liu called out. Hearing that, Ye Zichen came back to his senses and suppressed the shock in his heart.

Ye Zichen took out the Great Recovery Pill he had prepared from his pocket and placed it on to the table. When Chief Liu saw this jade bottle, he immediately waved it away and refused.

“Lil’ Ye, this is too valuable.”

“Liu-ge, if you don’t accept this, then you are looking down on this little bro of yours.”

“Alright.”

Ye Zichen didn’t know any medical skills, the only thing he could do here was to give Chief Liu a Great Recovery Pill.

Then, he started to leave. Before leaving, Ye Zichen sighed, “Liu-ge, sis’s yearning has clearly turned into a sickness. The Great Recovery Pill can indeed treat diseases, but it can’t treat the problems in one’s heart. If you have time, then bring sis to a therapist.”

“Ai, alright...” When Ye Zichen mentioned this, Chief Liu immediately sagged.

Ye Zichen nodded, then signaled Chief Liu that there was no need to send him back to his car.

Bang.

Ye Zichen closed the car door with force and locked it, then frowned towards Liu Jing, who was beside him, “Tell me the truth. What sort of relationship do you have with Liu-ge and his family?”

Liu Jing and Bai Yun pretty much came out of the same mold. What’s more, Ye Zichen had saw a family photo of the three people in Chief Liu’s family.

The girl in the very center of the photo was Liu Jing.

“They are my parents.”

Dong.

Ye Zichen leaned unenergetically onto the car seat and shook his head. Then he lowered the car window and helped himself light a cigarette.

“Hey, why are you like this,” Liu Jing yanked his arm after seeing Ye Zichen’s expression.

Ye Zichen was truly unsure of what to do. It was true that he was already ready to accept the trouble that will occur that would be caused when he decided to bring Liu Jing back.

However...

The daughter of the city's police chief.

This was kind of outside the range which he could accept.

Ye Zichen did have a bit of heroism, but no matter what, he was still a normal puny citizen.

Ye Zichen scratched his head, then chucked the cigarette out of the car window and leaned on his chair for a long time.

“Liu Jing, I really couldn't tell.”

“What happened?”

Liu Jing looked at him nervously. Ye Zichen, who had a serious expression until now, suddenly smiled and reached his hand out to rub her head.

“Say, if I bring you back to life and help you take revenge, just what sort of benefits would the city's police chief give me?”

Liu Jing suddenly tensed when she saw Ye Zichen's smile.

She clearly understood just how major of a promise Ye Zichen's words held. She pursed his lips and didn't answer for a long time.

Ye Zichen rubbed her head once again, "Alright now, don't worry, I won't regret it."

Ye Zichen slowly started the car with a warm smile.

Liu Jing dumbly looked at him, who was smiling, as she sat in the front seat. She had a lot of weird feelings in her heart, but the main thing was powerlessness.

If she was still alive, she might truly fall in love with him.

Ye Zichen's thoughts were very chaotic as he drove.

He did have the thought of giving up at the start, since the situation was at a level that he couldn't manage.

However, he just couldn't bear to do that.

Ye Zichen called Xiao Yumei with the wish of going over to her house, but this strong woman shut him down by telling him that she was still in a factory.

Bang bang.

Ye Zichen, who stopped by the side of the road, suddenly heard the sound of someone hitting on the window.

He rolled down the window and raised his eyebrow, “Officer Lin, what are you going? I didn’t do anything.”

“Open up, open up.”

Officer Lin’s tone was full of anxiousness. Ye Zichen looked at her and tilted his head.

“Why should I?”

Creak.

Before Ye Zichen finished, Officer Lin directly reached her hand into the car and pull opened the car door.

“Starting from now, I’m going to requisition your car. Give me your car keys.”

Requisition.

She’s on a mission?

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, and thought of the previous times when this dumb woman was opposing him.

“No, go and requisition someone else’s car. My car is way too expensive.

“I have no time to bullshit with you.”

Grab.

Officer Lin directly pulled Ye Zichen off the car, then sat down. Ye Zichen glared at her and quickly walked over to the front passenger seat, opened the car door, then sat back down.

“Get out.”

“This is my car, what right do you have to make me get off? Even if you are a police officer, you can casually take someone’s car? What you’re doing is a robbery!”

“Fine, then just sit there.”

Zoom.

Officer Lin directly stepped down on the pedal. Due to the speed, Ye Zichen was slammed onto the back of the seat. Just as he wanted to curse, he subconsciously glanced at the speedometer

when he saw the fleeting images outside the window.

200 miles per hour.

“Are you crazy!”

How the hell was this driving a car, she was clearly piloting a plane!

“Don’t disturb me, you know how fast this, right? The two of us will die together if I lose concentration even for a moment.”

Officer Lin spoke with a hint of threat. Hearing that, Ye Zichen instantly sat obediently and properly on the chair and put on his seat belt.

Fine. He submitted in front of his life.

Within ten odd minutes, the car had already left the city.

“Where are you driving me to? If we run out of petrol, there isn’t a gas station there.”

Suddenly, Officer Lin slammed down on the brakes and the car slid to a stop.

Zzzz...

Slithers of smoke floated up as the tires rubbed against the ground. Ye Zichen also was flung forward and nearly hit his head.

“Is there something wrong with you?”

“Stop talking, just stay here,” however, Officer Lin ignored his cursing and looked at him with an ice-cold stare, then took out two guns.

She loaded the guns.

Then got out of the car.

Gulp.

Ye Zichen gulped. He had played with a lot of toy guns before, but the shock was still pretty powerful when the real deal appeared in front of him.

“Take care, Officer Lin.”

Ye Zichen said his farewells to Officer Lin with a coy smile. Then, when she disappeared from his site, Ye Zichen got onto the driver’s seat and prepared to drive away.

Bang, bang.

Gunshots.

Ye Zichen's hand on the car key trembled.

F*ck, a fight started.

This was a real-life gun battle.

“No, no, I have to hurry away,” Ye Zichen muttered tremblingly. Yet, not long later, he took his hands away from the car key.

“Liu Jing, go and see what's the situation over there.”

Chapter 68 – Sense Of Justice

“Saint Maria, Jesus, Buddha, Demacia...”

Ye Zichen placed his hands in front of his chest, as he sat in the car and muttered what seemed to be like a prayer.

The gunshots were endless.

Ye Zichen’s prayers would become a bit louder every time he heard a gunshot.

F*ck, why was he so unlucky to have come over here with that dumb woman?

If he knew there was going to be a gunfight, then wouldn’t it be fine if he just had directly handed the car over?

What made him even more speechless was that he could just run away in this situation, but that tiny sense of justice within him caused him to stay.

“Ye Zichen, that woman doesn’t seem to be able to make it, hurry up and drive away,” Liu Jing slipped in through the gap left by the car window and said.

Ye Zichen looked up and asked, “What did you just say?”

“Hurry up and drive away.”

“No, the sentence before that.”

“I said that woman is nearly done for!” Liu Jing’s face was full of nervousness as she replied. “She seems to be in a gunfight with some association, but there are too many people on the other side. She is pretty accurate, it’s just that she’s all alone. From the looks of it, it’s definitely going to be completely over for her soon!”

The moment Liu Jing finished, Ye Zichen jumped out of the car.

Liu Jing immediately followed him and shouted, “What are you doing?”

“Going to save her, duh.”

“Are you crazy? Those people have guns!” Liu Jing shouted at his retreating form.

Ye Zichen took several deep breaths, and placed his hands in front of his chest to pray. Then he gulped and said, “Who cares if they have guns or not, I have to save her. Bring me over.”

Liu Jing looked at Ye Zichen’s pale face and lips, she could hear the tremble in his voice when he spoke.

She could tell that he was terrified.

However, he still chose to go and save Officer Lin.

If it was anyone else, then they might not understand. However Liu Jing understood very quickly, that's just the sort of person he was.

Ye Zichen slowly moved forward tremblingly as he hid in the bushes, while Liu Jing floated in the air to guide him.

Bang bang.

Tatata...

F*ck you!

Ye Zichen was about to piss his pants as he listened to the gunshots nearby.

Slap.

Ye Zichen slapped himself, and silently urged himself on.

Ye Zichen, you're a man. Don't be a pussy.

Finally, Ye Zichen managed to make his way through the wilderness as he prayed and gave psychological hints to himself.

When he peeked out from the bushes.

Tatata...

F*ck, what a sight.

Seven men holding light machine guns were shooting at all over the place at a place not far away, while three men had already fallen beside them.

Ye Zichen looked to the side and noticed Officer Lin's figure behind a wall.

"Why did you come?" Officer Lin had already been hit. When Ye Zichen got to her side, her clothes were already covered in blood.

"I came to fucking save you."

Ye Zichen glared at her. At that very moment, Liu Jing suddenly screamed.

"Ye Zichen, sniper!"

"What!?"

Ye Zichen was shocked, he didn't know where the bullet would

come from, so he couldn't react at all. He could only subconsciously pull Officer Lin into his arms.

Argh.

Ye Zichen grunted.

“Ye Zichen!” Liu Jing screamed out.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but smile wryly as he felt the pain on his shoulder.

This Unbreakable Body really can't stop hot weapons.

The bullet stuck precisely on Ye Zichen's shoulder blade. He endured the pain on from his shoulder, picked up Officer Lin and ran.

“Liu Jing.”

“I know.”

Since the two of them had been together for so long, they had gotten rather in tune with one another.

Ye Zichen ran towards the bush, while the ghost girl, Liu Jing, floated near the criminals and started to cause trouble.

Tatata...

As the machine guns fired, Ye Zichen also managed to use his potential at the most dangerous moment. He shot out at a speed of ten meters per second, while carrying someone.

Bang.

When Ye Zichen shut the car door, Officer Lin was already sickly pale due to the loss of blood.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes and cursed as he looked at her dying look.

“You got lucky.”

Ye Zichen opened the Treasure Chest on his WeChat and chucked a Great Recovery pill into her mouth.

At the same time, Liu Jing also floated in from the outside. The moment she entered the car, she shouted, “Hurry up and run, those guys are coming.”

Ye Zichen looked to the side and saw the some of the criminals already standing out from the pushes as she shot towards his car.

Several criminals also appeared in front of the car in order to

block it off.

F*ck!

We're doing it!

Tatata.

The bullets left a row of holes on the tempered car, while Ye Zichen held on to the steering wheel.

He stepped down on the pedal, lowered his head and rammed the car towards the criminals.

At the First People's Hospital.

Ye Zichen's shoulders bled as he carried the dying Officer Lin in his arms.

"Doctor, help."

The hospital staff quickly sent Officer Lin to the emergency room, while one of the female doctors stayed behind with a frown.

"Why are there gun wounds."

"The woman is a police captain, Officer Lin. As for me..."

Before Ye Zichen could finish, he felt a headache. Then, everything in front of him turned dark as he fell onto the floor.

On the next day.

Ye Zichen, whose shoulder was wrapped in bandages, casually ate an apple as he lay in the bed.

Ye Rong walked into the ward not long after Chief Liu and co. left. When she saw Ye Zichen's laid back appearance, she couldn't help but scold him, "You're pretty relaxed."

"Hehehehe..."

Ye Zichen laughed idiotically. Ye Rong was extremely worried when she found out that he got hurt. He also realized that he didn't think everything through properly, so he didn't dare to say too much.

"How is Officer Lin?"

"Her life shouldn't be in danger, but she is still unconscious," Ye Rong sighed lightly. Then, she couldn't help but exclaim, "Don't get involved in these sorts of situations. It's so dangerous!"

"Alright, I get it."

Ye Zichen smiled dumbly. Seeing that, Ye Rong walked out to fill up the water bottle, while acting like she really couldn't do anything about him.

Ye Zichen laid down onto the bed once again after finishing the apple.

Buzz...

The phone beside his pillow started to ring. Ye Zichen looked at the foreign number on it, then answered it with a frown.

“Ye Zichen.”

Hearing that familiar voice and gentle tone, Ye Zichen smiled.

“Class Rep Sun.”

“Mhmm, it's me,” Sun Yige sounded so gentle no matter what time it was.

“What business does Class Rep Sun have with me?” Ye Zichen smiled.

“You haven't come to school these few days. I just want to tell you that today is the school's anniversary. The gala is starting at 6, are you coming?”

Pop.

Ye Zichen sat up from the bed. He didn't think that school anniversary would arrive so soon.

He must go.

He couldn't give up this sort of chance to be in front of the entire school. He might even be able to use this great chance to flirt with a girl.

“Go, I'll definitely be there on time.”

“Then I'll wait for you.”

The door to the ward pushed open at the moment he hung up the phone. Huang Shengmei, who was wearing a white coat, walked in.

“How are you?”

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and smiled, as he thought about the school anniversary gala waving towards him, “Doctor, I want to be discharged.”

Chapter 69 – Celebrity Contest

It seemed like the doctor in front of him was that female doctor that he saw when he arrived in the hospital.

Huang Shengmei instantly frowned when she heard that he wanted to be discharged, “Stop messing around. You have a gun wound on your shoulder. The bullet was just taken out and you actually say that you want to be discharged?”

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth, “Doctor, I recovered pretty well, and don’t like this sort of place that is full of the smell of disinfectants. Just let me go.”

Huang Shengmei shook her head, “No, as your attending physician, I have to be responsible for your body. You can’t be discharged in your situation.”

Ye Zichen felt helpless. It was about to be 6. If he wasted any more time here, then he might not be able to make it to the gala.

“Doctor, seriously... I know my own condition the best. Why aren’t you letting me get discharged? Black hearted doctor! Do you just want me to be hospitalized for longer so I would have to spend more!?”

“I said you can’t be discharged, so you can’t. Just lie down and rest. I’ll be back in an hour.”

Huang Shengmei snorted and left the ward. Ye Zichen twitched his mouth as he looked at her back, then took out his phone.

16:32.

He threw his phone to the side, then squinted his eyes as he leaned back against the pillow. Then, he started to laugh.

“Liu Jing, Liu Jing...”

Liu Jing floated out from the Dragon Eye not long later and asked, “What is it?”

Ye Zichen indicated towards the door with his mouth, “Go and help me stand watch at the entrance. Tell me if my mom or that Dr. Huang Shengmei come over.”

Liu Jing nodded and floated towards the door. Ye Zichen immediately jumped onto the floor, then quickly took out his clothes from his closet and put them on.

“How is it, they aren’t outside, right?”

Ye Zichen ran over to the door sneakily.

Liu Jing couldn’t help but be shocked when she saw him get dressed, “Where are you going like this?”

“Aren’t you tell? I’m going to hospitalbreak.”

Ye Zichen stuck his head out of the ward and looked around. When he saw neither Ye Rong or Huang Shengmei were in sight, he immediately started to run.

Huang Shenmei looked down from the window in her office. All of a sudden, she saw Ye Zichen.

Bang.

She quickly pushed open the window and shouted downstairs, “Ye Zichen!”

Ye Zichen, who just reached just hospital gate, subconsciously looked up when he heard this call.

In that instant, their gazes met.

He was found out.

“Ye Zichen, get back here!”

Huang Shengmei called out from the office window.

Ye Zichen chuckled, made a face, then waved towards her, “Doctor Huang.”

“Catch him!”

Huang Shengmei shouted towards the guards downstairs. Hearing that, the surrounding guards immediately came over. Ye Zichen shrank his neck when he saw the intimidating guards, then ran out.

“This guy...”

When Ye Zichen got to the Polytechnic University, the school anniversary gala had already begun.

At that moment, the person on the stage was Fu Chengming. His show was a song as well.

His idol-like and handsome look coupled with his decent voice caused a small commotion in the crowds when he finished singing.

Meanwhile, a chair was placed on the second floor of the audience's seats, right next to the railing facing the stage. On the chair was a sunglasses-wearing man.

“Old Hu, how is it?”

The person that spoke was the chancellor of Polytechnic University, Shi Rui.

The sunglasses-wearing man smiled faintly and raised his eyebrow, "It's alright, let's see more."

Fu Chengming gave a deep bow, then left the stage.

"The next performance is also a song. Please welcome out Ye Zichen to sing "Later"!"

Fu Chengming slightly smiled as he stood underneath the stage. Ye Zichen's show was originally very far back.

However, as the vice president of the student council and the person hosting this event, it was very simple for him to change the time of a performance.

He had already gotten news that this school anniversary gala would be different from before. There was an agency that had come in order to choose artists through the students' performances.

He was very confident in his singing. He was sure that he would get selected when coupled with his looks.

As for why he put Ye Zichen behind him, he purely wanted to treat Ye Zichen as his stepping stone.

Only contrast would make him seem more excellent!

What's more, he could also use the chance to put down Ye Zichen's pride, so why wouldn't he do that?

“Ye Zichen.”

“Coming, coming.”

Ye Zichen rushed out from the backstage with a mic. However, his rash look caused the school directors to frown.

“So rash.”

“He's young, it's normal for him to be a little rash,” the sunglasses-wearing man smiled. Seeing that, the Polytechnic University dean also smiled without saying anymore.

Click.

Light shone onto Ye Zichen's face, who looked down into the crowd.

Wow.

“Riche Bro...”

“Riche Bro...”

“Riche Bro...”

The students in the audiences all shouted crazily. Ye Zichen smiled and placed his finger to his lips, “Shhhh...”

The crowd immediately turned silent.

“Not bad,” said the sunglasses wearing man suddenly. Chancellor Shi was a bit shocked, why did he say not bad before the student started singing?

“Old Shi, you are amazing at managing a school, but you are far from capable at picking out artists. This young man is very famous in your school, and is pretty good at managing the crowd. He is a good seed to become a singer.”

Snap.

Ye Zichen snapped, immediately starting the music.

Ye Zichen’s singing definitely had a magic to no one’s surprise. Thunderous claps only begun after he bowed towards the students and left the stage.

“Ye Zichen!”

“Ye Zichen!”

“Ye Zichen!”

The entire venue yelled out Ye Zichen’s name in unity. Meanwhile, Fu Chengming, who was beneath the stage, clenched his fist tightly. He never could have expected that Ye Zichen was so good at singing.

His face was extremely dark as he heard the calls in the crowd.

Stepping stone!

Just who was who’s stepping stone!

“This kid is pretty good,” the sunglasses-wearing man couldn’t help but praise.

Ye Zichen returned to the backstage during the passionate clapping.

Actually, Ye Zichen did not manage to sing to his full potential on the stage earlier due to him being slightly nervous.

He returned to the chair in the resting area while wishing for more. However, he saw Sun Yige standing there unsure of what to do. Her delicate face also showed a frown.

“Class Rep.”

Ye Zichen clapped Sun Yige on her shoulders. She immediately looked up, displaying a hint of smile in her eyes, “You came.”

“What do you mean I came? I already finished singing,” Ye Zichen was speechless.

“Finish? That’s shouldn’t be right. Your performance is clearly after mine,” Sun Yige raised her eyebrows in confusion. Hearing that, Ye Zichen also paused for a moment, but he quickly understood the situation.

It was the doing of that grandson, Fu Chengming, again.

That grandson didn’t dare to do anything on the surface, and only knew these sorts of petty tricks.

Ye Zichen cursed in his heart, but stopped caring about the issue. Then, he couldn’t help but ask when he remembered the worry on Sun Yige’s face, “What trouble did you get into?”

Sun Yige instantly frowned and mumbled, “I... The person singing with me... can’t come.

Chapter 70 – Beg Me

No wonder Sun Yige would show that sort of expression, so it's because the person singing with her couldn't come.

"Then I'll help you," Ye Zichen smiled.

"Is that really okay?" Sun Yige's eyes brightened. She had wanted to get Ye Zichen to help her, but she was rather thin-skinned, so she just couldn't say it.

Ye Zichen shrugged without denying it, "Why not? Going on the stage with Class Rep Sun is my honor."

"Then I'll be troubling you."

Ten-odd minutes later.

"School Beauty Sun, it's your turn," A student council member ran to the backstage

Sun Yige responded, then Ye Zichen also took off his earphones.

"How is it, did you manage to learn it?"

"More or less, I definitely won't lose face for you on the stage."

After that, the two of them walked onto the stage from the backstage. When Ye Zichen appeared on the stage once again, then entire venue heated up.

“Ye Zichen!”

“Riche Bro!”

“Riche Bro, I love you!”

“Ye Zichen, I want to be your girlfriend...”

“...”

Ye Zichen couldn't help but rub his nose when face with such a heated atmosphere. Why were they like that? He just sang a song!

Sun Yige, who was on the side, was also shocked by this atmosphere, causing her to stand stock-still in the same spot for a long time.

“Wow, you are so popular.”

“Hehe,” Ye Zichen scratched his head embarrassedly.

Crack.

Fu Chengming, who was standing on the stage, nearly crushed his script into a ball of scrap paper.

He looked at the threads on the school net during the time where they switched hosts.

The school net had already started to crazily post threads. All of the threads were about Ye Zichen.

Originally, he had wanted to hire some people to slander Ye Zichen a little after the event was over. However, he never would have thought that Ye Zichen would go on the stage once again.

This was equivalent to giving him another chance at the spotlight. After all, there were people from the agencies on the second floor.

“Why did you come up here again?” Fu Chengming walked over with a frown.

Ye Zichen looked at him innocently and said, “What, can’t I come up here?”

“Didn’t your performance already end?”

“So what? I’m a singer and a helper. Can’t I be a helper singer guest?”

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes. This grandson was so retarded, wanting to cause trouble for me all the time.

“You...”

“Stop you’ing me. Do your job as the host properly and stay on the side.”

Ye Zichen raised his hand and pushed Fu Chengming to the side, then smiled towards Sun Yige, “Let’s go.”

The song Sun Yige chose was Song Jihyo and Kenji Wu’s “You are so cute”.

The style of the song was rather sweet. When it came to Ye Zichen’s part, he started to hold Sun Yige’s hand...

They looked at each other.

Ba-thump.

Ba-thump.

Sun Yige felt that her heart was about to explode. Since Ye Zichen’s gaze was too much, she made several mistakes as she sang.

It was all thanks to Ye Zichen helping her cover them up.

When the song finally finished, Sun Yige immediately ran towards the backstage.

Ye Zichen stood on the stage in amazement. After he bowed towards the audience and got ready to return to the backstage, the students in the audience stopped him.

“Ye Zichen, another one.”

“Encore!”

“Encore!”

Fu Chengming's face was already green with anger. He completely disregarded the passionate request of the students and snorted in front of Ye Zichen, “What are you blanking out for? Why aren't you going back?”

“Why are you so aggressive? Are you on your period?” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes, then waved towards the students in the audience before walking towards the backstage.

At this moment, the sunglasses wearing man on the second floor took off his sunglasses. His dark eyes shimmered like he found a treasure, as he displayed a hint of excitement.

“Old Shi, tell that student to sing another song.”

“Sure.”

Buzz...

Fu Chengming’s phone suddenly rang. When he took a look at the caller ID, he quickly spoke a few words to the other host before going behind the curtains.

“Sir.”

“Go and get that student named Ye Zichen to come sing another song.”

“What?” Fu Chengming asked in shock. “Why?”

“Don’t ask me why, this is what the chancellor told me, do as you see fit.”

Then the dean immediately hung up.

Snap.

Fu Chengming threw the expensive phone in his hand onto the ground, causing it to be smashed into smithereens.

Ye Zichen!

Ye Zichen!

Ye Zichen crossed his legs and sat on a chair as he unlocked his phone. Then, he saw the wolves, who were his roommates, continuously message him.

They all asked him whether they could tell his WeChat to a beauty.

Ye Zichen gave a standard reply to this. No!

At the very least, they should have sent him a red packet or something if they wanted to use his WeChat to pickup girls. These wolves wanted to sell him out without paying for anything.

How could he agree.

Ye Zichen looked over at Sun Yige, who sat on a chair and ignored everyone ever since she returned from the stage.

Ye Zichen walked over to her and squatted in front of her.

“Class Rep, were you nervous on stage? You make quite a few mistakes.”

“Ah!” Sun Yige exclaimed and stood up when she saw Ye Zichen squatting on the ground.

Just now, her head was continuously replaying the scene of Ye Zichen meeting her gaze. She didn’t know why, but her heart raced when she thought of him.

“What happened?”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows without understanding. However, Sun Yige merely told him that she was feeling unwell before running away from the backstage.

“What happened? She was fine just now?”

Ye Zichen watched Sun Yige run away in confusion, then he shrugged and got ready to leave.

Since Sun Yige had already left, there wasn’t anyone else that he knew there.

“Ye Zichen.”

Fu Chengming appeared in the backstage. Ye Zichen revealed an expression of speechlessness when he turned his head back and shrugged, “Young Master Fu, don’t you think that you’re childish? What are you doing? Do you still want to cause trouble for me here?”

“The school’s management told you to go up and sing a song,” Fu Chengming clenched his teeth.

Ye Zichen smiled in surprise, “Oh? What? Did this young master’s song conquer them?”

“Stop bullshitting, hurry up and go on the stage. They’re all waiting for you,” Fu Chengming snorted coldly.

Yet, Ye Zichen didn’t go onto the stage. Instead, he sat down on a chair, “I’m not going.”

“Ye Zichen, don’t not accept a favor.”

Fu Chengming was instantly mad. Everything he had planned in detail was to promote himself by stepping on Ye Zichen.

However, it’s great now, he picked up a boulder to smash his own feet.

He became someone else’s stepping stone.

Coming here in person to invite Ye Zichen was already at the limit of what he could endure, but the other person did not appreciate it.

Not going.

“Hehe, I’ve always been like this. Is this supposed to be the first day that Young Master Fu got to know me?” Ye Zichen smiled playfully, then took out a nail clipper to clip his nails.

Since there were people outside waiting for Ye Zichen to go on stage, Fu Chengming did not have that much time to waste.

“What do you want?”

Huu.

Ye ZIchen blew on his nails, then looked up with a smile, “How about... begging me?”

Chapter 71 – A Person With A Story

Everyone in the backstage resting room was shocked.

They never would have imagined that Ye Zichen had a grudge with this tyrant in school, but they quickly understood.

Recently, Ye Zichen had been a heated topic in school between the Porsche 918 and appearing alongside the school beauty. Most importantly, school beauty Sun, who Fu Chengming had always been pursuing, seems to have an ambiguous relationship with him as well.

It would be weird if they didn't have a grudge with Fu Chengming's vengeful personality.

“You're telling me to beg you, Ye Zichen...”

Fu Chengming grabbed Ye Zichen from the chair. When the other people in the backstage saw this, they all wanted to go and stop him, but stopped due to Fu Chengming's glare.

“It's none of your business, don't be a busybody.”

The surrounding students licked their lips and stopped. There were merely a bunch of normal students in school, the reason they entered the student council was so that they would have a better career when they entered society.

They couldn't afford to piss off someone like Young Master Fu!

Fu Chengming smiled after stopping everyone. Then, he pushed Ye Zichen against the wall with a dark look, "Don't challenge my patience. I'm the boss in the school."

"Hehehe..."

Ye Zichen laughed continuously. He really didn't care about this sort of harmless threat.

At this moment, the curtains to the backstage were brushed aside, and the dean walked in.

"What are you all doing!"

All the surrounding students lowered their head. Meanwhile, the dean also walked in front of Fu Chengming and Ye Zichen, then snorted, "Release each other."

"Dean, your "each other" isn't quite right. I didn't do anything, it was all Young Master Fu."

Ye Zichen shrugged. The dean also scolded Fu Chengming with a dark look, "Fu Chengming, I told you to come to the resting room to tell Ye Zichen to go on stage. What are you doing? It seems to me that you don't want to be the vice president of the student council anymore."

“Heh,” Fu Chengming forcefully pushed Ye Zichen towards the wall angrily with a murderous gaze in his eyes.

“Ye Zichen, go onto the stage,” the dean said after glaring at Ye Zichen and Fu Chengming.

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth, then directly sat onto the chair with a shrug, “I’m not going. I’m scared of death.”

“What are you saying, telling you to go on stage is a good thing,” the dean frowned.

“Young Master Fu came to the backstage just now and told me that if I go on stage, then he will crush me. He also told me to not to doubt him, he has ten thousand ways to destroy my name and kick me out of Polytechnic University.”

Ye Zichen used the technique of slandering perfectly. Since the resting room had no security camera, he could say whatever he wanted.

What’s more, he spoke according to Fu Chengming’s personality. It wasn’t a surprise for that grandson to say something like that.

“Ye Zichen...” Hearing that, Fu Chengming instantly reached out his hand.

Ye Zichen quickly took a few steps back and said, “Dean, look.”

The dean was also enraged, he knew what Fu Chengming was like, so he shouted out, “Fu Chengming, this is Polytechnic University, it’s not your family’s company. If you’re going to behave like that, then go back to your family’s company. This isn’t a place for you to cause trouble.”

“Ye Zichen, just wait,” Fu Chengming threw the script onto the ground, then said something fierce before leaving the resting room in rage.

At start to finish, Ye Zichen maintained his innocent look. Even after Fu Chengming left, he continued to look nervous.

“Dean, look...”

“Enough, stop acting here,” the dean rolled his eyes towards Ye Zichen and said. “Hurry up on stage, everyone’s waiting.”

“Hehehe...”

Ye Zichen did not expect himself to be seen through by the dean. Thus, he could only scratch his head with a chuckle, receive a mic from a nearby student, then saluted the dean, “I’ll be going now.”

Ka.

The lights shone onto Ye Zichen once again. The moment he got onto the stage, countless screams sounded out from the audience.

The scene was like someone from an idol's concert, it was truly amazing.

However, Ye Zichen instantly destroyed the image in less than half a minute.

“Uhm, the school management told me to come up and sing a song,” Ye Zichen smiled slightly awkwardly as scratched his head with one hand, while holding the mic with another.

“This brat...”

The man sitting on the second floor shook his head with a smile.

At this moment, Ye Zichen, who was on the stage, also spoke, “Actually, I’m not sure of what to sing either. How about singing “Half” for you guys.”

The instrumental for the song instantly sounded out, while the entire venue fell into silence.

Ye Zichen took a deep breath and closed his eyes and sang this song that was pretty much made for him.

“For our breakup, you don’t need to take blame. It was I who

only poured half in, causing qualm. Better several fights in the future; the cheap ring I picked out for you, is lost like gifts that were given out...”

After the song ended, Ye Zichen gave a warm smile to the audience and bowed, but nobody was able to see the faint traces of tears at the corner of his eyes.

“Gah, I thought about the past that I don’t want to think about again.”

Ye Zichen leaned on the wall outside the resting room and lit a cigarette for himself.

Liu Jing came out from the Dragon Eye, and raised her eyebrows beside him, “Hey, it was difficult to tell that you’re a person with a story.”

Ye Zichen smiled without denying. However, he could only laugh wryly in his heart.

“Who wouldn’t have a story while they live in the world. But mine doesn’t count as a story, it’s an accident at most.”

Buzz...

His phone suddenly rang. Ye Zichen took out his phone, then instantly revealed a troubled expression after looking at the caller ID.

“Mom.”

“You still know that I’m your mom. Hurry up and get yourself back to the hospital.”

Bang.

Ye Zichen scratched his head and put out the cigarette after he got hung up.

It seems like the trouble is very severe.

There was no lack of amazing performances in the gala when it ended, but Ye Zichen’s song was what all the students talked about after it finished.

Some students recorded down Ye Zichen’s singing and uploaded it onto the internet. In less than ten-odd minutes, it instantly had more than a hundred thousand clicks, and the numbers just kept on rising exponentially.

“Old Shi, I’ve chosen. It’s the one called Ye Zichen.”

The man, who sat on the second floor from the start, put on his sunglasses once again, while his phone continued to play the scene of Ye Zichen singing.

Although his style was a bit simple, his singing skills were top-notch.

In particular, the [portamento](#) was as smooth as flowing water.

As long as he packaged Ye Zichen a little, such a good seed was definitely going to become another superstar.

At the same time, within a deluxe suite in a business hotel.

A girl in pajamas sat on the sofa and habitually went to see the comments by the fans on Weibo.

However, a headline caught her sight.

Click.

Play.

Pa.

Her phone slipped down from her hands. The girl quickly picked up the phone, and coincidentally saw that the video reached the song's climax.

“For our breakup, you don’t need to take blame. It was I who only poured half in, causing qualm. Better several fights in the

future...”

Crack.

Her small fists clenched.

Slam.

Her phone was smashed into pieces.

“Ye Zichen, you’re a bastard.”

Chapter 72 – Repay Me With Your Body

In the First People's Hospital's special ward.

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth and sat on the bed, while both Huang Shengmei and Ye Rong stood within the ward.

It could be said that he was truly scolded terribly by these two people. What's more, Huang Shengmei had kept on exaggerating things, causing Ye Zichen to worry that Ye Rong would just tie him up.

“Auntie Ye, you also know the situation of the patient. It was a gun shot wound. If he wasn't lucky enough for the bullet to get stuck at the collar bone, then it might have penetrated the entire shoulder. He actually went out with this sort of injury...”

Huang Shengmei had already nearly died of anger when Ye Zichen made a face at her when he had escaped. Now, Ye Rong's also held an angry expression, she was at the height of her anger for Ye Zichen sneaking out.

“Doctor Huang, don't worry. I'll watch him personally, and not let what happened today happen again.”

At this moment, Ye Zichen saw that Huang Shengmei actually made a victory sign with her hands towards him. Her proud look made it seem like she had just won a war.

“You...”

Ye Zichen reached out a finger towards her, but was slapped down by Ye Rong.

“Doctor Huang is doing it for your own good. You can’t leave this ward at all without permission from now on, do you understand?”

Ye Zichen muttered like a balloon letting out air as he gazed at Ye Rong’s angry look, “I understand.”

“Then that’s it, Auntie Ye. I’ll be leaving first. Just come and find me any time if you have any questions.”

“We’ve troubled you, Doctor Huang.”

Ye Rong walked towards Ye Zichen in rage after sending Doctor Huang out of the ward.

“I was wrong.”

Ye Zichen quickly lowered his head to admit his mistakes. Only an earnest attitude admitting his mistake could get the least punishment in this situation.

“Alright, hurry up and sleep. You should be tired after messing around for that long outside.”

Ye Rong sighed and covered Ye Zichen with a blanket.

The entire night passed by silently.

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen's phone started ringing intensely beside his pillow.

“Who is it, it's so late...”

Ye Zichen sleepily put the phone in front of him...

White Impermanence!

White Impermanence?

All of a sudden, he lost all his sleepiness.

White Impermanence: Are you there?

White Impermanence: Can you chat with me for a while?

White Impermanence: <insert image>

Ye Zichen took a look at the picture that she sent and saw that it was a photo of a voluptuous girl with gold hair and pearl-colored eyes. The only thing that the girl was wearing was two bands of white cloth around her body...

White Impermanence: Do you think I look good wearing this?

Ye Zichen was stunned.

Stop messing around, this is White Impermanence?

When Ye Zichen thought back to when they met, he didn't notice that she was so busty.

It was definitely a picture stolen from the internet.

Ye Zichen was certain of that. If this was truly White Impermanence, and Black Impermanence was still cheating on her, then wasn't there something wrong with his brain!

Ye Zichen then ignored whether or not the one in the picture of her, that wasn't important. The important thing is that he needed to enter the inner circle of the Underworld through White Impermanence.

He took a glance at their intimacy level.

200.

Trusted.

He never would have thought that their intimacy level was so high, it was the same as his intimacy level with Erlang Shen.

Ye Zichen thought about it, then replied.

Ye Zichen: Yes.

White Impermanence: Really? <insert embarrassed emoji>. It's fine if you like it.

Ugh.

Why is it fine if I like it?

Ye Zichen's was speechless, so he quickly changed the topic.

Ye Zichen: Why aren't you sleeping in the middle of the night? Don't you know that it is bad for the skin when women stay up late?

White Impermanence: We sleep in the morning.

Ye Zichen instantly understood, people of the Underworld were all active at night, it was truly different from his own.

White Impermanence: Did I disturb your rest?

Ye Zichen: Nope. What do you want to chat with me about? Did Black Impermanence bully you again?

White Impermanence: He didn't bully me. He just went out to work. I'm a bit bored just staying here.

Ye Zichen: Shouldn't you two be working together?

White Impermanence: No, ever since we left your place, he applied to change partners with the higher-ups.

So this means that that Black and White Impermanence of the Underworld weren't unique.

Yet, it made sense when he thought about it. There were so many dead people, wouldn't it tire them out if there was only one pair of Black and White Impermanence?

Ye Zichen chatted with White Impermanence for more than two hours, about everything from relationships to their lives.

Seeing that it was about to be day time, White Impermanence sent a message over.

White Impermanence: Thank you for chatting so much with me. I feel much better now. I'm going to rest.

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with White Impermanence increased by 20. Current intimacy level: Trusted 220.

Ye Zichen had no strength left to retort when he saw this message. She felt great, but he was about to die of tiredness.

It was fortunate that he didn't chat for nothing that night, he managed to increase the intimacy level by 20.

The higher the intimacy level was, the easier it will be when he asks her to enter the group later. When that happens, he'll earn stuff from both the Underworld and the Heavenly Court!

Ye Zichen then sleepily fell asleep once again. When he opened his eyes, it was already noon.

"You're awake?"

Ye Zichen thought that the person beside his bed would either be

Ye Rong or Liu Jing, but it was actually Officer Lin, who sat on the side of his bed, while looking at him with a complex look.

“Why are you here? Your wounds healed?”

Officer Lin was still wearing a hospital gown, but seeing her red face, it seemed like she was fine.

“More or less.”

Officer Lin handed a peeled tangerine over.

Ye Zichen snickered, “Officer Lin, you probably have never taken care of a patient before, right? You’re telling me to eat a tangerine when I just woke up, are you really not afraid of me getting inflamed?”

“Whatever if you don’t eat it.”

Officer Lin took back the tangerine and placed a segment into her mouth. Ye Zichen put the pillow behind him and leaned against it as he watched her tangerine-chewing mouth, before slowing moving his gaze down.

Just what did this woman eat growing up? It could actually get so big.

Ye Zichen thought about it as he looked. When Officer Lin saw

this, her expression immediately turned cold.

“Did you see enough?”

“Not yet...” Ye Zichen answered subconsciously, but when he felt the gaze that could kill him, he quickly corrected himself. “I saw enough.”

“Then retract your lecherous gaze.”

“Alright, alright.”

Ye Zichen looked away with a coy smile, then placed his arms behind his head.

“What did Officer Lin come here for? Is it to repay the favor? I heard that women would repay favors with their bodies in ancient times, is Officer Lin the same? If it’s true, then that’s amazing.”

“You...”

Officer Lin subconsciously wanted to get mad, but when she saw the bandages around Ye Zichen’s shoulder, she suppressed the flames of anger within her heart.

“I did come to thank you.”

“Oh? It’s true?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and smiled naughtily. “Then Officer Lin is ready to repay me with her body?”

“I’m not kidding with you. I did come to thank you. Thank you for taking the shot for me, despite the danger and saving me,” Officer Lin bit her lips, while her voice became quieter and quieter. “How do you want me to repay you? As long as I can do it, I will satisfy you.”

“Hehehehe...”

Ye Zichen, who was lying on the bed, suddenly laughed naughtily and said, “Since Officer Lin said that, then I would be offending you if I was too courteous. You want to repay me, right? Then... repay me with your body.”

Chapter 73 – Yue Lao Buys Cigarettes

“Repaying with my body is no good, just change your conditions...”

Officer Lin blushed. At this moment, the door to the ward was pushed open.

“Lil’ Yue, I’ve been looking for you for a long time. So you were here,” The person who spoke was a rather handsome man in police uniform.

“This is the person that saved you, right?” The man walked over and reached his hand out towards Ye Zichen with a smile. “Hello, I’m Zhao Ziming, Lil’ Yue’s boyfriend.”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, and looked at Officer Lin’s expression, before reaching his hand out towards Zhao Ziming, “Ye Zichen.”

The moment they shook hands, Ye Zichen felt a powerful force from his hands that yanked his arm outwards.

A tremendous pain instantly passed out from the wound on his shoulder. Ye Zichen knitted his eyebrows firmly together without saying anything. However, he began to look towards Zhao Ziming with hints of confusion in his eyes.

This man wasn’t as bright of a man as he seemed to be.

“No wonder Officer Lin can’t repay me with her body, so she has a boyfriend,” Ye Zichen intentionally mentioned the issue of repaying him with her body when he retracted his hands. As he expected, the moment Zhao Ziming heard this, his expression grew dark, but he hid it very well, so Officer Lin did not notice.

“Ziming, Ye Zichen is like this, he likes to joke around,” Officer Lin explained, perhaps due to being worried that Zhao Ziming would think too much into it.

Zhao Ziming’s face continued to show a warm smile as he reached out his hand to rub Officer Lin’s hair, “Am I that petty of a person? Lil’ Yue, you are wounded and your savior needs to rest. Let’s go back to your ward.”

Officer Lin nodded slightly, then smiled towards Ye Zichen, “Ye Zichen, I’m leaving.”

Right before Officer Lin and Zhao Ziming left his ward, Ye Zichen suddenly called out to her, “Officer Lin, at least tell me your name.”

“Lin Xiyue.”

When the two of them left the ward, Ye Zichen finally looked down onto his shoulder. The wound that was quickly healing had been ripped apart once again due to Zhao Ziming’s yank.

The snow-white bandage already had traces of blood.

“Didn’t I tell you not to move around so much. Why aren’t you listening? Do you think that I would harm you?”

Ye Zichen sat on a chair in Huang Shengmei’s office as he listened to her blabber on.

“Would you believe me if I say that I didn’t do it?”

“Do you think I would believe it?” Huang Shengmei rolled her beautiful eyes and picked up a scissor from the table and tied a knot with the bandage.

“Alright, be careful from now on. It won’t be any good for you if it keeps on ripping like this.”

“I understand,” Ye Zichen helplessly twitched his mouth. Just as he stood up and was about to leave, Huang Shengmei stopped him.

“Wait.”

Ye Zichen stopped, then tilted his head as he looked towards Huang Shengmei in confusion.

Huang Shengmei walked in front of him with her phone in her hand and pointed at the photo on the phone, “Is this you on there?”

Ye Zichen glanced over at the photo. The photo was of the corridor outside Elder Su's emergency room. As for the person in the photo, that was indeed him.

“What about it?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

Huang Shengmei bit her lips and replied, “Just say whether it is you on the photo.”

“It is,” Ye Zichen replied without even thinking about it. There was nothing to deny about it. There were plenty of doctors nearby at the time, if Huang Shengmei really wanted to know, she can just grab anyone of them to point him out.

Huang Shengmei did not react when she heard his reply.

Ye Zichen waved his hands in front of her, then said, “Anything else? If there isn't, then I'll be leaving.”

However, she still didn't react. Thus, Ye Zichen left the office with pursed lips.

Huang Shengmei only picked up her phone to look at the photo after he closed the door, while Ye Zichen's reply echoed in her head.

“How is that possible!?”

Huang Shengmei scratched her hair, causing it to turn into a mess.

Her friend had sent her the photo, telling her that the person in the photo had even saved someone that Professor Deng Chen couldn't save.

She instantly treated this man as her god when she heard the news.

She had always fantasized about when she would be able to meet her god, until she met her patient, Ye Zichen.

No matter how she looked at it, she felt like Ye Zichen was the person in the photo.

All of a sudden, she felt like she was going crazy. She only went to ask Ye Zichen in order to deny her thoughts.

However...

He answered yes!

No matter what, she just could not link the two together.

The Ye Zichen she knows and the god in the photo...

Huang Shengmei felt like she was really going crazy.

From Ye Zichen's point of view, getting injured wasn't bad. At least he can blatantly skip lessons.

Ye Zichen hummed as he wandered around the hospital garden when his phone started to ring.

Yue Lao: Daoist friend.

What did this geezer come to find him for?

Ye Zichen replied as he leaned on the willow tree underneath the hospital building.

Ye Zichen: Here.

Yue Lao: Daoist friend, you weren't really right.

Ye Zichen: What happened?

This made Ye Zichen rather confused.

Yue Lao: You sent five boxes of cigarettes to Old Lord Taishang, he just came to show off at my place and even gave me one. After smoking it, I feel like he cigarette you gave him was higher-class

than the ones you gave me.

Ugh.

So it was about that. Ye Zichen was wondering just what the hell it was.

Ye Zichen: Old Lord Taishang exchanged a Nine Reincarnation Soul Pill with me. Yue Lao, if you want higher-class cigarettes, then you can use things to exchange for it as well.

Yue Lao: Sure, daoist friend, just say what you want.

Yue Lao actually agreed so easily. It seemed like those two geezers in the Heavenly Court got into a competition.

A competition is good, there was no harm and all benefits for Ye Zichen.

What should he ask for, this was something he had to think about.

What Yue Lao could do merely seemed to be helping people tie strings together for relationships.

He had enough women around him, there was no need for Yue Lao to tie him up with anymore.

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen thought of the new function, the Treasure Shop.

Ye Zichen: I want cultivation experience.

Yue Lao: About this... Daoist friend, you know that cultivation experience is very important to us deities.

Ye Zichen: Is cultivation experience more important, or is face more important? What's more, are my cigarettes not rare things?

Yue Lao fell into silence. It seemed like he was having an internal struggle.

After a long while, Yue Lao finally replied.

Yue Lao: What's the rate?

Ye Zichen: 500 cultivation experience for a box of Zhonghua, 220 cultivation experience for a box of Yuxi. Choose.

Yue Lai: Give me 10 boxes of Zhonghua.

Ye Zichen: Hehe, pay first, then the items will be delivered.

Dingdong.

Yue Lao immediately sent a red packet over without saying anything.

You received Yue Lao's red packet.

Cultivation experience x5000.

Ye Zichen was extremely proud as he looked at the 5000 cultivation experience he just earned.

He already had 8000 cultivation experience when he added it with the 3000 cultivation experience from before.

He was a step closer to the Secret Scriptures of the Fiery Eyes of Truth.

Ye Zichen placed the cultivation experience into his celestial plate.

“One moment, I'll immediately send you the goods.”

Chapter 74 – Old Lord Taishang's Special Medical Journal

Ye Zichen sent the cigarettes over to Yue Lao.

Not long later.

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Yue Lao increased by 30. Current intimacy level: 180.

It can't be, it was so easy to earn intimacy level from Yue Lao? These business transactions could increase the intimacy level?

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

At that moment, Ye Zichen's phone rang again.

Ye Zichen scrolled over to his chats and saw that Old Lord Taishang had messaged him.

Old Lord Taishang: Daoist friend, why did you give that geezer,

Yue Lao, cigarettes?

Old Lord Taishang: And it had to be ten boxes!

Give!

It was clearly a business transaction.

However, Ye Zichen immediately understood. Yue Lao and Old Lord Taishang were definitely together, and Yue Lao might be showing off in front of Old Lord Taishang with his cigarettes.

Ye Zichen: Actually, it wasn't really given. Yue Lao gave me some cultivation experience.

Old Lord Taishang: How much?

Ye Zichen: 5000.

Old Lord Taishang: 5000 cultivation experience for ten boxes of Zhonghua cigarettes? Do you have any higher-class cigarettes there? I want to buy them.

Clap.

Ye Zichen clapped. This was what he liked.

He would receive money, while two people competed.

Ye Zichen: Of course there are higher class ones. The Zhonghua we have is already a rather high-class brand. However, there are different types. The hard packaging Zhonghua in Yue Lao's hands are the lowest ones.

Old Lord Taishang: Give me a few boxes that are higher class than his.

Ye Zichen: Soft packaging Zhonghua is 650 cultivation experience per box.

Dingdong.

Old Lord Taishang directly sent a red packet over, which Ye Zichen quickly accepted.

You received Old Lord Taishang's red packet.

Cultivation experience x6500

Old Lord Taishang: Send it.

Ye Zichen: Please wait a moment.

Ye Zichen happily ran over to the supermarket to buy ten boxes of soft packaging Zhonghua.

Scan.

Send.

Dingdong.

Old Lord Taishang received your red packet.

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Old Lord Taishang increased by 20.
Current intimacy level: 120.

Interesting.

Selling goods could increase intimacy levels.

Ye Zichen hoped for Yue Lao to come seek him out again, but after ten odd minutes, there were no messages from Yue Lao.

It seems like he wasn't going to come.

However, it wasn't an issue, at least he earned quite a bit of cultivation experience easily.

All of a sudden, he felt like cultivation experience wasn't really hard to earn with his resources in the mortal realm and his celestial plate and title.

He could easily just open a convenience store in the group!

However, in order to do that, he needed to get into good relationships with all the different deities. Right now, he only knew a few...

The mission was important and the path was long. He still had a long way to go!

He saved the 6500 cultivation experience from Old Lord Taishang into his celestial plate!

Dingdong.

Your celestial position in the Heavenly Court has been increased.

Celestial Plate: Sky Sovereign Nameless (Cultivation Experience: 14500, Level 4 Celestial Official)

Dingdong.

Lucky Roulette activated.

Start-up requires 8888 cultivation experience.

What is this for?

Ye Zichen looked at the extra wheel that appealed in the Treasure Shop and randomly clicked on it.

Congratulations, you received Old Lord Taishang's Special Medical Journal (Level 1), it has been added to your Treasure Chest.

Damn!

Ye Zichen's hand shook.

Old Lord Taishang's Special Medical Journal.

That was a treasure priced at 1000000 cultivation experience!

Ye Zichen opened his Treasure Chest and checked out Old Lord Taishang's Special Medical Journal.

Old Lord Taishang's Special Medical Journal: Old Lord Taishang's medical journal

Withdraw.

Dingdong.

Do you wish to study Old Lord Taishang's Special Medical Journal (Level 1)?

Yes.

All of a sudden, a bunch of information flowed into Ye Zihen's mind.

“Ye-zi?”

A call suddenly sounded out beside Ye Zichen's ear. He looked up and saw Su Yiyun run over towards him.

“It really is you, why are you here?” Su Yiyun clapped his shoulder, causing Ye Zichen's face to instantly turn green.

“F*ck you...”

“Wait, what?” Su Yiyun was completely confused, but he quickly saw the bandages around Ye Zichen’s shoulder.

“The f*ck? Ye-zi, what happened?”

“You were f*cking trying to kill me, right?”

Within Ye Zichen’s ward.

At that moment, the ward was already full of people since his bros from the dorm, Su Yan and Xia Keke had all rushed over.

“How could you have a gunshot wound?”

Xia Keke’s delicate face frowned. As Ye Zichen looked at the caring gazes of the surrounding people, Ye Zichen glared at Su Yiyun in annoyance.

This huge mouth, he didn’t dare to tell the people around him in fear of them worrying.

That’s great, now they all know.

“Don’t glare at him, why didn’t you tell me when you got so hurt?” Su Yan’s face was also full of worry.

However, Ye Zichen did feel rather awkward in front of her.

Where did this awkwardness originate from?

It was their affability level.

Ever since Ye Zichen saved Elder Su, Su Yan's affability level shot up and reached 499.

Yes, it was just 1 point away from lovers, but no matter what, it just wouldn't increase.

Right now, their relationship was something akin to more than friendship, but not yet lovers.

They liked each other, yet resisted each other.

“Wasn't I just afraid of causing you guys to worry?”

“But are we not worried now?” Su Yan bit her lips and pouted.

When the wolf pack from the dorm saw this, they instantly screamed out, “Ye-zi, I really couldn't tell, you seriously got our goddess.”

Bai Yu walked over and nudged him, while Kang Peng and co. also looked playfully over the two people.

“Did you guys say enough?” Su Yan didn’t mind, but Xia Keke did get a bit angry.

All of Ye Zichen’s roommates within the ward were shocked.

Xia Keke also instantly realized that she shouldn’t have said that, so she quickly tried to cover up, “Our Susu has a really thin face, she’ll get embarrassed if you guys are like this.”

A cover up was a cover up. People in the room weren’t idiots...

All of a sudden, the atmosphere in the room turned really strange.

Bang.

At that very moment, Huang Shengmei suddenly ran into Ye Zichen’s ward.

“Ye Zichen, I want to trouble you with something.”

...

Ye Zichen casually took and a cigarette and lit it as he looked at the passing images behind him.

“You can’t smoke.”

Huang Shengmei raised her eyebrows.

Ye Zichen nodded, then shrugged, “Then, as a doctor, you should properly treat patients, what sort of doctor takes a patient hostage like you?”

“I didn’t take you hostage.”

“Alright, even if I did agree to come with you, you still brought me away from the hospital.”

Ye Zichen blew a smoke circle with a smile.

Huang Shengmei pursed her lips and did not retort, “I will apologize to Auntie Ye when we get back to the hospital, and ask for punishment from the hospital.”

Ye Zichen speechlessly twitched his mouth when he heard her serious reply.

He just wanted to make a joke, he didn’t expect that this Doctor Huang to be so boring.

“You didn’t tell me what do you want me to help you with.”

Ye Zichen chuckled the cigarette out of the window and raised his eyebrows. He only followed Huang Shengmei out without asking about anything just to escape from the awkwardness.

“I want to ask you to help treat my little brother’s sickness.”

“What!”

“What?”

Ye Zichen was completely stunned.

Chapter 75 – Another Marriage String

Treating sickness in her little brother?!

Was there something wrong with this Huang Shengmei, she is a doctor, yet she's telling someone who didn't even get their vet certificate to treat her little brother.

“Doctor Huang, did you drink at lunch?”

A hint of sadness flashed across Huang Shengmei's pretty eyes. She focused on driving and replied, “I know what you're thinking, but my little brother's sickness is a bit weird, so I can't do anything about it.”

“Then I'll be fine?”

“You can definitely do it if the person in the photo is truly you.”

Huang Shengmei's tone was stern and resolute. Ye Zichen also felt like he was affected but her, but he couldn't help but say, “You really flatter me.”

Half an hour later, Ye Zichen arrived at Huang Shengmei's home.

“Sis, you're back.”

Just after Huang Shengmei entered the room, a glasses-wearing

boy sitting in a wheelchair

The boy looked to be around seventeen or eighteen years old, while his face was rather pale.

He was Huang Shengmei's little brother, Huang Yi.

"Idol."

At that moment, Ye Zichen also walked into the room. Huang Yi's eyes brightened upon seeing him, then rolled his wheelchair over in order to check him out.

"It really is idol. Idol, what did you come here for? Sis, he can't be your boyfriend, right?"

Huang Yi's eyes were filled with light of excitement. Ye Zichen was a bit confused by his words, while Huang Shengmei blushed and smacked him on the head.

"What are you saying? He is the person that sis brought to treat you."

"Idol's gonna treat my sickness."

Huang Yi's expression suddenly changed. Seeing that, Huang Shengmei quickly explained, "Lil' Yi, don't think too much into it, he..."

“That’s great, how do I cooperate?” Contrary to Huang Shengmei’s expectations, Huang Yi actually laughed excitedly, causing her to get a bit confused by her little brother. Whenever she had brought someone to treat him before, her little brother would be very resistant to it, he had never been so cooperative.

However, Huang Yi cooperating with the treatment was definitely a good thing for Huang Shengmei.

“Ye Zichen, I brought you here to get you to take a look. Can my little brother’s legs be treated?”

Ye Zichen looked at Huang Yi’s legs.

Natural paralysis.

It should be a problem that was there from when he was born.

“I did get a lot of orthopedic experts to take a look, including Professor Deng Cheng, but they had no way of treating him.”

“Find a place to lie down,” said Ye Zichen.

To be honest, Ye Zichen suddenly felt a bit of admiration for Huang Shengmei.

Huang Yi’s situation meant that he couldn’t handle his lower

body at all.

Huang Shengmei had always taken care of him like that, it was worthy of respect.

“Sure!” Before Huang Shengmei spoke up, Huang YI already rolled his wheelchair back into his bedroom.

Under Ye Zichen and Huang Shengmei’s help, he laid down onto the bed. Ye Zichen reached out and pressed down on a few places on the back of his waist.

“Do you feel anything?”

“Nothing.”

“Here?”

“There is an indescribable feeling.”

Ye Zichen retracted his hand after pressing down on a few more locations.

“How is it?” Huang Shengmei asked worriedly.

“He can be treated, but...”

“But what?” Huang Shengmei couldn’t get more excited.

Ye Zichen raised his hand to signal her not to be too impulsive, “He can be treated, but not now. I’ll come and see after a few days.”

“Why does it have to be after a few days? You have to just say any request you have. As long as you can help my little brother stand up, even if you want me...” saying that, Doctor Huang abruptly stopped.

Ye Zichen also smiled playfully, “Even if it’s you? Then what?”

Huang Shengmei did not reply.

Ye Zichen also knew that she was impulsive just now and spoke without thinking. He shrugged and smiled, “I’m not the type of person to add insult to injury. Currently, I really can’t treat your little brother. I will naturally tell you when I can. There is no need to worry!”

Old Lord Taishang’s Special Medical Journal did indeed have a way to treat her little brother. However, the way it used was different from Chinese medicine’s acupuncture or western medicine’s surgery.

He would need to use qi to treat it.

Just now, Ye Zichen used qi when he pressed down on Huang Yi.

Sadly, he only just studied the special medical journal, so his storage of qi was not enough at all.

If he wanted to open up all of Huang Yi's blocked nerves, it would require a tremendous amount of qi.

Right now, what he had...

Was merely a drizzle.

“Sis, how did you get to know idol?”

Huang Yi laid on the bed and raised his eyebrows at Huang Shengmei after Ye Zichen left.

“What idol? Why don't I understand? You've been calling him idol from the beginning, just what's going on?”

Huang Shengmei asked in confusion. In response to that, Huang Yi took out his phone and opened up a video on Weibo.

“What's this?”

“Listen, my idol sang it.”

Huang Yi handed over the phone, while Huang Shengmei looked at the video in confusion.

“Ye Zichen!”

Huang Shengmei raised her eyebrows when she saw the person in it...

She didn't find it anything special when she heard the start, she just doesn't understand how he became her little brother's idol.

Until...

“For our breakup, you don't need to take...”

Ta-thump.

The moment she heard that, Huang Shengmei's heart suddenly beat intensely.

At that very moment, Ye Zichen's singing pierced through her heart like a sword.

She was moved.

Dingdong.

You received a marriage string.

Ye Zichen, who was standing underneath Huang Shengmei's home, was shocked. How did he get a marriage string.

He clicked open the treasure chest.

Possessor: Ye Zichen, Possessed: Huang Shengmei. Currently affability level: 10.

It can't be!?

Ye Zichen opened his eyes wide speechlessly. He didn't do anything with Huang Shengmei, why did a marriage string appear?

Could it be that the woman really wanted to repay him with her body since he was going to treat her little brother?

But he didn't even start on the treatment.

Ye Zichen rubbed his head and stopped a taxi. The moment the marriage string appeared, it meant the other person had started to have good feelings about him.

What the hell.

Ye Zichen shook his head and decide to ignore the matter.

“Where to?”

“First People’s Hospital.”

The moment he said that, Ye Zichen’s phone rang once again.

“Ye Zichen, right?”

The caller ID was unknown. Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows when he heard the slightly sinister voice, “That’s me.”

“Your roommates are in our hands. If you don’t want anything to happen to them, then come find me at the abandoned factory in the eastern part of the city.”

Bang.

Ye Zichen was completely shocked, “Why should I believe you?”

“Zichen, don’t come...”

Bai Yu’s screams suddenly sounded out through the speaker on his phone. Not long later, a dark voice sounded out from the other end.

“Your roommates are a bit disobedient... the abandoned factory in the eastern part of the city. Remember, come alone...”

Slam.

The call was hung up. Hearing the sound from his phone, Ye Zichen clenched his fist.

“Drive, turn around to the city east!”

Chapter 76 – Harming The Bystanders

The abandoned factory in the city east was...

Worn down, wasted...

Filled with weeds!

After Ye Zichen got out of the taxi, he stood in front of the old factory and dialed that unknown number.

“I’m here, where are you guys?”

“I didn’t expect you to be so quick. Come straight in, you’ll see us then.”

Creak...

Ye Zichen pushed open the old metallic door, causing a sharp sound to pass into his ears and nose-piercing wetness to rush towards his face.

The light passed through the entrance and shone inside...

A long-haired man, wearing rivet pants, with a row of earholes on his right ear sat right in front of the entrance. He was smoking with his legs crossed. When he saw Ye Zichen, he threw the cigarette onto the ground.

“You came?”

“Where are my roommates?”

Ye Zichen frowned. The man clapped his hands and saw two men bringing Bai Yu and Kang Peng out from a dark corner.

The two of them were covered in blood and barely alive as their heads drooped.

Crack.

“F*ck you...”

Click.

The moment Ye Zichen raised his fist, dark barrels had already been pointed at him.

“Don’t be so impulsive. Otherwise, you’ll be in danger.”

The man waved his hands towards his subordinates, causing the people to instantly put away their guns.

“Let my friends go, the person you’re looking for is me.”

Ye Zichen remained silent as he stared at the man with his eyes. However, he had been silently communicating with Liu Jing.

Hearing that, the man raised his eyebrows. He lit a cigarette for himself with a smile and exhaled a bit of smoke towards him.

“I can release your friends, but I have to see you dead before then. I have a habit of letting the dead speak their last words, you won’t be an exception.”

“I want to know who hired you to kill me.”

Ye Zichen looked straight at the man, but still paid attention to Liu Jing’s situation.

“I’m very sorry about this, but we can’t say it,” the man chuckled.

“Then...”

Ye Zichen crossed his hands in front of him and dipped his head as if he was submitting to the situation.

The moment the man let down his guard, Ye Zichen raised his fist and punched him, “F*ck you.”

His fist of rage punched the man directly into the sky, before he hit the floor. Seeing that, all of the criminals in the surroundings raised their guns and pulled the trigger towards Ye Zichen.

But...

There were no gunshots.

“Those are no good now, right?”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and looked at the criminals, then kicked them.

“Liu Jing, good job.”

Ye Zichen gave a thumbs up to Liu Jing, who was in midair, then easily dispatched the rest of the criminals before walking in front of the first man.

“Did you know that you really pissed laozi off?”

Crack.

Ye Zichen stepped onto the man's arm that was reached for his gun, snatched the gun over and pointed it at the man's temples.

“Say it, who told you to do this?”

Ye Zichen essentially roared this out. It was fine to deal with him, but Bai Yu and Kang Peng were innocent.

They were only his roommates, but they had to suffer this sort of catastrophe!

“Say it!”

Ye Zichen hit the man on his stomach, then pointed the gun right at the man’s temples.”

“I’ll shoot you if you don’t say it.”

“Ha...”

The man, who was completely suppressed by Ye Zichen, suddenly laughed. Broken teeth flowed out along with blood from his mouth as he said, “Brat, I have principles. I can’t reveal my employer. Just shoot.”

“Do you believe that I’ll really kill you?”

“I believe you, shoot.”

The man slowly closed his eyes as if he truly did not care about living any more.

The hand Ye Zichen was holding the gun with begun to tremble.

How would he dare to pull the trigger?

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen had an idea. He casually chucked the gun onto the floor. The man also opened his eyes at the same time and smiled playfully, “What, you don’t dare?”

“Hehe... Letting you die so easily is too good for you.”

Ye Zichen used his right index finger to press onto a point on the man’s waist.

“Enjoy this, then decide whether to tell me or not.”

Ye Zichen threw the man aside and ran in front of Bai Yu and Kang Peng.

It was unknown what sort of torture the two of them had been subjected to before he arrived, their faces were completely bloodied.

“Bai Yu, Kang Peng!”

Ye Zichen shook their shoulders intensely. After a long while, they slowly opened their eyes, “Ye-zi...”

“Swallow it.”

Ye Zichen got a Great Recovery Pill from his WeChat, broke it in half and stuffed it into their mouths. The moment the pill entered their mouths, color gradually returned to their pale faces.

Meanwhile, the man that had kidnapped Bai Yu and Kang Peng did not take Ye Zichen seriously at all. Even when Ye Zichen had the absolute advantage, even if he was so near death, he was never afraid.

Until Ye Zichen pressed down on his waist.

He felt like his entire body was emptied. It was as if a knife cut into his stomach repeatedly, causing piercing pain.

Not long later, he felt as if he slowly lost the feeling of his lower body. When he looked down, what he saw was a pool of blood.

“What did you do to me...” The man yelled out in fright.

Ye Zichen walked towards him with a light smile, “Did you think it through? Tell me, who exactly told you to do this!”

“I can’t...”

“Sure, then enjoy!” Ye Zichen shrugged and stood up.

However, the man suddenly spoke, “I’ll say it... Young Master Fu told us to do it. He said that It’s only the beginning, he will screw over everyone around you.”

Bang.

Ye Zichen kicked the man and opened his eyes wide.

“Fu Chengming...”

Ye Zichen called Commissioner Liu in order to ask him to take care of the location, then sent Bai Yu and Keng Peng to the hospital.

Ye Zichen, who sat in a chair in the corridor outside the ward with his eyes completely red with rage.

Regardless of what ploys Fu Chengming used against Ye Zichen before, he could accept it. But this time, he had really touched Ye Zichen’s bottom line.

Ye Zichen picked up his phone and said sullenly into it, “Tell me Fu Chengming’s location.”

Within a certain high class business club.

“F*ck, they couldn’t even do something that simple.”

The moment Fu Chengming hung up, his entire face turned gloomy.

“Young Master Fu...”

“F*ck off, f*ck off... All f*cking f*ck off,” Fu Chengming, who sat on the sofa, suddenly went mad, smashing all of the drinks on the tea table onto the floor.

All the escorts in the room were freaked out, causing them to run frantically away from the room.

“All f*cking trash.”

When the escorts left, Fu Chengming cursed sullenly within the room. Yet, at that moment, the door to the room was kicked open.

Ye Zichen stood alone in front of the room. He looked at Fu Chengming coldly and smiled, “Young Master Fu, it took me so long to find you.”

The dark voice sounded like a howl of a beast from hell. The hot temperature in the room also turned beyond cold.

Fu Chengming stood up in fright. He acted cocky, using the people and money he had.

When he was alone facing Ye Zichen's cold gaze...

“What do you want?”

“Hehe,” Ye Zichen suddenly snickered and slammed the door shut.

“What do you think?”

Chapter 77 – The Dragon Kings Of The Four Seas Enters The Group

Ten-odd minutes later, Ye Zichen stood up from the floor of the room.

He looked at Fu Chengming, who was lying on the floor like a dead dog, and snorted with a cold smile, “If you want to do anything, then target me. If you dare to touch people around me, then I’ll take your shitty life.”

When he left the club, it was already nighttime. There were ten-odd missed calls shown on his phone, all of them were from Su Yiyun and his other roommates.

Ye Zichen had left too impulsively, they were all afraid of something happening to him.

After Zichen sent them a message telling them that he was done already, Ye Zichen sat down at a nearby restaurant.

“Hey, that guy doesn’t seem like a normal person. Could someone arrest you after you beat him up like that?”

Liu Jing revealed a worried expression as she floated in midair.

Ye Zichen smiled and twitched his mouth, “Arrest me? Your dad is going to bring people to arrest him later. Did you forget that

your dad arrested all of those guys?”

“Oh, oh, that’s true,” Liu Jing nodded with a giggle. At the same time, Ye Zichen saw a white figure flash across his eyes.

“It really is you,” a slightly joyous voice sounded out.

Ye Zichen looked up and saw White Impermanence pop up from somewhere and had already sat down on the chair opposite him.

“What are you doing here?” Ye Zichen was shocked. Then, he looked beside her and said that she was holding a chain that was chaining a rather evil looking person.

“I came out to work. I was thinking whether I could meet you when I was coming out. I didn’t think that I actually met you,” White Impermanence’s tone continued to sound slightly joyful.

Ye Zichen really couldn’t put up with this passion, especially since he thought of something Liu Jing had said a while ago...

This White Impermanence couldn’t have truly fallen for him, right!

Thinking that, Ye Zichen shuddered.

Was this supposed to be the plot of “Ghost”?

But then again, this White Impermanence was rather gentle.

Yet, very quickly, Ye Zichen saw a truly unforgettable scene.

The chained ghost seemed to want to run, and when White Impermanence, who was sitting on the chair, noticed it, she yanked with her right arm, then directly stepped on that ghost.

“You still want to run when it’s like this? Do you think laoniang is easy to mess with!?”

...

Ye Zichen looked at this scene in shock. White Impermanence acted like a female tyrannosaur and beat up that ghost.

White Impermanence only turned around once again after suppressing that evil spirit, and spoke with her gentle voice, “Oh yeah, what were we talking about?”

Ye Zichen chatted with White Impermanence for another half an hour before her phone rang.

“Ah, I’m going to be late. I have to go back.”

White Impermanence stood up and yanked the ghost in her hands.

Ye Zichen frowned, then thought of the mission Taibai Jinxing gave him...

“Wait.”

“What is it?”

White Impermanence turned back and reacted with a hint of anticipation.

Ye Zichen licked his lips and made up his mind, “How do you guys in the Underworld contact each other? A WeChat group?”

“Yeah,” White Impermanence nodded. “What about it?”

Ye Zichen scratched his head, looked at White Impermanence and stopped himself from saying what he wanted to. After a long time, he still did not manage to speak out his desire to enter the group.

“No problem, hurry back. Didn’t the people from there call you?”

“Mhmm, we’ll WeChat each other when there’s time.”

White Impermanence yanked the chain, then disappeared from Ye Zichen’s site alongside the dead-dog like evil spirit.

“Wow, that White Impermanence is so ferocious.”

Liu Jing said on the side. When she thought about White Impermanence wanting to capture her, she couldn't help but tremble.

“Indeed,” Ye Zichen shrugged without disagreeing. At the same time, he was rather regretful that he didn't manage to say anything about entering the group.

Then he thought about it, the two of them had just known each other for a very short time. Wanting to enter their group just like that would seem rather sudden.

It would be better if he just increased the intimacy level, and ask when their intimacy level was higher. That might be a better idea.

The next morning.

Ye Zichen, who was sleeping, felt his phone buzz. He opened his eyes and looked at his phone.

There were 99+ unread messages in the group chat, causing Ye Zichen to be stunned.

Red packets were sent?

Ye Zichen's heart leaped, then clicked on the WeChat group and

saw that a flame war was going on.

To his surprise, the main character actually wasn't Erlang Shen. It was Nezha.

Ye Zichen scrolled up through the chat history, then finally understood.

Half an hour ago, Taibai Jinxing had invited the dragon kings of the four seas in, Nezha was coincidentally bragging about his dragon slaying achievements.

Since the dragon kings of the four seas saw this, and the fact that Nezha had a grudge with the dragon kings, they immediately started to argue.

Don't just think that this little Nezha was moe, his words were definitely sharper than Erlang Shen's by a hundred times.

He flamed the entire group of dragon kings...

And actually did not let his opponents get the upper hand.

It might have been because Nezha stressed the four dragon kings too much that the Dragon King of the East Sea directly went to Nezha's father.

Dragon King of the East Sea: @Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li

Jing, teach your son some manners.

Nezha: Old guy, I just showed you some colors. Do you think that I'll be afraid of you because you called my dad?

Dragon King of the East Sea: Heh.

Then the flaming stopped.

Ye Zichen waited ten-odd minutes, but the Third Prince Nezha actually didn't send any more messages.

Canopy Marshal: It seems like the third prince is most likely screwed.

God of Thunder: Dragon King of the East Sea, you are too petty. Our group has the rule that we never go to the parents when flaming happens. Look at Erlang Shen, when did we ever seek his parents out when he flamed?

Mother of Lightning: Yeah, yeah.

Immortality Peach Fairy: I'm not going to comment, but I don't like going to parents.

All of a sudden, everyone in the group started to complain about the Dragon King of the East Sea. Not long later, Li Jing came out.

Pagoda-Bearing Li Jing: I already taught my disrespectful son a lesson, I hope the Dragon Kings of the Four Seas will not take offense, he is young and immature.

He really got beaten.

Ye Zichen clicked on Nezha's moments and saw Nezha's newest status was a text message.

“My dad beat me, I'm unhappy. I'm going dragon-slaying.”

Ugh.

This little moe deity seriously goes dragon-slaying whenever he's angry.

Ye Zichen liked the message. Then not long later, Nezha actually added him as friend.

Accept.

Nezha: Are you going dragon-slaying with me?

What's this? Trying to get some comrades?

Ye Zichen: This little deity is in a secret location and cannot go with you.

Nezha: Then why did you like it? I thought you were going with me. <insert a row of unhappy emojis>.

Ye Zichen: 囧

Then, Nezha stopped replying. It seems like he really was going dragon slaying.

Ye Zichen opened the WeChat group and saw that the people in the group were still bandwagoning against the Dragon King of the East Sea.

What use was that?

Red packets are the true way!

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes speechlessly, then sent a message without thinking.

“New people entering the group needs to send red packets @Dragon King of the East Sea, @Dragon King of the North Sea, @Dragon King of the West Sea, @Dragon King of the South Sea!”

Chapter 78 – Ideas For The Convenience Store

If it was before, Ye Zichen definitely wouldn't dare to speak up publicly in the group, but things were different now.

He already had a celestial title, celestial plate and even a manor, what was he afraid of?

Ye Zichen's appearance instantly caused the group to explode. The name "Only Idealism" could be said to be a legend in the group.

Taibai Jinxing had @'d him personally, and Erlang Shen had a flame war with him.

Canopy Marshal: Great deity appeared.

Immortality Peach Fairy: Idol <insert a bunch of emojis with heart-shaped eyes>

God of Thunder: Doesn't great deity like to lurk?

Mother of Lightning: Wow, what's going on? Even great deity popped up.

Everyone in the group instantly turned their attention towards Ye Zichen. As Ye Zichen looked at the chat log that kept on

scrolling down, he really felt a bit speechless.

Ye Zichen: Cough, cough, pay attention to the main point. This sovereign has come to ask for red packets.

God of Thunder: Yeah, dragon kings, send red packets.

Mother of Lightning: Send red packets, red packets.

Barefoot Immortal: I also want to get in on this.

Dragon King of the East Sea: This great deity is...

This was the first time the Dragon King of the East Sea had seen Ye Zichen after being in the Heavenly Court for so long.

No one in the group replied. To be honest, they didn't know what Ye Zichen's true identity was either.

Ye Zichen directly sent out his celestial title, celestial plate and residence without thinking.

The celestial title and plate didn't really matter. What was important was the location of the residence.

137 Willow Stone Alley, Thirty-Seventh Heaven.

Bang.

The group instantly exploded.

For them who lived in the Heavenly Court, most of them resided below the Eighteen Heaven. Anyone staying between the Eighteenth and Thirty-Sixth Heaven was already a great deity.

Thirty-Seventh Deity, that meant that he stayed on the same floor with Taibai Jinxing.

Immortality Peach Fairy: Greetings to the celestial sovereign.

God of Thunder: Greetings to the celestial sovereign.

Mother of Lightning: Greetings to the celestial sovereign.

The Dragon King of the Far East was shocked, he didn't think that he had such much honor to be @'d by such a high-level deity.

He couldn't help but secretly screenshot it. This was something he could definitely brag about to other back home.

Ye Zichen: Cough, cough, stop. This sovereign just came to ask for red packets.

Canopy Marshal: @Dragon King of the East Sea, @Dragon King of

the West Sea, @Dragon King of the North Sea, @Dragon King of the South Sea, the great deity told you guys to send red packets.

Dragon King of the East Sea: Going to send it now.

Originally, he didn't want to send it, but there was no helping it. A great deity had @ him, he couldn't be petty.

He clenched his teeth and stomped.

Send.

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen's phone shook.

Damn.

He was too slow, and the red packets had all been snatched.

F*ck, are these deities all animals.

Ye Zichen looked at the number of red packets sent. There were 50, and yet they were all gone in an instant.

Dragon King of the East Sea: I've sent it.

Dragon King of the West Sea: My turn.

The moment Ye Zichen saw the Dragon King of the West Sea's message, he stared intently at the screen. He got distracted just now, he must get it this time.

Dingdong.

Snatch.

You received the Dragon King of the West Sea's red packet.

Fragment of Soul Pearl Yiyuan x1

Before most people were able to react, the Dragon King of the South Sea also sent a red packet.

Ye Zichen clicked down.

Double kill!

You received the Dragon King of the South Sea's red packet.

Fragment of Soul Pearl Yiyuan x1

Dingdong.

The Dragon King of the North Sea's red packet also appeared.

Triple kill!

You received the Dragon King of the North Sea's red packet.

Fragment of Soul Pearl Yiyuan x1

Ye Zichen was a bit shocked after snatching all the red packets.

All three packets were a Fragment of Soul Pearl Yiyuan.

What was the use of this Soul Pearl Yiyuan?

Canopy Marshal: Great deity is so lucky @Only Idealism.

God of Thunder: My god, great deity got three fragments.

Immortality Peach Fairy: Why did I get a Blood Coral. This isn't fair!

From the looks of the group, this Fragment of Soul Pearl Yiyuan was something good.

Ye Zichen opened his WeChat Treasure Chest.

There were three fragments of Soul Pearl Yiyuan in the chest.

Fragment of Soul Pearl Yiyuan: A personal ancient magical item used by the Yellow Emperor during his battle with Chiyou. There are six fragments in total.

Current fragment number: 3.

Ancient magical item, but f*ck. Even if it was a fragment of an ancient magical item, it was completely useless for him.

At the same time, everyone in the group said Ye Zichen was lucky, and that it was as expected of a celestial sovereign, and that he had luck equaling the heavens.

However, the stingy God of Thunder suddenly sent a message.

God of Thunder: It seems like great deity Nameless didn't send a red packet when he entered the group.

Mother of Lightning: That seems to be the case.

Canopy Marshal: @Only Idealism, great deity, you shouldn't break the rules.

Seeing that, the Dragon Kings of the Four Seas immediately spoke up as well. They had just given so much up just now, they needed to get something back.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but become speechless as they looked at the scrolling chat log.

They were starting to screw with him.

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen's eyes brightened.

This seemed to be a good thing for him.

He had wanted to advertise his convenience store in the Heavenly Court, isn't this giving him a chance!

Ye Zichen: One moment.

Ye Zichen shouted towards Liu Jing after sending that.

“Liu Jing, go and steal a few boxes of soft drinks for me.”

“Ah?”

“Ah what? Go and steal a few boxes, it's not convenient for me to do so right now.”

“Kay.”

Not long later, Liu Jing appeared in front of him carrying a bunch of drinks.

Scan.

Send.

Dingodng.

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

Rows of messages stating that someone receiving your red packet instantly appeared on Ye Zichen’s screen. The speed nearly caused his phone to freeze.

Canopy Marshal: Sprite, what’s this?

Immortality Peach Fairy: @Only Idealism, great deity what is Shuangwaiwai?

God of Thunder: What is Pepsi Coke?

Ye Zichen: These are items that this sovereign has found in this

secret realm. They are treasures, enjoy them.

The moment he said that, Erlang Shen, the Monkey King, Yue Lao and Old Lord Taishang popped up.

Erlang Shen: @Only Idealism, bro, why didn't you tell me that you're sending red packets?

Monkey King: @Only Idealism, why didn't you @ Old Sun?

Yue Lao: I seem to have missed it.

Old Lord Taishang: I came a step too late, it's all gone.

When the people in the group saw that the four people who appeared actually all knew Ye Zichen, the group exploded once again. After all, these four people were great deities in the Heavenly Court.

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen's position in their hearts increased once again.

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen's WeChat rang a few times. Ye Zichen took a look and

saw Taibai Jinxing had sent him messages.

Taibai Jinxing: Who allowed you to send these trash into the group?

Taibai Jinxing: Who gave you the right to do so. I saw that Yue Lao and Old Lord Taishang got cigarettes a while ago, you sent it, right?

Oh wow.

This geezer Taibai actually knew these stuffs.

When Ye Zichen thought more into it, he realized that it really wasn't anything since Taibai Jinxing already knew his identity.

Ye Zichen didn't care. He directly replied without retorting.

Ye Zichen: Ah!

Taibai Jinxing: You're ah'ing with me? Did you know...

Dingdong.

Before Taibai Jinxing finished, Ye Zichen directly sent a red packet over.

Ye Zichen: Don't say this kid is immature, this is soft packaging Zhonghua, it costs 650 cultivation experience. I'll just give it to you.

Ye Zichen ignored him after sending him that, there was no need to bullshit so much.

Right now, Taibai Jinxing was showing off his authority in front of Ye Zichen. Just give him (Ye Zichen) a bit of time.

It wasn't certain who would be in charge of the Heavenly Court in the future!

Chapter 79 – The Talent Agency Sought Him Out

Ye Zichen's mood became extremely good after sending the wave of soft drinks.

If there were no surprises, then deities would definitely come to find him soon. When that happens, wouldn't cultivation experience and treasures come rolling in?!

Ye Zichen washed up simply, then arrived in Kang Peng and Bai Yu's ward.

When he walked into the room, he saw a bunch of people together discussing about something. Thus, he snuck over!

“What are you looking at...”

“Aiyo!”

Everyone was freaked out by Ye Zichen. Then, Ye Zichen stuck his head over with a chuckle.

“Isn't this Yang Yushi?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and smiled when he looked at the photo on the phone.

“Yang Yushi said she was coming back to Bingcheng. Someone said on Weibo said they saw her on Central Street. Sadly, my

roommates are deeply hurt, so I must stay to watch over them, and am unable to go and see my goddess at a close distance,” Zhang Rui sighed with a sadness that he could not cover up in his eyes.

Su Yiyun smacked him on the head, “What are you saying, look at your shitty mouth, I really want to sew it up with needle and thread.”

“But it is quite a shame that we can’t go and see Yang Yushi since she came back to Bingcheng,” Kang Peng, who was lying on the bed, also nodded in agreement.

It could be said that Yang Yushi was the goddess of many indoorsman. She was also a currently trending star.

Gossip followed her wherever she went.

One example was the Weibo post. She got onto Weibo’s front page just by showing up on Central Street.

It could be seen how popular she was.

Everyone else in the ward all chatted intensely, but Ye Zichen smiled playfully.

“Zhang Rui, didn’t you say that Su Yan is your goddess, why is it her now?”

“Don’t mention Su Yan to me, I get pissed whenever she’s mentioned,” Zhang Rui suddenly threw his phone onto the bed and stood up from his chair. “You’re dating Su Yan, aren’t you?”

“...”

“Stop pretending with me, I can clearly see it.”

“...”

“You’re admitting it with your silence, right?”

Zhang Rui licked his lips and nodded towards Ye Zichen, then immediately exploded.

“Ol’ Five, Ol’ Five. Say, just how shameless are you? You silently got with the goddess without saying anything to us. But no worries, so what, this is just you having talent. However, don’t you have some sort of thing going on with the school beauty Xia Keke? Ol’ Five, a person can’t be so shameless, one goddess Su Yan is enough... You-You’re too greedy!”

The moment Zhang Rui finished, Kang Peng, who was on the bed, exclaimed, “Hey, that’s right. Speaking of it, the moment Ol’ Four mentioned it, I remembered. I felt like the way Xia Keke and Su Yan’s way of looking at you were weird. What’s more, when we talked about you and Su Yan, Xia Keke got angry. What’s going on with you and Xia Keke?”

“Ye-zi, is what they’re saying true?” Su Yiyun also spoke up.

All of a sudden, everyone in the room started to criticize Ye Zichen, especially Su Yiyun, who stared at him with his eyes, as if telling him that an explanation must be given.

“...”

Ye Zichen didn’t think that his comment would lead to so much chain reactions.

There was no helping it, he could only choose to be silent!

Ye Zichen didn’t utter a single word under the relentless questioning of his roommates.

Dongdong.

At this moment, a knock on the door sounded out. Su Yiyun raised his eyebrows at Ye Zichen and snorted, “Ye-zi, you must give me an explanation.”

Then he walked to the entrance and opened the door to the ward.

“President Shi.”

The person who knocked was President Shi, who was standing

beside a sunglasses-wearing man.

Everyone in the room were students from the Polytechnic University, so they all stood up from their chairs when they saw him.

Including Ye Zichen.

Yet, at that very moment, a girl also walked in.

“F*ck, Yang Yushi!” Zhang Rui exclaimed.

“Zhang Rui, pinch me. It really is Yang Yushi, right?” Zhu Yunbai also revealed a face of excitement.

Su Yiyun, Kang Peng and Bai Yu were also stunned.

Yang Yushi actually came.

“Hi,” Yang Yusii waved towards everyone in the ward, stopped her sight onto Ye Zichen for a moment, then walked beside that sunglasses wearing man.

“Damn, it really is Yang Yushi.”

“My god, why would she come here?”

Yang Yushi was clearly used to the sort of exclamations she heard in the ward, she merely stood silently beside the sunglasses-wearing man.

“You brats, did you forget about me, right school president when you saw the superstar?”

President Shi shook his head with a smile, causing everyone to reveal an awkward look.

Su Yiyun smiled and ran in front of President Shi, “President Shi, you didn’t come here to scold us, right?”

President Shi couldn’t help but laugh after seeing Su Yiyun. It seemed like the two knew each other, but considering Su Yiyun’s family background, it wasn’t any surprise for him to know President Shi.

“I came to look for Ye Zichen. More precisely this person, Director Hu, is looking for Ye Zichen!”

President Shi indicated towards the sunglasses wearing man beside him. The man took off his sunglasses and smiled lightly, “Hello, Ye Zichen, I am Hu Hong of Dream Lead Agency.”

“Dream Lead! Isn’t that the largest talent agency in the country?” Zhang Rui pushed his glasses up and exclaimed as he looked at Hu Hong. “Oh yeah, Yang Yushi signed with Dream Lead.”

Ye Zichen nodded towards Hu Hong. After a simple handshake, Hu Hong spoke, “The purpose I came for is very simple. I want to invite Ye Zichen to join our company.”

Everyone in the ward was stunned.

“Actually, I saw the performance Classmate Ye put on at the school anniversary gala the other day. Seriously, you are someone born to be a star. I sincerely invite you to join our company. I can promise to give you the best production and public relations team, and to pave the way for you... The only thing I need is your voice.”

The conditions that Hu Hong offered were very hard to refuse.

Ye Zichen was still a student in university, the promises he got from the talent agency’s director in person were insanely high.

“Ye-zi, you’re going to be a star.”

“Ye-zi, shouldn’t you give us bros an autograph?”

“Ye-zi, amazing.”

All his roommates in the ward started to congratulate him. At the same time, Hu Hong also looked at Ye Zichen with a smile.

Hu Hong felt like Ye Zichen was definitely a jade ore after hearing his songs.

That's why he also made the determination to bring him into the company. He even came in person in order to ensure that no issues occurred.

However.

"Sorry, I refuse," Ye Zichen smiled, then pursed his lips, causing everyone in the ward to be stunned when they heard it.

Yang Yushi, who had been standing beside Hu Hong, also opened her eyes wide in shock. Hu Hong even said in confusion, "You said..."

Ye Zichen raised his head with a smile, then stared straight at Yang Yushi!

"I said, sorry, I refuse!"

Chapter 80 – Fatty Bai Yield

“What a great chance this is!”

“Ye-zi, stop acting like an idiot.”

Ye Zichen’s roommates within the room started to try and convince him. However, Ye Zichen continued to look at Yang Yushi, who was beside Hu Hong.

“Sorry, I made you guys come here for nothing,” Ye Zichen gave a deep bow, then pushed Zhang Rui and co. aside, before leaving the ward.

Ye Zichen was unable to calm down even leaving the ward.

At that moment, the door to the ward opened once again, and Yang Yushi ran over to Ye Zichen’s side.

“Can we have a chat?”

Within a small coffee shop near the hospital.

Yang Yushi deliberately pushed down her cap as they sat in seat in the corner. Despite doing that, quite a few people in the coffee shop recognized her.

All of a sudden, the two of them became the center of attention in

the coffee shop.

“Miss Yang, your coffee.”

“Thank you.”

“Err... Can you give me an autograph?”

The waiter left joyously with Yang Yushi's autograph. Meanwhile, Ye Zichen sat on the chair and casually stirred the coffee with a faint smile on his face.

“You're really popular, aren't you?”

“Ye Zichen, shouldn't our reunion after so long be a happy thing? Why does it sound like mockery?”

Yang Yushi looked down slightly, revealing a faint troubling look in her eyes.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and smiled as if he didn't understand, then drank the coffee in his cup without any milk at once.

“It's kind of bitter.”

“Ye Zichen, have you been listening to me at all?” Yang Yushi

raised her voice.

“Oh, I’m listening,” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and leaned back on the chair. “I wasn’t targeting you when I gave my reply just now. I was speaking the truth. You are a trending star and I, a mere peasant, am very envious, is that not okay?”

“Ye Zichen!”

Ye Zichen turned silent when Yang Yushi shouted his name loudly.

After a long time.

“I think I should get going. Someone might take a photo of a public figure like you being with me. It will have a negative impact for you.”

Ye Zichen stood up and prepared to leave, however Yang Yushi stood up and stopped him.

“Why didn’t you agree when Hu Hong gave you the chance?”

“I don’t want to enter the entertainment industry.”

“You’re lying, you clearly told me three years ago that you wanted to be a singer.”

...

“You have no right of being with my daughter at all. You’re the same kind of people.”

“Here is a million, take the money and leave my daughter.”

“Stop bothering my daughter, think about your mother.”

Crack.

Ye Zichen clenched his fists fiercely, then took several deep breaths...

“I don’t want to now.”

Yang Yushi looked at up stared straight into Ye Zichen’s eyes with her bright and beautiful eyes.

“Alright, then let me ask you. Is your promise from before still valid?”

Buzz...

Ye Zichen’s phone in his pocket rang. He took a look at the caller ID and saw that it was Xiao Yumei.

“My girlfriend is calling me. I’m going to go now.”

“Girlfriend?”

“Sorry, everything I said before were lies.”

Slap.

Yang Yushi raised her hands and slapped Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen rubbed his hurting cheek and smiled towards Yang Yushi. Then he paid the bill for the coffee before leaving the coffee shop.

“Ye Zichen, do you and Yang Yushi know each other? I think she was already very famous when I was alive, how could you know her?”

Liu Jing continued to ask as she floated in midair.

Ye Zichen frowned, “Why do you have so many questions?”

“I’m just curious!” Liu Jing went above Ye Zichen’s head and said. “I feel like there’s a story between the two of you.”

“Don’t you find yourself annoying?”

Ye Zichen suddenly stopped and raised his eyebrows at Liu Jing, who floated in midair, “Stop mentioning her to me. If you mention her to me one more time, then I’ll get White Impermanence to take you to the Underworld.

Liu Jing instantly stopped.

However, Ye Zichen’s heart was already in chaos due to Liu Jing’s words.

Know her!

He didn’t just know her!

“Director Xiao, I can buy it using a high price. Please be merciful and give me a path to survival.”

Bai Dahai stood in front of Xiao Yumei’s jewelry store and begged. His actions had caused the shop to have almost no customers in the recent few days.

Xiao Yumei frowned and looked at Bai Dahai, “Director Bai, can you not block our entrance? This is affecting my business.”

“Director Xiao, just agree to giving me some ores.”

Bai Dahai only did it because he had no other choice, jewelry businessmen like them needed to always pay attention to the

situation in the stone gambling venues, they needed to have enough jade in order to support the jewelry store's everyday activities.

However, Ye Zichen's crazy sweep had caused it to be very hard to buy ores that could open up jade in the market.

Some smaller jewelry shops could survive, but he couldn't.

He was one of the top jewelry businessmen in the industry. He needed enough jade sources to support his business.

Ye Zichen's actions had completely cut off all his path.

"Bai Dahai, what are you doing?"

Ye Zichen immediately saw Bai Dahai, who was blocking off the entrance in order to beg Xiao Yumei, the moment he got off the taxi.

Xiao Yumei's eyes brightened when she saw Ye Zichen, then she ran towards him.

"Zichen."

"Yumei."

Ye Zichen naturally held Xiao Yumei's hand and walked in front of Bai Dahai.

“Boss Bai, we all run businesses here. What the hell are you doing blocking off the shop like this?”

“Young Master Ye... Mr. Ye! I have no other choice,” Bai Dahai's already small eyes nearly squinted together. “We jewelers requires getting a few good ores on ore auctions in order to feed ourselves, but you...”

Ye Zichen instantly understood. It seems like his crazy sweep caused there to be a lack of jade in the ore auction circles, so this fatty was unable to do any business.

He didn't think that what his thoughtless act would lead to such a consequence.

Ye Zichen smiled and shrugged, “Boss Bai, what goes around comes around. You didn't forget how you bullied Yumei at the auction, right?”

“Ahh, Young Master Ye, that was me, Bai Dahai, having eyes but not recognizing Mt. Tai and having eyes with no pupils.”

Bai Dahai was about to cry. He only attacked Xiao Yumei's company like that due to it being a request from someone else.

“Young Master Ye, you're a great forgiving person, please be

merciful and give me a path to survival. I have an eighty-years old mother and a baby that is waiting for milk...”

“Enough, enough, stop bullshitting with me here,” Ye Zichen waved his hand impatiently. What eighty-years old mother and baby waiting for milk.

Does he think that this was a TV show!

“It’s simple if you want to survive! Didn’t you talk about merging with Yumei’s jewelry shop before? I’ll give you the chance, hand over fifty-one percent of the shares and become a subsidiary shop, then I’ll get Yumei to give you jade.”

“Young Master Ye...”

“The chance is in front of you, it’s all on you now.”

With that, Ye Zichen wrapped his arm around Xiao Yumei’s waist with a smile.

“Let’s go back and celebrate Tiantian’s birthday.”

Chapter 81 – Hao Wen’s Threat

“Ye Zichen, what you said to Bai Dahai just now wasn’t actually serious, right?”

Xiao Yumei looked at the front passenger seat while she drove. Ye Zichen slightly raised the corner of his mouth, rolled down the window of the car and lit a cigarette for himself.

“You don’t think this fatty came to ask for mercy, right?”

“Did he not?” Xiao Yumei was shocked for a moment, she felt like everything the fatty said made sense.

Since they took all of the jade-giving ores in the ore circle, her jewelry chain could develop very quickly.

Oppositely, those who were once competitors would fall into a trough.

As a leader in the industry, it is very normal for Fatty Bai to ask for ores when he couldn’t endure the pressure from the terrible business.

“This fatty, ha, he’s not as simple as you think,” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and smiled as he threw the cigarette butt outside the window.

Meanwhile, outside Xiao Yumei's jewelry store.

Fatty Bai sat in the car, but did not start it. Instead, he dialed a number.

“Hao-ge, Ye Zichen told me to give him fifty-one percent of the jewelry shop's shares, do I agree?”

“Fifty-one percent?” the person on the other side of the call blanked out for a moment, then laughed coldly. “Give it to him.”

“But...” Fatty Bai was a bit reluctant. This was a business that he used time and effort to build up, giving it so easily to others...

“No but's, would Young Master Di treat you badly? Think about your daughter!”

The dark words on the other side of the call caused Fatty Bai to open his eyes wide, then finally submitted reluctantly, “I understand.”

Tiantian was dressed like a little princess and ran around the room like a joyous deer.

Ye Zichen sat on the living room sofa and reached out towards Tiantian. Seeing that, she immediately leapt into his gaze, “Daddy, why didn't you bring Tiantian a present?”

...

Ye Zichen was speechless, only then did he remember that the Barbie he bought for Tiantian was still at home.

“Tiantian, how about daddy making it up to you next time?”

“Okay. I want a huge Transformer,” Tiantian nodded with a smile, while Ye Zichen raised his eyebrow and smiled.

He didn't think that Tiantian would actually like the stuff that boys like.

“Zichen, Tiantian, come and eat.”

They held Tiantian's birthday at home, and since there weren't many people at home, when the three of them sat together at the table, a sort of warmth had begun to spread out.

Tiantian sat closely beside Ye Zichen. Xiao Yumei could tell that she really liked this daddy.

Tiantian then started to run around the room once again after eating her birthday cake.

Ye Zichen and Xiao Yumei sat on the living room sofa. As Xiao Yumei looked at Tiantian's lively look, a smile couldn't help but surface on her face, “Tiantian is much better than before,

previously, she would never be so crazy.”

“I will see Tiantian more in the future,” Ye Zichen raised his hand and caressed Xiao Yumei’s hair, before wrapping his arm around her waist.

Xiao Yumei leaned her head lightly against Ye Zichen’s shoulders and closed her eyes in order to enjoy the feelings of safety her man brought her.

Dingdong.

The doorbell of the mansion rang, causing Xiao Yumei to raise her eyebrows in confusion.

She didn’t have any friends around her. Logically speaking, no one would press their doorbell at this moment.

She stood up from the sofa in confusion. When Xiao Yumei returned back into the mansion, a square box was in her hands.

“What is this?” Ye Zichen asked.

Xiao Yumei shook her head, “I don’t know, it was left in at the mansion entrance.”

Ye Zichen took the box over. It was extremely light, and he couldn’t hear any sounds even when he shook it.

Ye Zichen untied the ribbon on the box with a frown and opened it.

A birthday card fell out from within.

Happy birthday, Tiantian.

Signed: Hao Wen.

Those were simple celebratory words, but what worried people was the image of a blood-dripping dagger behind the card.

“Hao Wen,” Xiao Yumei’s face turned stark white. Ye Zichen also looked at the card in his hand with a frown, and did not say anything.

“Zichen, what did Hao Wen want to do by sending the card here? What does that dagger mean? Does he want to do something to Tiantian?” Xiao Yumei’s tone was full of nervousness. Although Tiantian was adopted, she had been beside her for so long, she couldn’t afford to see anything happen to Tiantian.

“Don’t worry, perhaps he just wanted to wish Tiantian happy birthday,” Ye Zichen reached out his hand to caress Xiao Yumei’s hair and comforted her softly.

“But...”

“How about this, let Tiantian stay at my place. My place is definitely safe. No matter how capable Hao Wen is, he won’t be able to touch even a hair on Tiantian.”

“Zichen, I...”

“I understand,” Ye Zichen reached out his hand to pull Xiao Yumei into his arms, then patted her shoulders, while his eyes gradually emitted a cold light.

If Hao Wen was smart, then he better not have any bad thoughts.

Otherwise, Ye Zichen would screw up even the people behind him.

When night arrived, Tiantian, who had messed around for the entire day, returned to sleep in her room.

Ye Zichen stood up from the sofa with a smile and stretched, “Yumei, I’ll be going.”

“Don’t go.”

Xiao Yumei suddenly wrapped her arms him from behind.

The feeling that he suddenly felt behind from caused Ye Zichen to boil. He wrapped his arms behind her slender waist and kissed

back...

Smooch.

“Zichen, go to my room.”

Bang.

Ye Zichen placed Xiao Yumei onto the bed, then essentially ripped off both of their clothes like a savage beast.

They soon became naked.

Xiao Yumei's blush reached her neck as she looked at Ye Zichen, who was panting above her, with watery eyes.

“Zichen...”

After the soft call, she wrapped her arms around Ye Zichen's neck and kissed him.

In that instant, an explosion was triggered.

When Ye Zichen woke up the next morning, Xiao Yumei was no longer beside him. He couldn't help but lick his lips when he thought back to the craziness the previous night...

She was truly a naturally sexy woman.

“Damn pervert... Damn pervert!”

Liu Jing’s scream suddenly sounded out above Ye Zichen. He looked up and saw her glaring at him.

Ye Zichen smiled wryly when he suddenly realized what happened.

He was too concentrated on rolling in the bedsheets with Xiao Yumei that he forgot that there was a virgin ghost girl, Lil’ Liu Jing, around him.

From the looks of her, she seemed to have watched the battle the entire night?

That was definitely a devastation to her sight and mind.

“Hehe, sorry. But this isn’t completely my fault, when the feelings arise... What’s more, you could have stayed in the Dragon Eye, I didn’t force you to watch.”

Ye Zichen said shamelessly. Hearing that, Liu Jing waved her fists and pounded him.

Ye Zichen allowed her raindrop-like punches to hit his chest. However, his phone rang at that moment.

Ye Zichen placed the phone beside his ear and heard a deep voice sound out.

“Ye Zichen, let’s meet.”

Chapter 82 – Egotistic Yang Zhen

Within the confines of a luxurious car.

Ye Zichen smoked as he crossed his legs and swirled a glass of expensive red wine in another.

A middle-aged man with a sullen expression sat opposite him. That man was Yang Yushi's father, Yang Zhen.

“Uncle Yang, we haven't met for a while, right?”

Ye Zichen leaned back in the seat.

Yang Zhen looked up with a sharp gaze that others could not meet directly, “Indeed, we haven't met for a while. But we clearly didn't meet, isn't that right?”

Ye Zichen did not deny what Yang Zhen said.

“To be honest, I don't want to see you either, it seems like you were the one who sought me out,” the corner of Ye Zicehn's mouth revealed a faint smile. He raised his hand and tapped the ashes of his cigarette into that glass of expensive red wine. “Uncle Yang, what do you want to say to me this time?”

“You shouldn't have met with Yushi.”

“I didn’t want to do that either,” Ye Zichen pursed his lips and smiled. “I also hope that she can live her new life.”

“But you interrupted it!”

The light in Yang Zhen’s eyes faded, what replaced it was a sharpness that could not be met.

Ye Zichen raised his head, and met his gaze with a soft reply, “Then what do you want?”

“This is an one million cheque...”

“Ha...” Ye Zichen laughed the moment Yang Zhen took out the cheque.

Three years ago, Yang Zhen used a cheque like that to destroy all of Ye Zichen’s dignity.

Three years later, it was the same scene, same conversation and same cheque.

“Uncle Yang, I will call you uncle once again due to Yushi,” Ye Zichen pursed his lips, while his eyes were filled with hints of mockery. “Did you think that money really can solve everything? And money was almighty?”

Yang Zhen’s face grew dark. He used his incomparably sharp gaze

to stare right at Ye Zichen, but what he got in response was unending mockery.

“Are you really doing it for Yushi’s own good? You got rid of all of the pursuers around her, and when she becomes an adult, you will get her to step into the wedding that you selected for her, in order live the life of a rich married woman that normal people can only look up to. You think this is the happiness you are bringing for her, right?

“What a joke. If you put it in a nice way, it’s just that you don’t want Yushi to suffer in the second half of her life. If I were to put it in a nasty way, aren’t you doing it for business alliances, so that your career can develop further? Am I right?

“I won’t disturb Yushi’s life, and you have no need to worry about me having ill intentions. But please believe me. If Yushi doesn’t like the fate you designed for her, then I will shatter that very fate with my own hands.

“Do not doubt my words, and don’t think of threatening me with my mother. Otherwise, if I go crazy, you can’t handle it.”

As Ye Zichen spoke, the mockery on his face became more and more apparent. He picked up the cheque off the table and ripped it into countless pieces that scattered onto the floor of the car, in front of Yang Zhen.

“To be honest, this bit of money is completely worthless to the current me. Oh yeah, let me remind you, go and do a full body

checkup at the hospital when you have time.”

With that, Ye Zichen pushed open the car door and walked away.

Yang Zhen sat straight on the sofa of the car, while Ye Zichen’s words echoed in his mind.

“Master...”

A servant walked over from the side. Yang Zhen took a glance at the cheque pieces on the floor, then raised his eyebrows.

“Clean this up and bring young mistress home.”

Ye Zichen’s heart was unable to return to its normal calmness even after a long while.

He leaned back against a willow tree by the side of the road and started to smoke his cigarette. At the same time, his heart was filled with mockery for Yang Zhen and pity for Yang Yushi.

Getting a stubborn father was her misfortune, but it was also her fortune.

At least, her father loved her.

Liu Jing floated beside Ye Zichen without saying anything. She

could feel that he was in a really bad mood.

“Do you have a lot of things you want to ask?” Ye Zichen suddenly looked up and smiled towards Liu Jing. “Actually, Yang Yushi and I were a couple three years ago. The one just now was her father. As you can probably imagine, he tore us apart back then.”

Liu Jing raised her eyebrows. Actually, she had already guessed what was going on, but it was different when Ye Zichen admitted it.

“Such a pity.”

“Pity?” Ye Zichen shook his head and smiled. “Isn’t this what a father should do? He didn’t want his daughter to suffer, especially with a poor brat like me...”

“If it was my dad, he definitely wouldn’t have done that.”

Liu Jing’s eyes were filled with certainty. Ye Zichen rubbed her head when he saw her like that, while gentleness filled his eyes.

“But, speaking to your ex-girlfriend’s father like that isn’t really good, right?”

At that moment, Liu Jing slowly spoke once again.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes and cursed, “This is all because I gave him face, okay? If it wasn’t for him, I would be doing it a second time. That’s great now, my proper business got screwed up, can’t I not get angry? It was already nice of me not hitting him!”

“You... shameless!” Liu Jing screamed out, and raised her hand to hit him.

Ye Zichen quickly ran away, but heard someone call out towards him.

“Ye Zichen.”

Hearing that, Ye Zichen stopped and turned around, only to find that it was Su Yan calling him.

Ye Zichen felt a rather regretful when he faced this goddess who was beyond a friend, but not yet a lover.

He had pondered about how to get that extra point of affability level, but he just couldn’t find the chance to.

Ye Zichen gave Liu Jing a cue, signaling her not to cause trouble, then ran to Su Yan’s side with a smile.

“Why are you here?”

Su Yan immediately wrapped her arms around Ye Zichen and

secretly gave him a cue.

Only then did he notice a girl with very heavy make-up beside Su Yan.

When the girl saw Su Yan hug Ye Zichen, her eyes subconsciously revealed a sign of displeasure.

“Su Yan, introduce us?”

“Gao Chang, he’s my boyfriend, Ye Zichen.”

“Boyfriend?” Gao Chang raised her eyebrows and checked Ye Zichen out.

Not long later, a hint of disdain sparked in her eyes.

“Su Yan, you were a flower in our class, you should be a school beauty even in university, you got a boyfriend of that level?”

What do you mean “that level”?

Ye Zichen was annoyed.

How was his level low?

“Girl, you’re sick,” Ye Zichen glared at her and said.

“You’re the one who’s sick!” Gao Chang yelled.

“Don’t believe me? You’re actually sick. Go and have a checkup at the hospital when you have time.

“Zichen...”

Su Yan pulled Ye Zichen’s arm.

At the same time, Gao Chang also snorted, “Su Yan, I came here just to pass along a message. ‘It’s our high school reunion soon. Young Master Bai will also be there, compare him with the one beside you... Zeze, think about how much effort Young Master Bai put into you. Do as you see fit.’”

With that, Gao Chang revealed that look of disdain once again. She twitched her mouth towards Ye Zichen and drove away in a Beetle parked at the side of the road.

Chapter 83 – Su Yan’s Affability Level Level Up

“Su Yan, you must tell her that she’s sick the next time you meet her,” Ye Zichen pointed towards the fleeing Beetle.

Su Yan pulled his arm, “Alright now, stop getting mad at her.”

“How am I getting mad at her?” Ye Zichen shook his head and sigh. “She really is ill.”

“Ah?”

A hint of confusion flashed across Su Yan’s eyes, but thinking about how Ye Zichen had saved her grandfather, he might really have noticed something.

“What illness?”

“Mental illness!” Ye Zichen said with certainty.

He.

Su Yan couldn’t help but giggle, then raised her hand to hammer him.

“Don’t talk about her like that.”

“Hahaha, that girl is too cocky. What does her family do? She dares to speak so arrogantly to you, she can’t be a powerful third generation of the capital, right?”

Ye Zichen teased Su Yan.

Su Yan giggled and shook her head, “No, she was my classmate in high school, her family conditions are pretty good.”

“Then she actually dared to speak like that to you? She is truly crazy!”

Ye Zichen was shocked. Just what was Su Yan’s identity!

Her dad was a colonel and her grandfather was a chief.

A true powerful third generation.

What’s more, Su Qilong was also a major businessman. Despite all of her family background, Gao Chang still dared to speak like that to Su Yan.

Either she’s ignorant, or she’s crazy.

“She doesn’t know about my situation.”

Su Yan chuckled. Hearing that, Ye Zichen immediately understood.

It wasn't a surprise for the other person not to know with Su Yan's personality of keeping a low profile, but then he suddenly thought of that Young Master Bai.

“What's Young Master Bai's relationship with you?”

“Normal classmates, he did pursue me in high school,” Su Yan pursed her lips, then quickly explained. “He really is just a normal classmate.”

“Alright, I believe you.”

Ye Zichen caressed her hair, causing Su Yan to blush. She enjoyed the feeling of being with Ye Zichen a lot, especially since she could faintly feel that his position in her heart could not be replaced.

However, she was still a bit resistant towards it in her subconscious.

The reason was Xia Keke.

As best friends, she was very clear about Xia Keke having feelings for Ye Zichen as well. She didn't want to fight over him with her, but she didn't want to give up either.

“Ye Zichen, I have something to ask you,” Su Yan bit her lips and asked. “Do you know that Keke likes you?”

Ye Zichen was a bit confused when he saw Su Yan’s serious expression.

This was too sudden, she didn’t give him a chance to react at all.

Most importantly, he didn’t think that Su Yan would ask him so bluntly.

Their affability level was 499, there was a possibility of the string snapping once again as long as it didn’t reach 500.

He could tell from there that his answer was of utmost importance.

“I know.”

Ye Zichen chose to speak the truth after endless struggling.

The moment he finished, he was prepared to receive the news of the marriage string snapping.

But...

There wasn't!

The marriage string did not snap.

Phew.

Ye Zichen let out a long sigh, it was so close just now.

He raised his head to take a peek at Su Yan and saw that she was not affected by the answer at all.

More importantly, she spoke up once more.

“Then do you know that I like you?”

“Yes.”

“Then do you like me?”

“I do.”

In that instant, a smile that would put hundreds of flowers to shame bloomed on Su Yan's face as she leapt into Ye Zichen's arms.

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Su Yan increased by 1. Current affability level: 500.

Affability level levelled up.

Current lover status confirmed.

Ye Zichen's heart shook upon receiving these messages.

It levelled up just like that.

The 1 point of affability level actually increased through these questions!

Su Yan held Ye Zichen tightly and laid her head against his chest.

She had suppressed it for so long.

From the moment that he made the bet with her father for her, his figure was scorched deeply into her heart.

However, she kept on worrying about Xia Keke.

She felt like she was going mad.

Until he said that he likes her.

She felt that it didn't matter anymore.

No matter who likes her, no matter who else was by his side.

It was enough as long as he liked her, and as long as there was a position for her in his heart.

After a long while, Su Yan broke free from Ye Zichen's arms.

"I'm telling you, don't get too full of yourself, I will only... because Keke is my best friend... If you dare to bully me in the future, then I'll get my older brother to beat you up."

"Yes ma'am."

Ye Zichen returned to the hospital with Su Yan and saw that a terrible expression on the face of Ye Rong, who was sitting in the ward.

"Mom."

"Where did you run off to now. Can you just stay peacefully in the hospital?"

"I..."

Ye Zichen stuttered without saying a word. However, at that very moment, Mother Ye noticed the hands of Su Yan and Ye Zichen holding each other tightly.

“This girl...”

“Hello Auntie, I’m Zichen’s classmate.”

Su Yan said with a blush, while her heart beat like a fawn.

On the other hand, Ye Zichen knew that there was nothing to hide from Ye Rong’s expression. He directly nodded, “Mom, didn’t you want to see your daughter-in-law? Here she is.”

“Ye Zichen...”

Su Yan yanked Ye Zichen’s arm, while her face was completely red.

The smile on Mother Ye’s face became even brighter when she heard him say “daughter-in-law”. She quickly went up to Su Yan, then scolded Ye Zichen, “Hurry up and get your bandages changed at Doctor Huang’s. Doctor Huang came many times already.”

“Understood.”

Ye Zichen looked at Su Yan with a glance telling her to not

worry, then left the ward. However, when he arrived at Huang Shengmei's office, he felt rather troubled.

The two of them had a marriage string.

But he didn't know how it appeared.

Ye Zichen stood in front of the office entrance for a long time without entering, while he hesitated. Yet, at that moment, the office door was opened from within.

"Ye Zichen."

"Hey Doctor Huang."

Ye Zichen entered Doctor Huang's office.

The body of Ye Zichen, who had taken a Body Enhancing Pill, was far better than that of normal people's. Even though it was a gunshot wound, it had more or less healed after several days of rest.

Huang Shengmei said softly after tying up Ye Zichen's bandages, "You recovered pretty well, you should go and get discharged."

Oh.

Ye Zichen didn't expect that Huang Shengmei's tone was more or less the same as before. However, then he thought about it and understood.

The affability level on their marriage string was merely 10.

It was essentially the same as it being nonexistent.

"Thank you for Doctor Huang's care."

"You're too courteous, but when can you save my little brother?" Huang Shengmei looked up. Her little brother was still the most important in her heart.

"That'll have to wait a bit more."

"How long?"

"I'll find you when it's time," Ye Zichen said vaguely. He didn't know how long he needed to store that much qi either.

"Okay," Huang Shengmei smiled. She glanced over Ye Zichen's body with her beautiful eyes, then bit her lips. "Err, you have a girl..."

Dingdong.

Just as Huang Shengmei spoke, Ye Zichen's phone sounded out.

“Wait a moment.”

Chapter 84 – Affability Level That Flew Up

Huang Shengmei bit her lips in annoyance as she looked at Ye Zichen, who was looking down and playing with her phone, just now...

She was just about to ask that.

He actually told her to wait in order to go on WeChat?

Ye Zichen didn't care about that much. He opened WeChat, then saw Nezha looking for him.

Third Prince Nezha: Hey.

Third Prince Nezha: Say something. Hey.

Ye Zichen could imagine just how cute his expression was as he looked at the third prince's moe shota profile pic.

“What is the third prince seeking this little deity for?”

Ye Zichen asked in a testing manner.

“Did you send red packets when I was dragon slaying? Don't try to lie to me, Immortality Peach Fairy-jiejie told me everything.”

Ye Zichen couldn't help but smile when a moe shota profile pic user used such a moe tone.

“This little deity did send it.”

“Make it up to me. I also want to drink that, but I won't make you do it for free. I can exchange with you.”

Exchange.

Ye Zichen's eyes sparkled.

Don't just think that the Third Prince Nezha is moe, he was a top existence in the Heavenly Court. If he wanted to exchange for it, then it definitely wouldn't be anything that bad.

“What is the Third Prince saying, it's just a red packet. I'll just make it up to you.”

Coincidentally, there was an unopened bottle of Nutri-Express on Huang Shengmei's table. He directly scanned it and sent it over.

“Ye Zichen...”

Huang Shengmei looked at what happened in shock.

“F*ck, crap.”

Ye Zichen silently exclaimed.

He was too concentrated on making up to Nezha with a red packet, he forgot about there being someone else that didn't know anything in the room.

Ye Zichen knew that she definitely saw it from Huang Shengmei's expression.

He had to turn her into one of them.

That was Ye Zichen's only thought.

"Don't worry, I'll explain it to you later," Ye Zichen wasn't too anxious even in this situation. No matter what, Huang Shengmei was someone he had a marriage string with.

If he can't explain it properly later, he'll just take her.

As for how he'll explain it to the other women at his side, that'll have to wait!

Ye Zichen looked at his WeChat and saw that the Third Prince Nezha had already received his third packet.

"What is Nutri-Express? What you gave Immortality Peach Fairy-jiejie doesn't seem to be this," The moe third prince expressed his

confusion.

“Third Prince might not know, this is of a much higher class than what I sent them. This would sell for 400 cultivation experience per bottle, theirs was only 300 cultivation experience.

“Oh, oh, oh.”

Since the third prince was innocent, he didn't seem to mind what Ye Zichen said just now.

Not long later, Ye Zichen received the system's notification.

Your intimacy level with Third Prince Nezha increased by 50.
Current intimacy level: 150.

“Wow, that was good. You really didn't lie to me. Since you were so nice to me, I can't treat you shabbily.”

Dingdong.

A red packet immediately appeared on the screen.

Ye Zichen clicked and received the red packet.

Fragment of Soul Pearl Yiyuan x1

It was another fragment of Soul Pearl Yiyuan.

He already has 4 fragments now.

“I heard from Immortality Peach Fairy-jiejie that you got three fragments of Soul Pearl Yiyuan. I coincidentally found one while I was dragon slaying in the dragon’s nest, so I’ll give it to you. I’m telling you, this Soul Pearl Yiyuan is an ancient spiritual item, you can definitely be super powerful in the Heavenly Court if you manage to get it.

So moved.

The Third Prince is such a good deity.

He actually gave such an important treasure to him, but...

The hell?

Even if Nezha gave him the fragment, Ye Zichen still required two more.

Ye Zichen had looked around the Treasure Shop when he got these fragments, but he didn’t find any sign of fragments of Soul Pearl Yiyuan.

Perhaps the Soul Pearl Yiyuan was spiritual item that would invoke the deities’ envy, but isn’t it useless if he doesn’t manage to

gather all of them?

“Thank you, Third Prince.”

No matter what, the Third Prince Nezha did it out of good will. After Ye Zichen thanked him, the Third Prince sent him a smiley face, then disappeared.

“You seemed to be chatting with Nezha?” Huang Shengmei asked in a testing manner.

She suddenly felt like she might have woken up on the wrong side of the bed, that’s why she got into all sorts of weird situation.

The Nutri-Express on her table randomly disappeared, and she saw someone chatting with Nezha.

“Ye Zichen, what to do. She seems to know it all.”

Liu Jing also spoke up. Ye Zichen licked his lips, then put his phone onto Huang Shengmei’s table.

“Have a look.”

“Is that okay?” Although Huang Shengmei said that, her hands still moved towards the phone uncontrollably.

She really was just too curious about how the drink disappeared.

Also, what's with the Third Prince Nezha.

The moment she looked at the phone, she saw that the person Ye Zichen was chatting with just now was really Nezha. More importantly, he was also in a group, where everyone in the group had the name of a deity.

“You can't tell anyone what you saw today, understood?” Ye Zichen walked in front of Huang Shengmei and said, while his nose almost touched hers.

Huang Shengmei immediately blushed, while her heart also started to beat erratically.

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Huang Shengmei increased by 50.
Current affability level: 60.

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Huang Shengmei increased by 50.
Current affability level: 110.

Dingdong.

The indication of their affability level popped up several more times, and only stopped when it reached their affability level reached 490.

“I definitely wouldn’t tell anyone,” Huang Shengmei’s eyes were filled with determination.

Although she still didn’t get what was going on, Ye Zichen showed her his phone due to him trusting her. She definitely can’t betray his trust for her.

“Good,” Ye Zichen reached out to caress Huang Shengmei’s hair.

Meanwhile, Liu Jing twitched her mouth on the side, “Flagrant, brazen, shameless.”

Ye Zichen ignored that mistress’s mockery. He also understood that this sort of method wasn’t good, but he had no other choice.

If the secret was actually leaked, don’t talk about other people, it was already unknown if that Taibai Jinxing would let him off.

As for feelings, that can be developed later.

Isn’t there a lot of situations where people did things first, then got to know each other?

He didn’t do anything yet, so there was no rush to develop their

feelings.

“Uhm, just now, someone called the Canopy Marshal sent you a friend request on your phone.”

Liu Jing pointed at the phone on the table. Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then quickly picked it up, sat back on the chair and crossed his legs.

Indeed, the Canopy Marshal had sent him a friend request.

But this profile pic was truly worthy of retorts. He was looking amazing in a golden armor.

This isn't f*cking like the Zhu Bajie from what he knows, okay!

Never mind, he couldn't care about so much. So many people used fake profile pics on the internet, who said the people in the Heavenly Court can't use them.

What's more, the Canopy Marshal might have used a photo editing app!

Accept.

Ye Zichen immediately looked at their intimacy level.

100.

Friendly.

It seems like the ones that send friend requests would all have at least a Friendly intimacy level. Only Erlang Shen was different, but they somehow managed to become sworn brothers.

“?”

Without knowing the other person’s purpose, Ye Zichen could only send a question mark in a testing manner.

“Sky Sovereign, you finally add I, Old Pig.”

Chapter 85 – The Fifth Fragment Of Soul

Pearl Yiyuan

The Canopy Marshal was definitely a top existence in the Heavenly Court's glutton circle.

He had a huge appetite.

For example, when he was eating ginseng fruits, Sha Wujing only took one bite, but he chucked the entire fruit in his mouth without tasting anything.

In the future, he was definitely going to be a huge customer of Ye Zichen's.

Ye Zichen smiled as he looked at the Canopy Marshal's urgent tone on the screen, "What business does the Canopy Marshal have with this sovereign?"

"Hehe, Old Pig does have just a little matter with the Sky Sovereign."

The Canopy Marshal laughed dumbly, then added a few embarrassed emojis.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen managed to get a good idea of what he wanted.

“Say it.”

“Sky Sovereign got more than a fragment of Soul Pearl Yiyuan from one of the Dragon Kings, right?”

Ye Zichen was stunned when he saw this reply. Why was it the Soul Pearl Yiyuan? He had thought that the Canopy Marshal should be mentioning drinks.

Could it be that the Canopy Marshal is interested in this spiritual item?

If he wanted it, then giving it to him was of no issue. Of course, that was on the basis of him exchanging some sort of treasure with Ye Zichen for it.

At that very moment, Ye Zichen was like an evil merchant, only thinking about profits.

These deities have a ton of treasures, who was he supposed to screw over if not them!

“Canopy Marshal wants the fragment of Soul Pearl Yiyuan? About this... Marshal should know that this fragment is an ancient divine item. This sovereign actually...

Ye Zichen pretended like he wasn't willing to give it away, in order to raise the price later on.

If the Canopy Marshal actually wants it, then he would have to give up a lot of things.

But he was wrong.

“He, Sky Sovereign does want the fragment of Soul Pearl Yiyuan, right? Old Pig also has one, would it be possible to exchange it for several hundred bottles of the drink you sent the other day?”

Ugh.

Ye Zichen felt the image in front of him darken when he saw the reply.

He really wasn't a businessman material. That's great now, he had picked up a boulder and smashed his own feet with it.

These deities from the Heavenly Court really weren't that easy to deal with. He must be more careful when he deals with these deities in the future.

F*ck, you played me!

If the Canopy Marshal heard this, he could definitely scream out his innocence. He was an honest boy in the Heavenly Court, okay!

Ye Zichen looked at what was written once again...

Several hundred bottles of drinks.

There was no way Ye Zichen could give him that.

“Canopy Marshal, this sovereign does require fragments of Soul Pearl Yiyuan, but even if you give me your fragment, this sovereign might not be able to collect all of the fragments for a complete one. So... the value is going to decrease by a huge chunk, right?”

Raising the price as high as possible when selling, pushing the price down as low as possible when buying.

This was a businessman.

Canopy General clearly agreed to Ye Zichen’s words, or perhaps he was just desperate for the soft drinks...

“Sky Sovereign, how many bottles can you give me?”

“Thirty.”

“A hundred.”

“Fifty.”

“Eighty.”

“Let’s compromise, sixty-five. No more than that. Marshal, you have to know, these are rare goods.”

Ye Zichen’s heart was bleeding even though it was only sixty five bottles.

That was nearly 200 yuan.

This also means that he could have sold it for twenty thousand cultivation experience.

He didn’t think that it was worth using twenty thousand cultivation experience for a shitty fragment.

“Sure, then we’ll do as Sky Sovereign says.”

Dingdong.

Canopy Marshal directly sent the Soul Pearl Yiyuan fragment over.

He wasn’t afraid of Ye Zichen breaking his promise. Ignoring the fact that a screenshot could be made of their conversation, no matter what, Ye Zichen was a Sky Sovereign that lived with Taibai Jinxing.

He won't just take a fragment from him.

Ye Zichen put away the fragment, causing the number of fragments of Soul Pearl Yiyuan to reach 5 in the Treasure Chest.

He was just 1 fragment away from a complete Soul Pearl Yiyuan. It seemed like he was very close, but he was still very far off.

He didn't know where the last piece was either. If he can't find it...

Then they were just rubbish.

"Sky Sovereign, shouldn't you..."

Canopy Marshal wanted to speak, but stopped. Ye Zichen couldn't help but roll his eyes when he saw his desperate look, "One moment, this sovereign needs to return to the mansion to get it."

F*ck, he needs to buy some first, okay?

Ye Zichen went to the supermarket downstairs to buy a few boxes of drinks. As he did so, he couldn't help but have a thought.

All of his junk food would definitely become a trend in the Heavenly Court.

As opposed to going to a supermarket to buy it every day, he might as well open a supermarket.

When that happens, he can just directly scan whatever the Heavenly Court wants.

This would prevent trouble and the leakage of his secret.

The moment Ye Zichen sent the drinks over to the Canopy Marshal, the other side directly received it.

It was clear that this big bro of the glutton circles, Canopy Marshal, had been waiting in front of the screen.

“Sky Sovereign, why is there a bag of food as well?”

“Dorayaki, it’s a gift. If you think it’s delicious, then just advertise it for this sovereign in the Heavenly Court.”

“Understood, understood. Thank you, Sky Sovereign.”

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with Canopy Marshal increased by 20.
Current intimacy level: 120.

When Ye Zichen put away his phone, his face was full of smiles.

It seems like his business can open up in the Heavenly Court very soon. When that happens, cultivation experiences would come rolling in.

But before then, he needed to find time to make a flyer.

It would be like the order menu for restaurants, all of the items would be on there. Then, when a deity wants something, they can just send him the cultivation experience through WeChat.

He'll immediately send out the goods.

Then...

Darling, remember to leave a 5-star rating.

Ye Zichen returned to Huang Shengmei's office with a dumb smile. Doctor Huang sat on the chair without moving, waiting for Ye Zichen's return.

"Doctor Huang," Huang Shengmei quickly stood up from the chair and said in a weird tone. "Stop calling me Doctor Huang. Call me Shengmei."

...

Only then did Ye Zichen realize, their affability level was nearly

the borderline for lovers.

“Shengmei.”

“Mmm.”

Huang Shengmei felt a sweetness in her heart. She didn't know why she fell uncontrollably for Ye Zichen.

It was as if a string was dragging her all the way to Ye Zichen's side.

“Oh yeah, you have pretty much healed. I'll directly help you get discharged. It's pretty expensive living in the hospital, it's too much of a waste of money. Also, just come directly to my home the next time you need the bandages changed. I'll change it for you at home.”

Ye Zichen was rather unused to this sort of rocket development.

He couldn't help but note how amazing Yue Lao's marriage string was. The moment he affability level reached there, they did not need to develop any feelings for each other for it to turn like this.

“Okay, I'll help your little brother and look at his legs when I get my bandages changed. If there's nothing else, then I'll be going.”

“Okay, take care.”

The moment Ye Zichen left Huang Shengmei's office, he leaned on the wall and panted.

Liu Jing's delicate face was full of disdain. She floated around him once and snorted, "Scum."

"How am I a scum?" Ye Zichen rolled his eyes. "I'm telling you, you're lucky that you're a ghost girl. If you were a human, I wouldn't even let you go, do you understand? I will completely control you."

"Tsk, only a ghost would need you to be controlled by you."

Liu Jing snorted, while Ye Zichen chuckled.

"Aren't you a ghost?"

Chapter 86 – The Ugly Daughter-In-Law Is Going To Meet The Mother-In-Law

Su Yan wrapped her arms around Ye Zichen's arm as they walked along the street.

Su Yan couldn't help but ask as she looked at the look of the man, who seemed to be lost in thoughts, "What is it? Are you facing some trouble?"

Trouble.

Ye Zichen did have one.

Ever since he had the thought of opening a supermarket, he begun to think about what was the best way to do it.

He kept on thinking about finding a chance to open a supermarket.

The size didn't have to be too big, but the storage must be huge.

There were so many deities in the Heavenly Court, if the business expands in the future, he definitely needed a large stock.

"Su Yan, I want to open a supermarket. Do you think that's a good idea?" Ye Zichen thought about it, then decided to ask Su Yan for her thoughts.

“Ah?”

Su Yan was stunned.

When Ye Zichen saw her confused expression, she smiled, “Never mind, pretend that I didn’t say anything.”

“Don’t think too much into it, I just didn’t react. Why did you suddenly think about opening a supermarket?”

“It’s just an initial thought, I might not actually open it.”

“Oh, oh, then alright. I will support you no matter what you do,” Su Yan leaned on Ye Zichen’s shoulder with a smile.

Yet, at that moment, the Ye Zichen’s phone rang.

“Yumei,” Ye Zichen picked up the call with a smile, while Su Yan frowned.

Yumei.

A woman!

“Alright, I’ll be right there.”

Ye Zichen quickly hung up, then saw that Su Yan, who was beside him, was like a furious lion cub as she glared at him with a frown.

“Su Yan, I have some business, so I have to leave for a moment.”

“To see that Yumei!?” Su Yan’s tone was very strange.

Ye Zichen nodded with a coy smile.

“Playboy,” Su Yan frowned, then let go of his arm with an angry snort.

“Hurry up and go, but I am the legal wife! Do you understand! Also, you’re coming with me to that high school reunion.”

Within Yumei Jewelers.

Fatty Bai sat on the chair opposite Xiao Yumei. There was a contract of shares transfer in front of him.

“Yumei,” Ye Zichen pushed opened the office door and walked in.

When she saw him, Xiao Yumei’s eyes brightened, while she blushed, “Zichen, Director Bai finally drafted up the contract for the transfer of shares.”

Xiao Yumei pointed towards the contract on the table and frowned. Then he walked beside Fatty Bai.

Fatty Bai quickly stood up from the chair and forced out a smile, “Young Master Ye.”

The contract on the table was indeed a register of share transfer, transferring fifty one percent of Dafa Jewelers without any other conditions.

Ye Zichen looked at that contract, then sat onto the sofa in the office with a light smile, “Director Bai, you really put a lot into this.”

“Young Master Ye, what are you saying! You have a large amount of ores, Director Xiao used these ores to expand her business by several times in such a short period of time. This is something everyone in the circle witnessed. I truly got the advantage by giving half of the shares to follow Young Master Ye.”

Director Bai smiled like a grandson, causing several layers of folds to appear on the fat on his face.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen’s eyes shimmered as he said playfully, “Really? Director Bai got the advantage? That’s no good, I don’t like to be taken advantage of, how about Director Bai giving me a bit more shares?”

Fatty Bai’s expression instantly darkened.

If it wasn't because he was threatened, he wouldn't even be willing to hand over this fifty one percent of the shares.

This was a business that he had established with a lot of effort.

Ye Zichen smiled meaningfully when he saw Fatty Bai's sullen expression, then stood up from the sofa.

"I'm just kidding. Director Bai, don't be so nervous," he patted Fatty Bai's shoulders and pointed onto the contract on the table.

"Both lawyers are here. If there are no other issues, then sign it."

"Sure, sure."

Director Bai picked up a pen to sign his name onto the contract, then pushed it in front of Xiao Yumei.

Just as Xiao Yumei was about to sign, Ye Zichen stopped her with a chuckle.

"I'll sign it."

Before anyone else reacted, Ye Zichen directly signed his name onto the contract.

Fatty Bai's expression instantly turned terrible, causing Ye Zichen to put on an expression of confusion.

“Director Bai, what happened? Are you unwell? That's no good, you are a major shareholder in my jewelry shop in the future, your health is very important.”

“Thank you for Young Master Ye's care. I'm fine.”

“That's good. Alright, we signed the contract, so you can leave now, Director Bai. I'll go to my jewelry shop to survey the work in a few days.”

“Okay.”

After Bai Dahai left the office with a dark look, Xiao Yumei asked in confusion, “Zichen, why did you sign the contract just now? Didn't you say to combine his jewelry shop with mine?”

“There's something up with this fatty. No matter what, this jewelry store is his life's work. It's too weird for him to just give it to people when mentioned.

“So it's like this...”

Xiao Yumei nodded understandingly.

Yet, Ye Zichen approached her as he licked his lips, “Mei-jie...”

Ye Zichen wrapped his arm around Xiao Yumei's waist and put her onto the office table.

"No-Not here..."

Xiao Yumei's face instantly turned incomparably red as she used her white hands to push Ye Zichen's shoulder.

"Don't worry, they don't dare to enter."

With that, Ye Zichen's lowered his mouth without any hesitation.

All of a sudden, the room was filled with a lewd scene.

"Daddy, Mommy, where are we going?" Tiantian said childishly as she laid in Ye Zichen's arms.

"We're going to stay at Daddy's home."

Ye Zichen caressed Tiantian's hair. Xiao Yumei and Ye Zichen had discussed it the previous day that they will get Tiantian to stay here for her safety.

Xiao Yumei, who was driving, had her face full of a nervous red. She was about to see her mother-in-law very soon, who knows what her mother-in-law would be like.

“Don’t worry...”

Actually, Ye Zichen was even more worried than Xiao Yumei. He took Su Yan to see his mom in the afternoon, and now he brought another one back within a few hours.

He had no idea what his mom would think.

Within the mansion.

Mother Ye was sitting in the courtyard blanking out when Ye Zichen took a deep breath and smile.

“Mom.”

“Zichen, you came back. You and Lil’ Yan...”

Just when she turned her head, she was stunned.

She thought that Ye Zichen was alone, but who would have though that...

He brought a family over.

“Hello, Auntie. I’m Xiao Yumei.”

Xiao Yumei's entire body revealed the nervousness in her heart, it was the exact nervousness of a woman meeting her parents-in-law.

On the other side, Ye Zichen's nervousness was no less than Xiao Yumei's.

He continued to gulp, while he scratched his head with his hands out of nervousness.

"Hello."

It was as if Mother Ye could not react from the shock. At that moment, Tiantian ran over with a giggle.

"Hi grandma."

"Good, good, such a cute little fellow."

Tiantian's appearance caused a kind smile to surface on Ye Rong's face, while also breaking the tense atmosphere in the courtyard.

"Come on in."

Ye Zichen held Tiantian's hand and smiled towards Xiao Yumei, who glared at him.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen's heart jumped as he laughed dumbly.

“Aiya, where's Lil' White! Mom, I think we lost Lil' White, I'm going to find him. You guys have a chat.”

Chapter 87 – The Information That Ye Rong Revealed

“You really are irresponsible,” Liu Jing floated beside Ye Zichen with a look of disdain.

Ye Zichen extinguished the cigarette in his hand on the trash can beside him, then stretched lazily and smacked her head.

“What do you know?”

Ye Rong was his mom. How could he, the son, not understand her?

The best way to deal with it was for Xiao Yumei and his mom to chat alone. His being there would only make the situation more awkward.

“Tsk, what are you pretending for,” Liu Jing twitched her mouth at Ye Zichen’s back, then floated beside him.

Ye Zichen put his hands on his waist as he looked at the endless gravel path. It seems like Lil’ White really had developed a wild side to him.

He was actually not standing guard at home and ran outside to play.

He was definitely going to teach Lil' White a good lesson when he finds him. At that moment, a poodle, holding its head up high, appeared alongside a group of dogs all several times his size on the gravel path.

Ye Zichen glanced over. Who else could the poodle be in the lead be if not for Lil' White?

“Lil White.”

Ye Zichen called. Hearing that, the poodle immediately looked up excitedly, and ran over with its tongue out.

“Boss, you're finally back. I've been starving these past few days.”

Lil' White stuck out its tail and kept on rubbing his head against the corner of Ye Zichen's trousers.

Slap.

Ye Zichen raised his hand and slapped Lil' White's head. This slap instantly called Lil' White to roll over.

All of the dogs following Lil' White yelped, then leaped towards Ye Zichen.

Lil' White immediately jumped up and blocked off the path, as he

started to bark at them.

“What are they saying?”

At this moment, the translator, Liu Jing, had to speak up. She raised her eyebrows and smiled, “These dogs all seems to be Lil’ White’s subordinates. He’s scolding them right now!”

As expected, not long later, Lil’ White ran beside Ye Zichen’s leg to rub his head happily once again.

Meanwhile, the dogs that were looking at him with murderous gazes just now all acted like pups as they sat on the ground with their tongues out and looked at them.

Kick.

Ye ZIchen kicked Lil’ White then said with a smile unlike a smile, “Wow, you’re living a pretty good life. You already know how to accept lackeys.”

“It’s all to serve boss.”

Lil’ White raised his paws in an attempt to salute, but he was unable to lift it that high, causing his action to look completely ridiculous.

Then, Ye Zichen brought Lil’ White back to the mansion. Before

going back, Lil' White did remember to tell his subordinates to return to their homes.

“Mom, I found Lil' White.”

Ye Zichen returned to the mansion with Lil' White in tow.

Mother Ye sighed helplessly when she saw Ye Zichen. It seems like the two women pretty much finished chatting.

“You,” Mother Ye shook her head, stood up from the sofa and walked to the kitchen.

Ye Zichen quickly sat onto the sofa. Xiao Yumei's face was still a bit red, as if she wasn't completely over their conversation just now.

“What did mom say to you?”

“Not much, she just kept on praising you.”

“Yeah, she truly is my mom.”

...

Xiao Yumei did not stay after dinner. Instead, she returned to her own home.

Ye Zichen actually wanted to get her to stay, but Xiao Yumei insisted on leaving, so he didn't force her.

When night came.

Ye Zichen sat in the living room and watched variety shows. Tiantian and Lil' White were tired after a day of playing, so Mother Ye sent them back to their room to sleep.

Not long later, Ye Rong, who was in pajamas, sat down beside Ye Zichen.

"Zichen, tell mom, is that girl called Xiao Yumei..."

What was coming finally came. Ye Zichen licked his lips and nodded without denying anything.

"Then what about that child Su Yan? I can tell that she also likes you a lot."

"I know."

"What do you want to do? Which one of the two are you going to give up?"

Ye Zichen hesitated for a moment, then smiled helplessly, "Mom, if I tell you that I don't want to give up on either of them, would

you think that your son is very scummy?”

“How could I? You’re my son, how could a mother speak ill about her son?” Ye Rong caressed Ye Zichen’s hair. “I’m just worried. Both Xiao Yumei and Su Yan are good girls. They shouldn’t know about each other’s existences, right?”

Ye Zichen shook his head.

“I knew it was like this,” Mother Ye sighed. “You’re grown up now, so mom wouldn’t manage you so much. But just one thing, don’t betray the feelings these two children have towards you. Don’t be like your dad...”

“What about my dad?”

Ye Zichen turned his head in shock. Mother Ye quickly stopped herself and stood up from the sofa.

“I’m worried about Tiantian being alone in the room. I’m going back. You should get some rest.”

“Mom, about my dad...”

Bang.

What he got in response was the merciless sound of a door closing.

Ye Zichen sat down on the sofa limply and lit a cigarette for himself.

Ye Zichen had never known who his father was. He has always been brought up by his mother, and he also used his mother's surname.

So many years had passed, his desire to know who his father is had already decreased.

Despite that, Mother Ye's sentence just now did attract Ye Zichen's attention.

Ye Zichen thought back to his mother's tone and what she said before and after it.

Did that man betray his mom?

Crack.

Thinking that, Ye Zichen's fist couldn't help but clench.

If it really was like this, he will definitely make that man pay.

Three days later.

“Hai-ge, there is no need to make it so grand, right?”

Ye Zichen couldn't help but smile wryly as he looked at the brand new Porsche 918 parked beside him.

A while ago, he had casually mentioned to Xiao Hai that he will go to a reunion with Su Yan, and it seems like there was going to be rich people there, so he wanted to borrow a car.

However, Xiao Hai directly brought the 918 back to him without saying anything.

“What do you mean, grand? Wasn't this originally your car? The 4S store told me to retrieve it a while ago, I just never got around to doing it.”

Xiao Hai laughed.

“There's no need to drive the 918, right? It's too high profile. You have so many cars, it's fine if you lend me an Audi or BMW.”

Ye Zichen smiled wryly.

However, Xiao Hai scolded in frustration, “Too young! Too naïve! Do you think that a reunion is just a gathering of old classmates to chit chat? Why do the classmates gather? Basically, it's just for the amazing ones to show off in front of the others, and for the others to act like grandsons in front of the amazing ones in order to get into contact with them.”

“Although you’re not Su Yan’s classmate, don’t forget your identity. You’re her boyfriend. Young Mistress Su Yan is Old Man Su’s darling, if you seem too stingy, wouldn’t that lose face for Young Mistress Su?”

Xiao Hai instructed him like someone who has experienced all this. Ye Zichen sighed and wanted to tell Hai-ge some truth.

But when he saw the other person’s passionate look, he stopped himself.

“Alright, I understand.”

“I knew that you brat would get it after I mention it.”

Xiao Hai laughed and patted Ye Zichen’s shoulders. He seemed as excited as it was him going to a reunion.

Ye Zichen could only smile wryly.

So what if he drove a 918? The car can’t be driven into the room, who knows whose it is!

Chapter 88 – Ye Zichen? Gu Family?

Su Family home, Bingcheng.

“Lil’ Ye, come and have a cup of tea.”

Old Man Su personally poured a glass of [Da Hong Pao](#) for Ye Zichen, completely shocking Ye Zichen.

He quickly stood up and received the tea, “Old Man Su, don’t be so courteous.”

“Lil’ Ye, you’re this old man’s savior, it’s not much to pour you a glass of tea.”

Old Man Su revealed a slightly unhappy expression. No matter what, ever since Ye Zichen brought the old man from the brink of death, the old man’s health became much better and he looked a lot better than before.

His entire person seemed extremely energetic. Ye Zichen could tell from that the Peach of Immortality was truly a miraculous item.

I have to get a few more Peaches of Immortality from the Heavenly Court when I have the chance.

Ye Zichen thought to himself.

What was the most important thing for a person?

Their life!

This sort of thing that can increase how long a person has to live might be able to sell for an astronomical amount in the circle of rich people.

For people of their level, money was just a number.

They were definitely very willing to use a bunch of useless numbers to exchange for ten-odd or twenty years of life.

Of course, the requirement would be...

That they believe this thing can increase how long a person has to live.

“Lil’ Ye, you can here to find my granddaughter?” Old Man Su revealed a faint smile after Ye Zichen finished the cup of tea.

Ye Zichen nodded with a smile, “Su Yan said that there’s a reunion, and wanted me to go with her.”

“Is that so? It seems like you and my granddaughter are developing pretty well!” Old Man Su smiled and held his chin with his right hand. “I definitely support you being with my

granddaughter. You have to work hard, there are plenty of people pursuing my granddaughter.”

Ye Zichen nodded after hearing that, but couldn't help but muttering in his heart.

I already got your darling granddaughter.

The affability level of 500 on the marriage string won't lie.

The lover relationship is confirmed.

So, we are lovers!

“Oh yeah, Old Man Su, I heard that you gave the Monkey Wine to someone else? I'll give you another gourd.”

Old Man Su's eyes immediately brightened after hearing that, causing him to push the Da Hong Pao on the table aside.

“Hurry, hurry.”

Ye Zichen signaled Old Man Su to not be so anxious, then withdrew a gourd of Monkey Wine from the Treasure Chest.

“Here.”

Ye Zichen placed the gourd onto the table. Since Old Man Su had already known about how mysterious Ye Zichen was while he was in ghost form, Ye Zichen felt like there wasn't anything to hide from him.

Old Man Su raised his eyebrows silently. Even though he had seen this before, he was still kind of shocked in his heart.

However, his attention was quickly diverted by the Monkey Wine.

He pulled open the cork and took a sip.

“After so long, this wine still feels the best to drink.”

Old Man Su leaned back on the chair, while the scent of the Monkey Wine spread through the entire courtyard.

Su Qihu followed the scent over and saw Old Man Su, who was drinking.

“Dad, why are you drinking again?”

However, his expression turned rather unnatural when he saw Ye Zichen, who sat opposite Old Man Su.

He truly didn't think much of Ye Zichen in his heart.

Delinquent-like, ruffian-like and opportunistic.

Ye Zichen had all the characteristics that a loser would have.

He could not accept handing his darling daughter into the hands of this sort of person, but yet it was this person that he didn't think much of...

When the old man was near-death, and when the experts he invited, and all the other doctors in the hospital were unable to save the old man.

It was him that stood up and saved Old Man Su.

He had also made a bet.

A bet for his daughter's happiness.

All of a sudden, a hint of complexity appeared in the way Su Qihu looked at Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen laughed and stood up.

“Uncle Su.”

Su Qihu clearly did not expect Ye Zichen to greet him. He revealed a rare forceful smile on his expressionless face as a sign of

good will.

At the same time, Old Man Su also spoke up, “Stop watching me, okay? It’s not like the military region is not busy. What’s more, even if anything happens to me when I drink, isn’t Lil’ Ye here? Also, Lil’ Ye’s wine is truly different from normal wine.”

Oh yeah.

This wine is different from other wine.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

Old Man Su might indeed be old, and his bodily functions did worsen, but he had the wine Ye Zichen gave him.

As long as Old Man Su drank his wine, then Old Man Su’s body would only get better with age.

Then why did Old Man Su suddenly enter the hospital, and caused the doctor to say that they couldn’t save him?

Most importantly, Old Man Su had told him to pass along a message to Su Qigu.

The light in Ye Zichen’s eyes flashed, while his heart turned sullen.

“Ye Zichen, let’s go.”

At that moment, Su Yan, who had gotten ready, stood outside the pavilion and waved to him.

Old Man Su smiled when he saw this, “Lil’ Ye, go.”

“Okay, Old Man Su, Uncle Su, I’ll be off.”

Su Qihu only sat down in Ye Zichen’s position when Ye Zichen and Su Yan disappeared from the courtyard and looked at Elder Su with a frown.

“Dad, you can’t really be trying to get Lil’ Yan and that brat together, right?”

“What’s so bad about that?” A light flashed across Old Man Su’s eyes. “Lil’ Ye saved my life. What’s more, Su Yan also likes Lil’ Ye a lot, isn’t it great for them to be together?”

“You say that, but...”

“I know what you want to say,” Old Man Su interrupted Su Qihu and sighed meaningfully. “Qihu, don’t you feel like Lil’ Ye is a lot like someone from a certain family?”

Su Qihu was stunned for a moment. A family that Old Man Su would mention was definitely someone from the capital...

No matter how much he thought about it, he couldn't think of which family a little poor kid like Ye Zichen could be related to.

"Heh, the Gu family," Old Man Su scolded in disappointment when he saw Su Qihu not speak up.

"The Gu family," Su Qihu, who was sitting, opened his eyes wide.

With his identity, there were very few things that could cause him to be surprised.

But the Gu family was not just a surprise.

It was a total shock.

"I told you very long ago that you have to learn to observe people. Say, after being in the military for so long, even though I never stuck a hand into your career, I'm still there, so they would still give me a bit of face. Then why are you still only a colonel now?"

Su Qihu remained silent.

He was indeed like Old Man Su had said, he didn't deal with relationships that well.

He feels like just looking at the surface was fine. It was fine if he

thought it was fine, if he thinks its not, then it's not.

This caused him to offend quite a lot of people in the military. If it wasn't for Old Man Su, he might not be able to retain his position of a colonel.

“Then you think that brat is someone from the Gu family?”

Su Qihu licked his dry lips and said after a long time.

The Gu family was definitely a powerful existence in the capital, and it was different from other renowned families.

It was very mysterious.

It was above any family in the capital.

“I'm only guessing, even if Lil' Ye isn't someone from the Gu family, I still support Lil' Yan being with Lil' Ye. Just don't care about their matters in the future. The young people have their own ways of living.”

Old Man Su took another sip from the wine gourd, while Su Qihu couldn't help but nod after remaining silent for a while.

He really didn't think much of Ye Zichen, but there are some things that couldn't help but improve his impression of Ye Zichen.

“I understand.”

Chapter 89 – Reunion

Su Yan sat in the front passenger seat. The phrase of “people relied on their clothes and horses relied on their saddles” applied to anyone.

Su Yan always dressed very casually in school.

For this reunion, she intentionally dressed herself up and put on a faint bit of makeup.

All of a sudden, the goddess was promoted to the level of an angel.

Actually, the reason she put on makeup wasn't the reunion, it was purely for Ye Zichen.

Girls dress themselves up for the people they like.

She didn't put too much importance on this reunion, she merely wanted Ye Zichen to pay more attention to her.

Fortunately, her wish had been granted.

From the moment Su Yan called out to Ye Zichen, his sights had been fixed on her visage.

Su Yan was very happy when she felt the gaze of the man beside

her.

“What did my grandpa and you talk about, you guys started chatting the moment you came over.”

Su Yan tucked her hair behind her ear, causing Ye Zichen to swallow hard and laugh, “What else? He just said that he wanted to get a grandson quicker. Do you think that Old Man Su is implying that I should take you quickly?”

“Tsk, grandpa wouldn’t say that,” Su Yan snorted.

“You’re still not believing me? You, the granddaughter, should know what Old Man Su is like so much more than I, the grandson-in-law,” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and chuckled.

“I’m going to ignore you,” Su Yan lowered her head with a blush then played with the corner of her clothes.

According to her understanding of Old Man Su, he might actually say something like that.

Could grandpa really have said that to Ye Zichen?

Then...

All of a sudden, Su Yan was beyond embarrassed.

The location of Su Yan's reunion with her classmates was in a high-class business club. Apparently that Young Master Bai had booked the whole venue.

Ye Zichen looked at the cars parked outside.

There were several Audi and BMWs. There was even a Ferrari.

So these people were pretty rich.

Ye Zichen didn't think that mockingly, it was sincere.

It was already considered very amazing for university students to own an Audi A or BMW X.

Ye Zichen randomly found a place to park, then noticed that his car was unusually eye-catching.

Ye Zichen silently commented that he shouldn't listen to the shitty advice from Xiao Hai. At the same time, he walked over to Su Yan's car door and opened it.

"Let's go, my princess."

At that moment, a lot of people were already standing within the club, the reunion was rather similar to a cocktail party. Everyone held a glass of red wine or champagne, while they chatted about some sort of high-end topic.

Plenty of these people brought male or female partners, while there were quite a few outstanding-looking girls within these female partners.

However, everyone inside instantly turned plain when Su Yan entered.

All the men in the club were awestruck by Su Yan, while the surrounding girls frowned in displeasure.

Her arrival had stolen all of the gazes they were enjoining.

“Oh, Su Yan came.”

A path opened within the crowd at the center of the room. Not long later, an extremely cute looking girl holding hands with an extremely honest looking young man ran towards Ye Zichen and Su Yan.

“Su Yan.”

At this moment, Su Yan also looked up, and her beautiful eyes were filled with joy.

“Lin Ru.”

The two girls instantly held hands and started chatting, leaving

their male partners to the side.

Ye Zichen and the young man looked at each other with an awkward smile, then he walked in front of the young man and stretched out his hand with a smile, “Ye Zichen.”

The young man politely wiped his hands with a handkerchief when he saw Ye Zichen reach out his hand, then shook it.

“Wu Haoyu.

After the two introduced themselves, Ye Zichen immediately used his natural talent for getting familiar with people and put his arm on the other person’s shoulder.

“That’s your girlfriend?”

“Kind of, I’m still pursuing her,” Wu Haoyu scratched his head honestly. At that moment, Su Yan and Lin Ru suddenly thought of their male partners, but when they saw the two men, they couldn’t help but giggle.

“The two of them sure know how to get along.”

Lin Ru giggled. When she noticed the way Su Yan looked towards Ye Zichen, she raised her hand and tickled Su Yan with a naughty smile, “Susu, that’s your boyfriend, right?”

“Mhmm,” Su Yan blushed.

Lin Ru immediately showed an expression of shock, “Wow, the school beauty actually found a boyfriend!”

Su Yan didn’t continue down that topic trail. She looked towards the young man beside Ye Zichen, “That one’s your boyfriend, right?”

Lin Ru blushed and pouted, “No way. That person’s such an idiot, I wouldn’t like someone like him.”

While she spoke, she waved her fist towards Wu Haoyu.

Coincidentally, Wu Haoyu also looked over. When Lin Ru saw him, he immediately honestly laughed and scratched his head.

“Look at him, he looks so dumb,” Lin Ru stomped her foot in anger.

Su Yan couldn’t help but giggle, “He’s rather suited to you.”

When the four of them got together again, Su Yan kept holding Ye Zichens’ arm like a little woman.

In contrast, on Lin Ru and Wu Haoyu’s side.

Wu Haoyu stayed right by Lin Ru's side without daring to say anything, but his gaze never left her side.

“Su Yan, you came.”

A loud voice sounded out while Ye Zichen and co. chatted.

Ye Zichen and co. looked around and saw a young man in a suit with really waxed hair, walk towards them.

Gao Chang, who had invited Su Yan to the reunion the other day, was also by his side.

“Bai Yang, he's still so disgusting,” Lin Ru twitched her mouth.

Meanwhile, Su Yan's expression also turned dark.

“He's that Young Master Bai?”

“Mmm, Su Yan confirmed.

“Su Yan, why didn't you say anything when you came. I...”

Bai Yan's smile instantly tensed when he saw Su Yan wrap her arms around Ye Zichen's arm.

Lin Ru snickered, “Young Master Bai, what happened. Your

expression seems terrible, do you need me to call an ambulance for you?”

Wu Haoyu pulled on Lin Ru, signaling her to save some face for him.

This caused Lin Ru to hide her mocking expression and stand beside Su Yan.

Ye Zichen merely looked at the changes on Bai Yan’s face without saying anything.

After a long time, Bai Yan calmed himself down, checked out Ye Zichen and reach out his hand in a look of disdain.

“Bai Yan, Su Yan’s pursuer.”

“Bai Yan, don’t say that.”

Su Yan was instantly annoyed. Ye Zichen patted her hands and reached his hand over with a nod.

“Aries? Does the upper class introduce themselves with their horoscopes now? Hello, I’m Cancer, Su Yan’s current boyfriend. It seems like our horoscopes oppose each other quite a bit, no wonder we’re rivals in love.”

He.

Lin Ru couldn't hold it in and laughed again.

“Susu, your boyfriend is so funny.”

Chapter 90 – Wu Haoyu's Request

Lin Ru's laughter immediately attracted the attention of plenty of people.

These people immediately understood when they saw Ye Zichen, who was in between Bai Yang and Su Yan.

Everybody knew about Bai Yan's interest in Su Yan during high school, but Su Yan brought a man this time. From their intimate look, that seemed to be her boyfriend.

It would be weird if that Young Master Bai would be happy about it.

This caused many people to surround them in order to watch the show, while a lot of people also mocked Ye Zichen in their hearts for him overestimating himself

Just who was Young Master Bai? A single underwear was worth everything Ye Zichen wore.

He was lucky if Young Master Bai didn't play him to death.

But...

It seems like Ye Zichen messed with Bai Yang.

Ye Zichen revealed a confused expression and looked at Lin Ru, who was laughing without any care for her image as a lady, and said in a moe manner.

“Hahaha,” Lin Ru laughed uncontrollably as if someone pressed her laughter acupoint.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen maintained his innocent expression and shrugged, “What exactly happened? You upper class introduce yourselves using horoscopes, I also said my horoscope, why are you still laughing like that? Where was I wrong? Tell me, it’s my first time coming in contact with this circle, I don’t know the rules. Sorry.”

With that, Ye Zichen raised his hand apologetically, causing Lin Ru, who had finally stopped her laughter under Wu Haoyu’s help, to laugh once again.

“Hahaha... Susu, your boyfriend is too funny.”

If there was a bed on the floor, Lin Ru might be rolling on the bed as she laughed already.

This time, Ye Zichen was speechless.

Was there a need to laugh like that, was it really that funny?

Bai Yang also looked at the innocent looking Ye Zichen in anger.

This brat definitely did it on purpose.

Bai Yang said silently in his heart.

“Young Master Bai, ignore this retard, it’s making you lower your position.”

A commonly dressed young man pulled on Bai Yang from the side. Hearing that, Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and laughed, “You said that I’m a retard?”

“So what? Go and look in the mirror and see what you’re like. You dare to mess with Young Master Bai?”

The young man was certain to use this chance to get into contact with Young Master Bai. The moment he spoke up, the surrounding people all hated themselves for not grabbing the opportunity.

“Bro, you just ate a leek bun, right?” Ye Zichen said calmly.

The young man was stunned, he did eat a leek bun before coming, but how did this brat know?

“So?”

“I just want to remind you in good will that the leek got stuck in your teeth.”

Boom.

This caused all of the surrounding classmates to laugh out loud. The young man with leek in his teeth also blushed, then quickly ran through the crowd.

It seems like he should have gone to the bathroom to take care of the leek.

“Hahaha...”

Other people merely laughed a little bit, but Lin Ru’s laughter was magnified by countless times, becoming completely endless.

Ye Zichen looked at Lin Ru caringly and said to Wu Haoyu, “Bro, is she alright?”

“Ye Zichen, why are you so funny? Are you a comedian!?”

Lin Ru laughed so much that she was about to cry, causing Ye Zichen to smile.

If it was so easy to become a comedian, then everyone in the world could be a comedian.

Meanwhile, Bai Yang did hear the name that Lin Ru had accidentally mentioned.

“Brother Ye, I wonder where you work? You actually managed to get our school beauty.”

“Bingcheng Polytechnic University. How is it? It’s a famous university, so don’t be jealous.”

Ye Zichen once again replied without answering the question, causing Lin Ru to explode once again.

“Hahaha...”

It was a demonic laughter.

“Good school, good school,” Seeing that Ye Zichen didn’t reply normally at all, Bai Yang raised his eyebrows and smiled. “Have fun here, I’ll go over there to take a look.”

“Ai, Aries guy, you didn’t tell me your name yet.”

Slip.

Bai Yang slipped and nearly fell to the floor.

“Hahaha...”

Lin Ru’s laughter was so demonic that Ye Zichen couldn’t endure

the damage of her laughter at all. Thus, he raised his hand and pressed down on a point on her body.

Lin Ru immediately found herself unable to laugh.

“Don’t always laugh like that. Laughing is a good thing, but laughing like that is bad for your body.”

Lin Ru touched the spot Ye Zichen pressed her in surprise, then glared at him, “Damn delinquent, you molested me. Wu Haoyu, Susu, are you two going to care about this!”

Lin Ru finally stopped messing around after a long while.

Ye Zichen sweated cold sweat. It was hard to imagine that this girl in front of him was in the same grade as Su Yan, her mentality was no difference from kid of ten-old years old.

“Ye Zichen, don’t mind it too much, Lin Ru just has a child-like temper,” Wu Haoyu apologized honestly for Lin Ru.

Ye Zichen laughed and took out two cigarettes, while handing one to him, “I’m not that sort of petty person, I really was thinking for her just now.”

“Brother Ye is studying to become a doctor?” Wu Haoyu lit the cigarette and asked in a testing manner.

“Kind of,” Ye Zichen answered vaguely.

Wu Haoyu laughed on the side, “Don’t be humble, it is very amazing that you could so accurately find an acupoint in such a short time.”

“Kind of,” for Ye Zichen, who had gotten the knowledge from Lord Taishang’s Special Medical Journal, finding an acupoint was a very simple matter.

“Brother Ye, can I ask you a personal question?” A weird look surfaced on Wu Haoyu’s honest face.

Ye Zichen frowned and nodded, “Go on?”

“When you pressed Lin Ru’s acupoint, did you use qi...”

“...”

Ye Zichen remained silent.

Wu Haoyu quickly explained when he noticed Ye Zichen’s weird expression, “Don’t think too much, my family’s old man isn’t that good. We looked for plenty of Chinese and western doctors, but they couldn’t treat his illness. A while ago, a master had said that a master in qigong was needed in order to treat the root of the old man’s sickness, so...”

Wu Haoyu showed an apologetic look and said, “I was too rash just now. Allow me to apologize.”

Ye Zichen sighed when he saw Wu Haoyu’s sincere expression.

It seems like he was a bit too sensitive recently, he would get nervous the moment something small occurred.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and waved his hands, “I did use qi, but I’m not a qigong master, I don’t know whether you can help your old man.”

Many people with abilities were in this world.

Ye Zichen did not think that this little bit of knowledge would allow him to be called a qigong master.

Hearing that, Wu Haoyu’s eyes brightened, “No worries, it’s okay as long as you’re willing to try. But the old man isn’t in Bingcheng recently, I wonder...”

Ye Zichen nodded with a smile, “Tell me when the old man is back.”

Tata...

A round of footsteps suddenly sounded out in the corridor outside the bathroom.

Not long later, a group of people appeared in front of Ye Zichen and Wu Haoyu.

The person in the lead was Bai Yang.

“Oh? You need to go to the toilet in groups? Wow, the upper class is so amazing.”

Ye Zichen shook his head with a sigh. He threw his cigarette onto the ground and stomped it out, then walked out with Wu Haoyu.

Bai Yang, who was in the lead, stopped them with his hand.

“What? You want me to go with you? I’m worried that I’m too big, so it’ll hurt your pride!”

Chapter 91 – Conflict

Ye Zichen laughed with a faint playfulness on his mouth.

This grandson brought a bunch of lackeys when he rushed over. He clearly didn't just come to take a piss.

“Your mouth is pretty good,” Bai Yang squinted his eyes with faint disdain in his eyes.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and revealed an expression of shock.

“How do you know my mouth is amazing? Did your older sister tell you about us?”

Bai Yang was stunned for a moment the moment Ye Zichen said that.

He did have an older sister, but what does this brat have to do with her?

But when he saw the mockery on Ye Zichen's face, he finally understood, causing his face to turn dark.

“You're seeking death.”

“Nonono, I'm just twenty something, how could I seek death

when I didn't live enough yet?" Ye Zichen raised his hand and waved. Then he shrugged with a smile as he looked at Bai Yang's expression that was turning even darker, "Stop caring about me here, hurry in. But a friendly reminder, there are just urinals in there, you guys should go in a sequence first. How about playing scissor-paper-rock here? I can be a fair referee for you."

"Brat, how are you speaking to Young Master Bai?" the person who spoke was the young man who had a leek in his teeth.

Ye Zichen looked at him, then retracted his smile, "I'm talking to your owner here, what is a dog like you barking for?"

The young man's face instantly turned beyond red.

Ye Zichen laughed coldly, as coldness flashed through his eyes, "It seems like you guys don't need me as the ref, then move aside."

"You need to see who's the owner when you hit a dog. You can't have not heard of this, right?" Bai Yang smiled sinisterly.

Ye Zichen smiled, then nodded in agreement, "That's true. But I've never thought of you, the dog owner, as much. Hurry up and take your dog for a piss. You should have heard the phrase 'a good dog doesn't block the path', right?"

"Ye Zichen, don't you not know what's good for you," Bai Yang's tone turned cold, while his dogs also stepped forward.

“Bai Yang, what do you want?” the honest Wu Haoyu also stepped forward.

Bai Yang looked at him in disdain, “Brat, move to the side, it’s none of your business. You’re pretty lucky that you got with the powerful Young Mistress Lin, who I can’t mess with. But don’t think about getting full of yourself, a little white face like you...”

Bai Yang laughed coldly in disdain and shook his fingers, causing a look of rage to surface on Wu Haoyu’s honest face.

He frowned and wanted to argue, but Ye Zichen patted his shoulders and pulled him back.

Ye Zichen walked over to Bai Yang’s side with a smile and glared at him.

“Fuck. Off.”

...

“Susu, where did you get such a treasure of a boyfriend? He’s so funny.”

Lin Ru’s tolerance for humor terrifyingly low, she can’t help but laugh even when she thought back to it.

Su Yan dipped her head with a smile.

On the other hand, Lin Ru sighed, “If only Wu Haoyu was half as funny as your boyfriend. He’s so boring and dumb like a winter melon all the time.”

“Actually, that boy is pretty good, I can tell that he really likes you,” Su Yan smiled.

Lin Ru blushed, but still denied it, “Who wants him to like me, he’s just like a log.”

Saying the opposite was the common issue with women. Su Yan could feel that Lin Ru actually did care about that honest boy quite a bit.

The two of them smiled and stopped talking about the topic. At this moment, Gao Chang walked over with a wine glass.

“Lin Ru, Su Yan.”

Gao Chao was carefully very careful when she greeted Lin Ru, but it was much more plain when it came to Su Yan.

“What did you come for?”

Lin Ru frowned, if she didn’t remember it wrong, when Bai Yang came over to cause trouble, this woman had stood by his side.

Originally, she didn't have any hostility towards Gao Chang, but since she was involved with Bai Yang, she begun to not like her.

"Lin Ru, I want to say a few things to Su Yan," Gao Chang's face was full of a false smile. Lin Ru looked towards Su Yan.

The gentleness on Su Yan's face was also gone, "If you still want me and Bai Yang to get together, then I think you shouldn't waste your breath."

"Su Yan, how is Young Master Bai worse than that guy?"

"Everywhere," The coldness on Su Yan's face became even more expressive. "Gao Chang, since we're high school students, I don't want us to be unhappy."

Gao Chang's expression sullen after hearing that. Young Master Bai had promised her that if she helped to get him with Su Yan, he would give her a sportscar.

A sportscar.

If she has a sportscar, then she would be able to hook up with rich guys.

"Su Yan, I think that you're really dumb..."

"Ugh, wait," Lin Ru stepped forward and said playfully. "How is

Su Yan's boyfriend bad? Didn't you see how funny he is?"

Their class tutor had accidentally leaked Lin Ru's background during high school.

A powerful third generation from the capital.

This caused Lin Ru's position in high school to immediately shoot up, and nobody dared to argue with her.

If it was before, she definitely didn't dare to retort what Lin Ru said. However, Gao Chang didn't care anymore in order to get the sportscar.

"Can humor be eaten?" A hint of disdain flashed across Gao Chang's eyes. "Women have to be better to themselves, we have to find a tree that can be relied on, isn't that far better than people that are full of bullshit? Young Master Bai is young and talented and he looks pretty good, and he's also rich... Su Yan, why don't you understand?"

"If Bai Yang's so good, then why aren't you with him?" Lin Ru twitched her mouth on the side, causing Gao Chang to roll her eyes.

If Young Master Bai was interested in her, why wouldn't she be with him

If there was the chance, she even wanted to strip naked and lie on

Young Master Bai's bed.

Bang.

At that moment, a huge sound rang out from the bathroom.

Lin Ru and Su Yan looked towards each other, then ran over.

“Grandson, grandpa is really sick of your looks, don't you understand?” Ye Zichen frowned and looked at Bai Yang, who was bleeding at the corner of his mouth on the wall of the bathroom. “I'm telling you, Su Yan is laozi's woman. She's laozi's woman, do you understand?”

Bang.

He kicked Bai Yang once again, causing him to slide out seven or eight meters.

All of Bai Yang's lackeys went dumb, this Ye Zichen acted too suddenly. He attacked without saying anything.

What's more...

He's too sinister.

Ye Zichen pretty much beat Bai Yang to the point of him losing

all abilities to move. Ye Zichen walked towards him and squatted in front of him.

Bai Yang subconsciously raised his hands to protect his face, but what faced him was a heavy punch on his stomach.

“Remember, Su Yan is my woman. Don’t touch her, do you understand?”

Chapter 92 – Jing Wan’s Team Is Established

When everyone got to the scene, Ye Zichen and Wu Haoyu had already walked out.

The guards for the club all rushed over when they heard the sound, causing plenty of people to think that something was about to happen to Ye Zichen and Wu Haoyu.

But nobody had thought that...

“Boss.”

The guards respectfully walked over, while a coldness surfaced on Wu Haoyu’s honest face.

“Send Young Master Bai to the hospital. I’ll pay the medical bill, then send someone to apologize to the Bai family. If they want an explanation, then tell them to come and find me.”

“I understand.”

The guards immediately carried Young Master Bai out of the club. All of the bystanders were shocked, nobody could have imagined that the honest lad that had always been beside Lin Ru was actually the owner of this club.

Ye Zichen was also stunned, while Wu Haoyu smiled

apologetically, “Sorry, something like this happened on my turf.”

“Hahaha, what’s there to apologize about?” Ye Zichen shrugged with a smile. “We didn’t suffer any losses, right?”

“That’s true.”

At this moment, Su Yan and Lin Ru hurried over.

“Zichen, are you hurt?” Su Yan checked Ye Zichen out worriedly.

Ye Zichen raised his hand and caressed her long hair with a smile, “How could someone like that hurt me. I didn’t want to care about him, but he made me use violence.”

At the same time, Ye Zichen looked at Gao Chang, who was shuddering.

When she arrived, she saw Young Master Bai get carried away by the guards. She immediately got worried that Ye Zichen would use violence on her in rage as well.

Don’t worry, just don’t say bad stuff about me in front of my girlfriend in the future, okay?” Although Ye Zichen asked it as a question, the firmness of his tone caused Gao Chang couldn’t help but nod like a pecking chick.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows slightly and glanced over the

bystanders before holding Su Yan's hand.

“Let's go, there is no meaning to this reunion anymore.”

“Wu Haoyu, let's go.”

Lin Ru pouted and shouted. The cool-looking Wu Haoyu instantly gained his honest look once again and followed with a nod.

“Oh, Porsche 918. Wow, who's car is this!?”

Lin Ru was immediately attracted by the car just after walking out of the door. Wu Haoyu, who was on the side, frowned, then thought of Ye Zichen's name for some reason.

“Susu, do you need us to take you back?” They walked around the Porsche a few times, then Lin Ru and Wu Haoyu walked to the only Porsche Panamera and waved towards Su Yan and Ye Zichen.

“No need, he drove here,” Su Yan shook her head. Ye Zichen took out the car key and walked towards that eye-catching Porsche 918.

“See ya.”

Ye Zichen waved towards Lin Ru and Wu Haoyu with a smile, before driving away.

Gao Chang, who was in the club, was completely shocked!

Porsche 918.

All of a sudden, she scratched her head in frustration.

What did I do!?

Lin Ru was also rather shocked by this situation, but since she was someone who have seen a lot, she punched Wu Haoyu after getting stunned for a bit.

“Laddie, you have to work hard, Susu’s boyfriend is more amazing than you!”

After Ye Zichen sent Su Yan back to the Su family and declined Elder Su’s visit, he went to a small coffee shop near Polytechnic University.

When Ye Zichen hurried over, Jing Wan was taking photos with her fans within the shop.

He watched it with a smile as he held his shoulders. He only walked over and sat opposite her after she took photos with all the fans.

“An internet celebrity is pretty famous, you got fans everywhere.”

Jing Wan smiled and asked the waiter to bring Ye Zichen a latte. She pursed her lips and said, “You can have it if you want as well? I can introduce you to the platform. If you stream with your level, you definitely wouldn’t have any less fans than me and will definitely have really good income.

“Don’t,” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth. “If I really want to be famous, there a lot of ways. The boss of Dream Lead invited me in person to join their company, but I turned them down as well.

“I’ll pretend that you’re not lying...” Jing Wan smiled while emotions surfaced in her eyes.

It seems like she thinks he was exaggerating. Ye Zichen sighed helplessly and said, “Internet Celebrity Jing Wan, are you really just treating me to a coffee when you called me over so anxiously?”

Jing Wan smiled and took out a file of information over from her bag.

Ye Zichen opened it and looked at the first page. Dream Start Gaming (DSG) Member Roster.

“You really are persistent.”

Ye Zichen smiled helplessly, and looked at the detail information of the team members and their positions.

The members of the first two positions were pretty good.

Mid, Jungle, AD Carry.

All of them were high ranking Challenger players on Ionia, and their win rates were pretty high, while their champion pool were okay as well.

But Ye Zichen was shocked when he saw the support.

“It can’t be, you, the boss, is going on in person?”

Ye Zichen was really speechless.

The starting support was actually Jing Wan herself. Of course, her team didn’t have any substitutes, but this was indeed too strange.

Ye Zichen played League of Legends for so long and watched so many competitions, but he has never heard of the owner of any team playing themselves.

Jing Wan blushed without saying anything. Since the team was just established, they didn’t have a full member roster.

She didn’t want to play either, it wasn’t because it was shameful for the owner of the team to play, it’s just that she wasn’t suitable to play professionally.

She could carry a few games when she's streaming, but her level was too far off a professional one.

Ye Zichen flipped over the page, and saw the top laner. However, Ye Zichen suddenly shook his head when he saw the player.

“She's not suited to play this position.”

“?”

“I don't know how you got Xia Keke into your team. Of course, she might be pretty good, but she's not suitable to play top. Or rather, she's not suitable to play professionally.”

“Why?” Jing Wan frowned.

“Xia Keke is too impulsive and gets over her head. She is beyond aggressive. What's more, she can't accept a defeat, if anyone completely wrecks her, even if she knows she'll die, she'll still fight. This sort of player would become trouble in a competition.”

Ye Zichen chuckled the data back and leaned back.

“I can't help but praise your determination, you actually managed to establish the team after my verbal attacks. I can see your determination from this. But, you're still too hasty.”

Ye Zichen tapped the coffee mug on the table, “A team doesn’t just require 5 players. They needed data analysts, a coach and a manager behind them. Your team doesn’t have any of them. If I put it bluntly, your team isn’t much different from children playing house.”

Jing Wan’s original confident expression already started to turn dark.

Ye Zichen saw all this, and although he was reluctant to do it, he continued to apply salt onto the wound.

“Also, I don’t agree with Xia Keke entering your team.”

Chapter 93 – Bet

Jing Wan looked up dumbly. She didn't think that the situation would turn out like this.

Even though she clearly worked up her confidence in order for him to see her determination in order to invite him into the team...

He actually didn't want Xia Keke to play for her either.

“Keke has her own thoughts, what right do you have for making decision for her!” Jing Wan bit her lips as anger surfaced on her face.

“I'm doing this to for your team and for Xia Keke. She's definitely not suited for this sort of profession. If your team has her, you might not even be able to make it through the bracket stage.”

Good advice sounds terrible, this phrase definitely had logic to it.

For example, Ye Zichen was definitely saying these things to Jing Wan for her good, but she clearly couldn't accept it right now.

Jing Wan bit her lips as her eyes shone. After a long while, she lifted her head as if she made her decision and looked at Ye Zichen with a resolute gaze, “Follow me to the base.”

Ye Zichen was completely shocked when he saw the base for Jing Wan's team.

He only truly felt the determination of Jing Wan wanting to establish her own team at that very moment.

Ye Zichen thought an apartment would be pretty nice for a base, but Jing Wan got an entire mansion.

What made him even more speechless was that, this mansion...

Was right opposite his home!

It was facing his front entrance. He was rather worried that Lil' White would come even when Lil' White smelled his scent with his dog nose.

"How is it? The position is pretty good, right?" Jing Wan lifted her delicate chin proudly. Ye Zichen smiled without denying it, and quickly urged her. "Hurry in."

"Hmmp, alright."

Pride gradually surfaced on Jing Wan's face, she innocently thought that it was the base which she chose that shocked Ye Zichen.

Would told you to put on airs every single time. I'll definitely

shock you even more after we go in.

Jing Wan thought proudly in her heart.

“Keke, do you remember what you said just now?”

There was a long-haired boy wearing glasses sitting beside Xie Keke. He looked around seventeen or eighteen, and neither the innocence nor naivety had faded from his face.

“I don’t know what I said to you just now.”

Xia Keke pushed the keyboard forward, stood up from the chair and walked towards the living room sofa.

The boy hurried over to grab Xia Keke’s arm, “Keke, you can’t break your promise. Didn’t you say that you like people that are better than you at games? I won three out of five in the solo matches just now.”

“Di Xinpeng, I only said like. I didn’t say that I would like you after you win.”

“Then why did you play with me?”

“I have never refused someone asking me to solo.”

Xia Keke pouted. She had just casually said it earlier, and only instantly agreed to the match due to her personality.

She didn't think that a thoughtless phrase would cause Di Xinpeng to have such a huge reaction.

“I... You...”

Anger begun to rise on Di Xinpeng's childish face. He pointed at her, but was not able to utter a word.

Xia Keke twitched her mouth, then slowly moved towards the mansion door, “I'll telling you, don't think of doing anything to me. I have a boyfriend, if you dare to do anything to you, he won't let you off.”

Xia Keke inched towards the door as she tried to comfort Di Xinpeng's feelings.

Bang.

The retreating Xia Keke bumped into Jing Wan and Ye Zichen who just entered.

“Ouch, who is it?”

Xia Keke looked back with a frown. When she saw the helpless looking Ye Zichen, she immediately leaped towards him.

“Why did you come?”

Ye Zichen scratched his head when he felt the joy in Xia Keke's tone. However, then he felt the hospitality not that far away.

“You are Xia Keke's boyfriend?” Di Xinpeng pursed his lips, while intense flames burned in his eyes.

Ye Zichen was stunned, but Xia Keke, who was in his arms, raised her chin, “Yeah, he's my boyfriend, he's ten thousand times better than you in games.”

“Then let's compete.”

“Sure.”

The two of them immediately started opposing each other with an intense smell of gunpowder without either of them asking Ye Zichen's opinion.

Ye Zichen looked at the conflicting people in confusion, “What's going on?”

Not long later, Xia Keke immediately told Ye Zichen everything.

The moment she finished, Ye Zichen did not accept the fight, nor did he talk about their childishness. He merely looked towards

Jing Wan.

“See? This is but one of the issues. Xia Keke definitely cannot join your team. I think you should find another player.”

Jing Wan didn't think that such an issue would arise from the time she wasn't here.

“Hey, why aren't you letting Xia Keke join this team?”

Di Xinpeng was immediately unhappy before Jing Wan replied.

“Isn't this obvious? There is someone with ill intentions like you in the team, can I let my girlfriend come here to face the danger?”

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes speechlessly. Hearing that he admitted her as his girlfriend, Xia KeKe immediately blushed.

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Xia Keke increased by 50. Current affability level: 220.

Di Xinpeng was immediately turned speechless by Ye Zichen. He was interested in Xia Keke, rather, it was love at first sight.

He immediately felt his heart stolen when he saw Xia Keke.

To be honest, it was just because this brat played too many games, and it was the first time he saw a girl as pretty as Xia Keke.

It was normal for him to be moved.

Since Di Xinpeng wasn't willing to give up, he clenched his teeth, "The fact that you can be Keke's boyfriend means that you should be pretty good at playing games. Let's compete, best of three. If I win, then you quit, if you win then I quit!"

Young people were young.

Ye Zichen laughed after hearing Di Xinpeng's words.

"What sort of nice dreams are you having?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and put his arm around Xia Keke's waist. "This is my girlfriend, the heck does she have to do with you. Yet you're shamelessly saying that you'll quit. It has nothing to do with you, okay?"

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Xia Keke increased by 50. Current affability level: 270.

"Then what do you want?" Di Xinpeng's face turned pale upon

hearing Ye Zichen's words.

“Nothing much, I don't want to compete with you. You can't beat me.”

“Ye Zichen, compete with him,” Xia Keke suddenly spoke up. She pouted, “I lost to him in a solo match. Help me win it back.”

“ ... ”

Ye Zichen was truly speechless facing Xia Keke's desire for victory.

He subconsciously looked towards Jing Wan and sighed, as if he was saying...

Do you see this? This is Xia Keke, and you still want her to play in professional games?

At the same time, Di Xinpeng, who still didn't give up, added, “Yeah, you're Keke's boyfriend, so help her win it back. What's a man that can't protect his woman...”

“ ... ”

Ye Zichen was speechless once again.

This was too childish.

There was no helping it, Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, “Didi, are you underage?”

Di Xinpeng blushed for an unknown reason and snorted, “I’ll be an adult very soon. Don’t change the topic, are you competing or not?”

Ye Zichen looked at Di Xinpeng’s expression of not giving up until he loses and Xia Keke’s gaze of anticipation.

Ye Zichen shrugged with a smile.

“Then let’s compete, but we have to change the stakes.”

Chapter 94 – Another Misunderstanding

Thirty minutes later, Ye Zichen stood up with a calm expression, while Di Xinpeng thought back to the results...

From best of five, to best of seven to best of nine...

He kept on adding the number of games, while Ye Zichen has never refused.

But he still lost with a terrible defeat.

“Do you submit now?” Ye Zichen pursed his lips and smiled as he looked at Di Xinpeng’s sad look.

He could feel that this brat was really talented at League of Legends from the solo match just now.

He was also really good at it, so it wasn’t wrong for Xia Keke to lose to him.

However, he chose Ye Zichen as his opponent...

“Yes.”

Di Xinpeng truly submitted, he chose all the champions in so many matches. What’s more, these were his best champions. Yet, he could still feel his valley-like difference with Ye Zichen during

the games.

The other person was so much better than him in both mechanics and knowledge.

Crushed.

He truly submitted.

“If you submit, then do you remember the deal?”

Everyone revealed an expression of curiosity. None of them heard what the stakes were when Ye Zichen talked about it with Di Xinpeng.

Di Xinpeng nodded, and walked in front of Jing Wan with a long sigh.

“Wan-jie, let’s cancel the contract we signed earlier.”

“?”

Jing Wan was confused. She looked towards Ye Zichen in shock, while insuppressible anger surfaced on her face.

“Ye Zichen, I know you’re not confident in my team. You can criticize me for my childishness, but isn’t this too much?”

Ye Zichen was confused, “What did I do? I’m doing this for your own good though?”

“For my good?” Jing Wan laughed manically. “You said it’s for my own good?”

“Yeah!”

“Ye Zichen, what exactly do you want? It doesn’t matter about Keke, since she’s a girl, so she really might not be suited for professional games, but you aren’t letting my other members go either? I’m telling you, no, I can’t possibly let him go.”

Jing Wan answered firmly while an insuppressible rage covered her face.

“Please leave, you’re not welcomed here.”

“No...”

“Please leave.”

Ye Zichen shrunk his neck and left the mansion with Xia Keke as he looked at Jing Wan’s furious expression.

Di Xinpeng was confused as well when he saw the two leave. He moved his mouth wanting to say something, but was interrupted

by Jing Wan before he could.

“Di Xinpeng, didn’t you say you want to play professionally? Didn’t you say that you want to stand on an international stage? You...”

“Wan-jie, you misunderstood,” Di Xinpegn sighed. “I want to resign the contract with you.”

“Resign the contract?” Jing Wan didn’t understand, causing her to ask. “What do you mean by resigning the contract?”

“Just now, Ye-ge made the bet with me, if I lose, then I have to stay in your team forever as long as your team can get into the professional league. If your team cannot, then this contract will be invalid.”

“Ye Zichen said that to you?”

Jing Wan was shocked, she thought that...

“Then why didn’t you say so earlier?”

Jing Wan’s heart became filled with guilt when she thought of her attitude just now. He was clearly thinking for her, and worried about the change in players...

But she...

“You didn’t give me the chance to speak,” Di Xinpeng smiled helplessly. “Just now, who would dare to speak when you-you looked like that.”

Jing Wan felt beyond awkward, she raised her hand and scratched her hair, causing it to turn into a mess, while she bit her lips without saying anything for a long time.

Ye Zichen was depressed after being suddenly chased out.

He clearly did it with Jing Wan in mind, why did she make it seem like she had a huge grudge against him.

“Why did Jing Wan-jiejie suddenly get mad?”

Xia Keke looked at the base behind her with a sigh.

Ye Zichen licked his lips and replied speechlessly, “Who knows why that woman went crazy.”

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth towards the mansion behind him. He immediately got annoyed when he thought about the expression Jing Wan had towards him.

Xia Keke took a glance at Ye Zichen’s expression, then hugged his arm, “Don’t be angry. Oh yeah, you told Di Xinpeng just now that I’m your girlfriend.”

Here it comes.

Ye Zichen knew that Xia Keke wasn't going to let this issue go.

“I was giving you face just now, you already said that I'm your boyfriend. Just how much face would you lose if I said I'm not. What's more, it's not the first time, so you should understand that I'm used to it.”

“Tsk,” Xia Keke frowned in displeasure and snorted. “I don't want to care about you anymore.”

She walked behind the A4 parked on the side, made a face towards Ye Zichen, then disappeared from the mansion area.

Ye Zichen waved towards her, while Liu Jing popped out.

“Keke seems to like you.”

“No shit.”

Even an idiot could feel that Xia Keke was interested in him.

“I just want to tell you to manage your relationships properly. From what I knew, this seems to be the third...”

Liu Jing frowned, while Ye Zichen licked his lips and returned home.

In the middle of the night.

Ye Zichen scrolled through WeChat as he laid on the bed. For some reason, the group recently turned really cold.

Less people spoke and nobody sent out red packets anymore.

Ye Zichen scrolled through the moments of several of his deity friends and saw that the people in the Heavenly Court seems to be having some sort of report conference.

Basically, the direct effect for Ye Zichen was that...

He couldn't get any red packets.

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen's phone vibrated.

His heart also shook.

He quickly took a look and saw that the person who sent the message was Su Yan.

“Are you asleep?”

This was the first time Su Yan sent him a message after adding her WeChat. However, why did she seek him out so late? Could it be that the goddess can't sleep and wanted to get him to...

Hehehe...

Slap.

Ye Zichen slapped himself.

Stop f*cking dreaming.

“No, what is it, do you miss me?” Ye Zichen smiled.

“Narcissist.”

Su Yan added several mouth-twitching emojis behind her reply. Ye Zichen could imagine her look at that moment, causing another smile to surface on his face.

“It's not your first time knowing me.”

Su Yan sent another row of mouth-twitching emojis over, followed by a message.

“I’m going to stop messing around. I have proper business with you.”

Proper business!

Ye Zichen was shocked.

“What is it?”

“Didn’t you mention that you want to open a supermarket?”

“I do have this thought.”

“I got my older brother to look at a few sites for you. Go and take a look if you have time?”

Ye Zichen did not think that the proper business Su Yan talked about was that.

He just casually mentioned it, but Su Yan actually remembered.

Ye Zichen’s heart was moved. It seemed like he wasn’t just a little important to Su Yan.

“Sure, I’ll go and take a look with Ol’ Three tomorrow.”

“Mmm, its’ getting late. I’m going to sleep.”

Ye Zichen sent a few cute emojis, then put his phone to the side.

Supermarket!

A supermarket selling to the Heavenly Court...

It's good, he'll take the chance of the Heavenly Court being in a conference to set up the supermarket. After they finished, Ye Zichen will advertise his supermarket everywhere...

Cultivation experience!

Here I come!

Chapter 95 – Confirmation Of The Supermarket Location

Su Yiyun drove. His first thought when he heard about Ye Zichen's thought of opening a supermarket was that it wasn't going to work.

He did know about how mysterious Ye Zichen was. Ignoring everything else, he knew about the Great Recovery Pills.

If he needed money, he could take out a few to sell in the upper class circles...

It was enough for him to live his entire life wealthily.

“Ye-zi, why did you suddenly think about opening a supermarket?” Su Yiyun asked with a confused expression.

Ye Zichen licked his lips with a chuckle, “Isn't it very normal for university students to start their own business? What? Are you not allowing me to open a supermarket?”

“It's not that I'm not letting you, what isn't possible with you. What's more, starting off your business venture with a supermarket?”

“What's wrong with that? Starting from the bottom...”

“It can’t be, you’re serious?” Su Yiyun thought that Su Yan was just kidding with him, but from the sounds of it, that didn’t seem like the case.

“Yeah,” Ye Zichen nodded in confirmation.

“Then we looked at quite a few shops already. The ones I chose were places on business streets with a rather large flow of people. Quite a few were near the academy area, you aren’t interested in those?”

The places Su Yiyun chose weren’t bad for a normal business, but Ye Zichen’s main purpose wasn’t to earn money with the supermarket.

He wanted to sell items with an aim towards the Heavenly Court.

Ye Zichen shook his head. Su Yiyun could only sigh helplessly and drive him to the next destination.

“Boss, what do you think? The shop is definitely big enough and you can store things underground,” a oily-faced fatty rubbed his hands and smiled towards Ye Zichen and Su Yiyun coyly.

Su Yiyun frowned, then looked outside, “This place is too remote.”

“Yeah, it is, but the price is rather cheap.”

“I think it isn’t bad. Ye-zi, what do you think?” Su Yiyun shook his head. If Ye Zichen opened a supermarket in this crappy place, it would definitely close down within three months.

“I think it’s pretty good. This is it.”

However, the location that Su Yiyun did not like was the one Ye Zichen chose.

This place was remote, but it was just to Ye Zichen’s liking.

“Ye-zi, did I hear it wrong?” Su Yiyun opened his eyes wide.

Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile, “Nope, I like this place. I’ll buy it.”

Ye Zichen wandered around the shop a few more times, then said to the fatty, “Did you bring the contract, let’s sign it now.”

Su Yiyun paid the fatty for Ye Zichen, then the fatty left happily with the contract and money.

While Ye Zichen nodded at the shop with a look of satisfaction and a nod, Su Yiyun walked over speechlessly, “Ye-zi, do you really want to open a supermarket here? You will definitely lose money in this crappy place.”

“Mhmm, you don’t understand,” Ye Zichen clapped Su Yiyun’s shoulders and smiled. “I’ll give you the money for the shop later, I’m a bit tight on money right now. Also, no need to get the certification, just help me contact the suppliers, I’ll take... all sorts of snacks and drinks.”

Su Yiyun instantly relaxed his tensed eyebrows and raised it, while holding Ye Zichen’s shoulders, “Ye-zi, tell me, what exactly do you want to do? You don’t want the certification and only want the supplies, I feel like there’s a huge issue with your supermarket.”

“I’m not telling you.”

Ye Zichen’s phone rang as he laughed. He took a look at the caller ID and waved towards Su Yiyun, “I’ll trouble you for the supplies. I have other things to do, so I’ll leave first.”

There definitely wasn’t going to be an issue with Su Yiyun at the supermarket. But honestly, this place was really remote.

He sat on the side of the road dumbly for ten-odd minutes, then finally got a taxi.

Ye Zichen was very familiar with the path when he arrived at Huang Shengmei’s home once again, while Huang Yi rolled over in his wheelchair.

“Idol, you came.”

Huang Shengmei also walked over with a fruit plate and smiled towards Ye Zichen, “Zichen.”

Ye Zichen couldn't quite take the deep passion that wasn't hidden in her eyes at all.

“Don't be so courteous, didn't you get me to come here to help Huang Yi treat his legs?”

“Idol, you can really treat my legs?”

Excitement appeared in Huang Yi's eyes. When Ye Zichen had just arrived, he didn't pay much attention to Ye Zichen's words since he was too excited from seeing his idol.

He only noticed a few days later that Ye Zichen had caused his numb legs to feel something when Ye Zichen had pressed down on his waist.

“Don't call me idol, it's fine if you just call me Ye Zichen, or bro. I feel weird with you calling me idol.”

“Okay, Zichen-ge.”

Huang Yi nodded and let Huang Shengmei push him into the bedroom, while Ye Zichen followed behind them.

“Do you need my help?” Huang Shengmei stood beside the bed and asked.

Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile, “No need, you can go busy yourself.”

“Okay.”

Huang Shengmei left the bedroom with a warm smile. Huang Yi, who was lying on the bed, coincidentally saw all of his older sister’s gentleness.

“Zichen-ge, what is your relationship with my older sister?”

“Friends.”

Ye Zichen put his hand onto Yang Meeting Acupoint on Huang Yi’s pelvis, while slowly applying qi into Huang Yi’s body.

Huang Yi merely continued to ask Ye Zichen as if he wasn’t paying attention to the situation of his body.

“But I feel like the way my older sister looked at you just now wasn’t normal.”

“Is that so? Endure the pain!”

Ye Zichen pressed outwards with his right hand, while the qi also flowed into the acupoint from his fingertips.

Huang Yi, who was chatting with Ye Zichen, suddenly cringed, then let out a terrible scream.

Huang Yi's situation was truly too severe. He was naturally limp and hadn't felt anything in his legs since he was born.

The reason was because his nerves were completely blocked. If he wanted to recover, Ye Zichen could only open up his nerves.

Instead of causing Huang Yi a little bit of pain at a time, Ye Zichen might as well cause him a huge deal of pain at once.

Huang Yi screamed out in pain on the bed, while Ye Zichen patted his back and said.

“Stop screaming, tell me what your right leg feels.”

“It hurts,” Huang Yi was in so much pain that he was about to cry.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes.

Of course it hurts.

If it didn't, then his legs wouldn't be in that condition.

“Anything else...”

“It still hurts,” Huang Yi carefully felt the feeling from his right leg. However, he was stunned the moment he said it.

That's not right!

His leg shouldn't feel anything.

“Zichen-ge,” Huang Yi quickly turned his head and looked at Ye Zichen in disbelief.

“Don't look at me. Endure it!”

Ye Zichen located an acupoint and pressed down again, causing Huang Yi's bedroom to be filled with terrible screams once again in the next moment.

Huang Shengmei, who was outside, clenched her fist. Her heart would hurt whenever there was a scream that arose from the bedroom.

But more of it was anticipation.

Since Huang Yi could feel pain, it means that Ye Zichen had a

way.

After an hour, Huang Yi was covered in sweat, as if he was just fished out of water.

Ye Zichen didn't have it easy either, as his clothes were soaked in sweat.

"Zichen, my little brother..." Huang Shengmei looked at Huang Yi, who was lying on the bed, worriedly.

Ye Zichen panted as he sat on the floor and replied, "His situation is pretty good."

"Then will he be able to stand up?"

This was the issue that Huang Shengmei had always been worried about.

"Yes."

Ye Zichen smiled and replied confidently.

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Huang Shengmei increased by 10.
Current affability level: 500.

Your affability with Huang Shengmei levelled up.

Lover status confirmed.

Chapter 96 – Destined Relationships

Ye Zichen was truly shocked.

How did their lover relationship get confirmed so randomly?

He didn't do anything.

He didn't know how Huang Shengmei's marriage string appeared at all, and why the affability level rose so quickly in the hospital.

That's great now. He just helped her little brother treat his legs a little.

The affability level directly reached 500.

That was too strange.

Ye Zichen decided that he must have a proper chat with Yue Lao and ask him if he was behind all of it. It was whatever for the girls before, but he was truly confused about this Huang Shengmei.

“How is little brother's situation? Huang Shengmei didn't say “my little brother”.

She said “little brother”.

This was already hinting at the message that Huang Yi wasn't only her little brother, Huang Yi was his little brother as well.

Ye Zichen felt the beginnings of a headache, however, he still pretended like he didn't understand her feelings and explained with a normal expression, "His situation is rather severe. He is naturally paralyzed, and the nerves are completely stuck. I just helped him open them up a little, but he needs subsequent treatments in order to fully heal."

"Really? That's great!"

Huang Yi had been her trouble since a long time ago. The relationship between them were really good.

However, both her and her young brother had grown up, so it became rather trouble some to take care of him.

Most importantly, she didn't want to see her little brother sit in a wheelchair his entire life.

She wanted to see him be able to get married and have kids as well.

Ye Zichen saw the tears in her eyes and found himself really understanding of her feelings. He raised his hand and rubbed her hair, causing Huang Shengmei to immediately blush.

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Huang Shengmei increased by 5.
Current affability level: 505.

It increased again.

“Is it okay if I want to treat you to a meal?”

Huang Shengmei sorted out her emotions and asked in a testing manner as she pursed her lips. This caused Ye Zichen to be rather worried.

Their affability level increased by 5 just by him touching her head. Who knows how much it would increase by eating a meal.

What’s even more probably...

Was that they directly skip the first three steps of being lovers and directly enter the final step.

Ye Zichen said as he looked at Huang Yi, who nobody cared for as he laid on the bed, “Let’s leave eating a meal to next time. Huang Yi’s condition just improved, I think that it would be better for you to stay here and take care of him.”

“Oh, oh, that’s true. You thought it through properly. Then next time.”

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Huang Shengmei increased by 10.
Current affability level: 515.

Ugh.

Ye Zichen truly wanted to cough up blood. A single sentence increased the affability level again.

Ye Zichen reminded Huang Shengmei to not let Huang Yi touch cold water recently, and to soak his legs with hot water for massages, before quickly leaving the room.

Ye Zichen found a nearby cold drinks store, then maniacally sent a bunch of messages to Yue Lao.

“Yue Lao, come out.”

“Hurry up.”

“This sovereign has urgent business with you.”

“Don’t pretend that you’re not here. I’ll get angry later.”

“If I’m angry, then don’t think about getting cigarettes with me from now on.”

“You are coming...”

Ye Zichen managed to fill up Yue Lao’s chat log very quickly.

He was truly annoyed in his heart.

Ye Zichen was definitely not in a situation where he was pretending after getting lucky. The situation with Huang Shengmei truly made him speechless.

Even if she looks pretty good, he can’t possibly love one whenever he sees one.

Ye Zichen ordered a glass of ice cold watermelon juice, then quickly gulped it down. He had to calm himself down quickly.

When he finished it, Yue Lao finally replied.

“In the conference.”

Conference.

The Heavenly Court is in a conference.

“I think that you don’t want any more cigarettes, right?”

“Daoist friend, what is this for? Don’t do this, we’re both someone of the Heavenly Court.”

It seemed like Yue Lao was cared quite a bit for his cigarettes.

“Answer me a few questions if you want cigarettes.”

“Say it, Daoist friend.”

“Did you tie this marriage string for me?” Ye Zichen had thought it through. If this geezer dared to say yes, then he definitely need to make some rules with this geezer.

He was in Huaxia, a law-based society.

It was a monogamist society.

He can’t stand having women thrown to him like this.

“I only tied one string for Daoist friend.”

Yue Lao’s reply stunned Ye Zichen.

He just tied one.

Then doesn’t that mean he only tied Su Yan’s? Then where did the other ones come from?

Xia Keke, Xiao Yumei, Huang Shengmei!

He had marriage strings with all of them in the Treasure Chest.

“Are you sure?”

“Yes. I’ll say something that Daoist friend might not like. There are too many relationships I have to watch over as the one watching over the relationships within the Three Realms. I can’t always find time for Daoist Friend. If Daoist Friend got into relationships recently, it means that they were destined, or perhaps relationships that were incomplete from your previous life.”

Ye Zichen fell into deep thought as he looked at the message that Yue Lao sent over.

What the geezer said was the truth. He can’t possibly just watch over Ye Zichen and tie strings for him as he was in charge of the relationships in the Three Realms.

Even if he wanted to, the Jade Emperor would not allow him.

But it being “destined” shocked Ye Zichen.

Destined.

It seemed like he was a flirtatious man in his past life.

Yue Lao clearly said he was not to blame.

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen sent Yue Lao a red packet, then casually sent a message over.

“Sure, continue with the conference. There’s nothing more from me!”

Yue Lao received your red packet.

“Thank you, Daoist friend! Oh yeah, Daoist friend, where are you seated at? Let’s meet up after the conference. Geezer Taishang wants to see you as well.”

Yue Lao suddenly asked just when Ye Zichen was about to close the chat.

Ye Zichen blanked out for a moment, then replied, “I’m not in the Heavenly Court recently.”

“Not here? It can’t be, Daoist friend? The Jade Emperor personally called this conference. All deities came, including the Buddhas of the Buddhist Realm in the west. How can you not come?”

...

What's the Heavenly Court doing? Why did they have to put so much importance on this? Was it an annual conference!?

Wait!

Ye Zichen suddenly noticed an important thing. All the deities were there!

“You said that all deities of the Heavenly Court are participating in this conference?”

“Yeah.”

Ye Zichen instantly laughed after seeing Yue Lao's reply.

Clap.

Ye Zichen clapped his hands. All the deities were there, this was definitely a great opportunity for him.

He was already certain of opening a supermarket for the Heavenly Court.

Right now, he only had one sales path in his hands. It was the

Heavenly Court group.

There were indeed plenty of deities in the Heavenly Court group, but it didn't include all of them. What's more, if he wanted to increase sales in the Heavenly Court, just sending red packets in the group wasn't enough.

It didn't cover enough areas.

Coincidentally, all of the deities had returned to the Heavenly Court for the conference.

This was definitely him being given a chance at the right time, or giving him a pillow when he was sleepy.

Who cares what meeting they were in. Ye Zichen only knew that it was enough for all the deities to be there.

Ye Zichen created a chat group on WeChat, then added all of the deities he has on his friend list. He hesitated a bit when it came to Nezha, then finally decided to add him as well.

As for Taibai Jinxing...

Never mind.

Dingdong.

Chat group successfully created.

You invited Monkey King, Erlang Shen, Third Prince Nezha, Old Lord Taishang, Yue Lao and Canopy Marshal into the group.

Chapter 97 – Supermarket Spokesperson Selection

The deities within the group already started to chatter immediately after the chat group had been created.

Monkey King: Who dragged Old Sun into this group??

Erlang Shen: Damned monkey, why are you here?

Canopy Marshal: Monkey bro!

Monkey King: Idiot, why did you come as well?

Third Prince Nezha: Why are you guys here?

Old Lord Taishang: Can you guys pay attention in the conference? Do you want the annual bonus?

Yue Lao: What's going on?

Ye Zichen became truly speechless when he saw these deities chat.

Were they really in a conference?

Both the Monkey King and Erlang Shen started arguing immediately after seeing each other, as usual. Although the Third Prince Nezha wanted to convince them to stop, when he saw that he couldn't interrupt, he gave up on that idea.

Meanwhile, Old Lord Taishang and Yue Lao directly treated it as a private chatroom and started discussing who is most likely to get the annual prize at the conference this year.

But it was good, at least the people he dragged in were all alive.

Ye Zichen changed the name of the chat group to “Supermarket Spokesperson Selection”, then sent a message to the group.

“Cough, cough, everybody stop for a moment.”

Everyone in the group instantly stopped the moment Ye Zichen spoke.

But it heated up again after a brief period of calm.

Erlang Shen: Bro, why are you here?

Monkey King: You dragged Old Sun in?

Canopy Marshal: Great deity.

Third Prince Nezha: Celestial Sovereign.

Old Lord Taishang: It's actually celestial friend.

Yue Lao: What did celestial friend gathered us for?

Could they not see who invited them into the group? Why were they so shocked?

Ye Zichen suppressed the retorts in his heart and said, "I have something to discuss with you guys."

Ye Zichen could definitely not let go of the business opportunity he had found in the Heavenly Court. There were so many treasures that were waiting to be bought.

He must start his business in the Heavenly Court.

But that would require an opportunity to sell it.

What were sales reliant on now?

The celebrity effect!

Basically, he needed a spokesperson.

If Ye Zichen wasn't wrong about it, then the six of them in his

group had absolute authority in the Heavenly Court.

Especially the Canopy Marshal.

He was definitely number one in the Heavenly Court when it came to food.

Thus, Ye Zichen decided to...

Turn them all into his...

Spokespeople!

Ye Zichen thought for a while as he saw the deities in the group speak up, then finally sent a message.

“Everyone should know the situation of this sovereign at a secret location. You should also know that I have some treasures here.”

Canopy Marshal: I know, I know <insert a row of saliva emojis>

Yue Lao: Celestial friend's cigarettes are amazing.

Old Lord Taishang: I know.

Third Prince Nezha: Nutri-express is so delicious.

Monkey King: Those are great treasures.

Erlang Shen: The book that bro sent over is really great too.

All of them have had a taste of what Ye Zichen had to offer, and he could tell that his treasures were pretty well received by these deities.

“This sky sovereign wants to start selling these treasures in the Heavenly Court. I wonder if you are all willing to aid this sovereign?”

Since Ye Zichen were worried that they were unwilling, he added.

“It’s not for free. You’ll get compensation out of it.”

Bang.

The group instantly exploded with the Canopy Marshal in the lead, who pestered Ye Zichen about what could they get.

On the other hand, Yue Lao and Old Lord Taishang were far more calm as they asked, “What do we need us to do?”

It’s simple, you guys only need to advertise this sovereign’s products in your circle of friends. I will create a chat group later

on. When that happens, as long as people in your circle of friends are interested in this sovereign's treasures, then you can add them into the group."

"Each deity you invite grants you a shopping card with two thousand cultivation experience, at the same time, you will also be able to get a discount when you buy things from this sovereign. The more deities you invite into the group, the higher your discount will be."

Everyone in the group turned silent the moment Ye Zichen sent the message.

Ye Zichen stared at the chat group nervously. He'll be screwed if he doesn't succeed when he took the initiative like this.

If he failed here, then it would be rather troublesome to sell to the Heavenly Court in the future.

On the other hand, if he succeeded, then the profits he gained would definitely be far better than him slowly advertising himself.

Monkey King: You're too terrible, you want Old Sun to pay? Old Sun doesn't get a salary from the Heavenly Court, nor am I as rich as the God of Fortune.

Erlang: Bro, you should know I'm terribly poor.

Third Prince Nezha: My pocket money is all with my dad.

Canopy General: Celestial Sovereign, I don't think it would work that well. The people in the Heavenly Court aren't particularly rich.

Ye Zichen immediately slapped himself after seeing their reply.

He was too concentrated on brainwashing them that he actually forgot to tell them the transaction method. From the looks of it, they probably subconsciously thought that they needed to pay with money from the Heavenly Court...

“This sovereign's items don't require the Heavenly Court's money, they require cultivation experience. At the same time, item exchanges are possible as well.”

Monkey King: Cultivation experience. What do you want such a useless thing for?

Erlang Shen: Bro, could it be that you're about to breakthrough, so you need more cultivation experience to do so?

F*ck.

Was cultivation experience not important in the Heavenly Court? From their tons, it seemed like cultivation experience was like cabbage, and they had however much that he wanted. Yue Lao had said that cultivation experience was very important, when he just entered the group, the God of Thunder managed to get a thousand-

cultivation experience and invoked envy among people.

What Ye Zichen did not know was that the Heavenly Court had been established for a long time...

Cultivation experience was way too common for these deities.

But that's good that they didn't need it.

Ye Zichen did.

"This sovereign does need cultivation to breakthrough, I wonder if my celestial friends could give this sovereign a hand."

Erlang Sheng: Since bro is in trouble, then I'll naturally help.

Third Prince Nezha: Sure, dad taught me to find joy in people since a young age.

Canopy Marshal: This little deity would definitely aid with all his might since the great deity has asked.

Yue Lao: No problem.

Old Lord Taishang: Okay.

Monkey King: Then shouldn't you show some good will first!

The first few deities were rather just, but when it came to the Monkey King...

Show some good will!

He only knew how to get benefits.

But no matter, he naturally needed to give them products in order to be his spokespeople and advertise his products in their circle of friends.

Didn't Coca Cola give out free coke when it first started?

Wool comes from sheep, just like cultivation experience from the deities. By giving them some benefits, Ye Zichen had no fear of them not buying things from him in the future.

“That's for sure. Celestial friends, you should still be in the conference, continue with that for now. I'll send you all treasures when it is finished. I'll be troubling my celestial friends then.”

“Sure sure.”

Ye Zichen closed the chat group and called Su Yiyun as the deities replied.

He must get the supermarket set up quickly. Time waits for no

man, deity or not. Ye Zichen did want those deities to advertise his products a bit when the conference ended.

Ye Zichen simply hurried Su Yiyun a bit, then hung up.

At that moment, his mood could be described in only one word.

Which was...

Amazing.

He was a bit excited just as he thought about the deities coming to buy stuff from him, and letting him earn cultivation experience at a crazy rate.

What that happens, who cares if it was the Fiery Eyes of Truth or Body Freezing Technique...

What was one book or two books in the face of his plan?

He would buy all of them.

Don't ask why. When he has a lot of cultivation experience, he could spend it to his liking.

Chapter 98 – Adventures At The Cold Drinks Store

Ye Zichen, who was holding the phone, laughed idiotically. He truly imagined so many benefits that he would get in the future that he couldn't quite return to his senses.

Liu Jing sat opposite him with her hands supporting her head as she stared at him speechlessly, "You truly look so idiotic."

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in annoyance after his daydream was interrupted by a ghost, "The hell do you know? Big bro was just talking about business with the people from the Heavenly Court. The Heavenly Court, do you get it?"

"You're crazy," Liu Jing twitched his mouth.

"Ghost!" Just as Ye Zichen imagined the blueprint for his beautiful future, a sharp scream rang out outside the cold drinks store.

Ye Zichen's heart immediately jumped. Could someone have seen Liu Jing?

Liu Jing also opened her eyes in fright. The two of them looked over towards the source of the sound and saw that the scream came from a woman, whose face was covered in a very thick layer of foundation, wearing a pair of red high heels. At the same time, a cold drinks store waitress stood in front of her.

Phew.

Ye Zichen and Liu Jing both let out a sigh.

They weren't calling Liu Jing a ghost.

Ye Zichen stood up to leave the cold drinks store with the mindset of nothing affecting him at all.

However, when he walked to the cold drinks store entrance, he saw that waitress.

“Hu-ge, I was so scared.”

The red high heels woman pretended to be terrified as she reached out to grab the arm of the huge man.

The man looked up and eyed the waitress before disgust instantly surfaced on his face, “F*ck off, were you born so ugly to scare people?”

He picked up the cold drink and threw it towards the waitress. The waitress raised up her drink to block it, causing the cold drink to instantly splash onto the woman.

“Ahhh...” The woman with heavy make-up screamed, then instantly stood up to slap the waitress.

“Don’t be too outrageous.”

Ye Zichen hurried over from the side, grabbed the woman’s hand and pushed her to the side.

At the same time, he turned around, looked at the hurt waitress and said softly, “Li Jiayi, are you alright?”

“Why are you here?”

Li Jiayi’s expression was clearly rather unnatural when she saw Ye Zichen.

That day in the hotel...

Ye Zichen is still not admitting to it!

“Hu-ge...” At this moment, the woman that Ye Zichen pushed aside also screamed. The muscular man opposite her instantly stood up, then reached out his hand to grab Ye Zichen’s shoulder.

“Hands off.” Ye Zichen turned and looked at the man who had grabbed his shoulder with an indifferent gaze.

The man instantly felt an icy chill around him, causing him to subconsciously let go of Ye Zichen’s shoulder.

“I feel like this is a misunderstanding, what do you think?”

A faint coldness spread through Hu-ge's heart once again. He gulped. There was only one thought in Hu-ge's mind.

This brat wasn't someone that should be pissed off easily.

However, the woman beside him did not think that much. She stepped forward and screamed at Ye Zichen and Li Jiayi, “Are you blind? Did you not see this ugly woman wet my clothes? These are new clothes that I bought!”

“Do you believe that I'll rip your mouth off if you say anything else?” Ye Zichen glared at her and said. “As for your clothes. How much are they? I'll compensate you.”

“Can you afford it!?”

The woman revealed a look of disdain, while Hu-ge sneakily pulled on the woman and smiled, “Bro, I feel like you are kind of familiar, I wonder which group you run with?”

“Don't worry about which group I run with, I'll compensate you for the clothes. Apologize towards her.”

“Apologize? Dream on,” The harsh woman shouted once more.

“Hehehe...”

Slap.

Ye Zichen directly slapped the harsh woman's face, then shook his hands with a dark look in his eyes.

“Don't ignore my words...”

“You actually dared to hit me.”

The harsh woman was stunned, then she immediately reached out to scratch Ye Zichen's face.

What met her was another loud slap.

“Don't challenge my patience.”

“Hu-ge,” the woman covered her face, then coquettishly shook the man's shoulders. However, the man completely ignored her and said tremblingly. “Ye... You're Young Master Ye, right?”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, he didn't think that the brat would recognize him.

“You know me?”

Hu-ge felt that Ye Zichen was very familiar from first glance, but he just couldn't recall who he was.

However, he finally remembered when Ye Zichen slapped his woman.

This was definitely a powerful monster.

Gulp.

Hu-ge gulped furiously, then slapped the woman beside him, "Apologize."

Hu-ge's slap completely shocked the harsh woman. She stared at him in shock, then exploded, "Zhao Hu, you actually dared to hit laoniang. You dared to hit laoniang."

The harsh woman raised her hand to scratch Zhao Hu's face. Zhao Hu clenched his teeth, grabbed held of the harsh woman's arm, then pushed her before raising his hand to slap her once again, "Liu Zhu, apologize to Young Master Ye quickly!"

"F*ck you! Zhao Hu, just you wait. And you two, wait right there," the harsh woman screamed and left the cold drinks store. Zhao Hu gulped as he cursed the woman for being retarded.

She might be kind of capable, but compared to Young Master Ye.

She's nothing!

“Young Master Ye...”

“It seems like this woman is more amazing than you?” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth with a smile, then hinted towards Li Jiayi. “Apologize.”

“Sis Ye, sorry. It was I who had eyes, but did not recognize Mt. Tai...”

Li Jiayi, who was on the side, instantly blushed, while Ye Zichen got confused as well.

What was with this brat's brain? He thought too much into it...

“Never mind, nothing really happened to me. Just leave.”

Li Jiayi pursed her lips, while the anger in her heart disappeared as if it was due to Zhao Hu's usage of “Sis Ye”.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and also said, “Screw off.”

“Ai, ai, yes.”

Zhao Hu immediately scrambled away from the cold drinks store. At this moment, Ye Zichen turned back and asked softly, “Why did

you come here to work? Weren't you working at Golden Spring?"

"Is it any of your business?"

To be honest Li Jiayi felt very vexed, she was annoyed with how Ye Zichen didn't dare to admit what he did, but then again, he helped her out just now...

"Big Bro, it's the two of them."

The harsh woman, who left the cold drinks store earlier, returned with several policemen beside her.

The policemen looked at Ye Zichen and walked over with a frown as they checked him out savagely.

"I suspect you of being related to the recent smuggler groups, please come with us back to the police station to aid with the investigation."

"You're talking about me?" Ye Zichen pointed at himself in shock.

Li Jiayi, who was on the side, also couldn't help but ask, "Officer, you misrecognized the person, right?"

When the police saw the birthmark on Li Jiayi's face, clear disgust surfaced in his eyes.

“Misrecognized? I won’t do that. Also, I feel like you’re linked with their association as well. Bring them away together.”

Chapter 99 – Trouble

Liu Zhu looked on proudly from the side. Ye Zichen glanced at her, and knew that she had called these people over.

The owner of the cold drinks store hurried over. He was a very kind looking uncle, who quickly forced a smile when he saw the police, “Mr. Policeman, do you want anything cold to drink!? They’re on me, there are tables over there, please have a seat.”

“Don’t try to get familiar with me,” the policeman Liu Zhu brought over pushed the owner aside and pointed towards Ye Zichen and Li Jiayi. “Bring them away.”

“Mr. Policeman, this is a misunderstanding, right?” The shop owner revealed a worried expression, then said after forcing another smile.

“Don’t mention misunderstandings with me. Your shop employee is related to a smuggling case. If you don’t want anything to happen to your shop, then don’t be a busybody.”

The shop owner was instantly stunned in place after being threatened like that.

Li Jiayi chuckled, signifying the shop owner not to worry. Then she looked at towards that policeman and laughed coldly, “On what basis do you say I’m related to the smuggling case. I think you’re using your position for personal gains.”

“Big Bro, why’s there a need of wasting your breath with her? Just promptly bring them away,” Liu Zhu laughed coldly by the side.

Ye Zichen licked his lips and glanced towards the woman.

A coldness immediately surfaced from the bottom of her feet. She subconsciously stepped back, while Ye Zichen smiled, “Officer Liu?”

The officer was stunned for a moment, then said, “You know me?”

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and smiled, “If Liu Zhu’s gege doesn’t have the surname Liu, then was he supposed to have the surname Ye? We, the Ye family, don’t have such a grandson like you.”

“You’re insulting me?” Officer Liu laughed sinisterly and snorted. “I hope that you’re still this snarky when you’re in the station. Arrest the two of them.”

“Wait a moment,” Ye Zichen raised his hands to stop the officers that rushed up and laughed coldly. “Are you sure you’re going to arrest me? I’m just worried that you can’t endure the responsibilities of arresting me.”

Ye Zichen’s fearless attitude caused Officer Liu to be shocked.

Could this brat have someone behind him?

He looked towards Ye Zichen with a frown and saw a bunch of street goods. Furthermore, he didn't recall there being someone like Ye Zichen.

All of sudden, a cold sneer bloomed on Officer Liu's face.

"Hmph, the people from the smuggler associations are all so cocky. Bring them away."

With that, the two other policemen surrounded them.

Ye Zichen shook his shoulders, shaking off the hands of the other two policemen, then snorted, "I can walk by myself, but I hope you don't regret it!"

Li Jiayi was also brought to the station unsurprisingly. However, the two of them were not brought to the interrogation room, and was instead locked in another room by Officer Liu.

Ye Zichen had both of his hands handcuffed to the wall heater.

"Ye Zichen, what should we do?" Li Jiayi frowned worriedly. This was her first time in the station.

"Don't worry," Ye Zichen was much calmer. He had already messaged Commissioner Liu before coming here. The city's main

station should be calling over before long.

That will be the time to deal with this grandson.

“Ye Zichen, look, isn’t that Officer Lin’s boyfriend?” Liu Jing pointed outside the window as she floated in midair. Ye Zichen glanced outside the window.

It really was.

“Liu Qiang!” Zhao Ziming stopped Liu Qiang.

“Captain Zhao!”

“I heard you arrested a smuggler called Ye Zichen, right?”

Zhao Ziming squinted his eyes, causing Liu Qiang to worry.

Could that brat know Captain Zhao?

“Captain Zhao, you...”

“Don’t worry,” Zhao Ziming reached out his hand and patted Liu Qiang’s shoulder, before handing him a towel. “If you really arrested Ye Zichen, then let him feel comfortable. You know what to do, right?”

Liu Qiang instantly smiled when he saw the towel in his hands. He didn't think that the brat would have built a grudge with Captain Zhao too.

“Understood.”

“Alright, go, don't leave any traces behind.”

Zhao Ziming patted Liu Qiang's shoulder, turned around and met Ye Zichen's gaze before leaving.

“Ai, why did he leave?”

Liu Jing screamed, while Ye Zichen smiled.

There was something wrong with this grandson.

Creak.

The door to the room was pushed open, while Liu Qiang walked in with the towel and police baton.

Ye Zichen's pupils contracted when he saw the towel. That was the towel that Zhao Ziming had handed Liu Qiang.

“Brat, admit it.”

The first thing that Liu Qiang did after entering the room was locking the door and pulling down the blinds.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and smiled, “I have nothing to admit.”

“Is that so? It seems like the organization is pretty good to you. You’re pretty tough.”

Liu Qiang walked towards Ye Zichen with a laugh. He chuckled the towel towards Ye Zichen’s stomach, then swung the baton.

“Fuck you!” Ye Zichen grunted, then kicked Liu Qiang over.

Liu Qiang crawled up from the ground, patted away the dirt on his body, while his expression grew dark.

“You actually dared to assault an officer...”

Liu Qiang wet the towel, then turned on the electricity for the baton.

Crackle.

Ye Zichen’s body immediately twitched!

“Ye Zichen!”

“Ye Zichen!”

Liu Jing and Li Jiayi called out at the same time. At the same time, Liu Qiang put down the baton and slapped Ye Zichen’s face.

“Are you admitting it?”

“Admit your mom... Tsk...”

Ye Zichen spat over. Liu Qiang used the towel to wipe his face, then increased the frequency of the baton in his hands before prodding Ye Zichen once again.

“Mmm... Ugh...”

Ye Zichen shivered intensely while Li Jiayi shouted towards the outside, “Help... Someone is lynching an innocent!”

Slap.

Liu Qiang slapped Li Jiayi. Ye Zichen opened his eyes blurrily and saw that scene.

“F*CK YOU. Come at me if you dare!”

“Hehe, I couldn’t tell. You’re pretty heroic. But, you have pretty

bad taste...”

Crackle.

Liu Qiang smacked him with the baton again.

“Are you admitting it?”

“I... Tsk...”

Ye Zichen opened his eyes feebly, then spat on Liu Qiang with again with a smile.

“Ye Zichen!”

Li Jiayi struggled in order to help Ye Zichen, causing her wrists to bleed.

Liu Jing, who floated in midair, also stomped her feet. She wanted to help Ye Zichen, but Ye Zichen had given her a clear order not to do anything.

“Why is dad so slow?”

Liu Jing bit her lips and could only watch Ye Zichen get electrocuted by Liu Qiang over and over again with the baton.

Meanwhile, at the city's police station.

Commissioner Liu sat on the office and reviewed the recent cases. The door to his office was pushed open as Officer Zhang walked in.

“Commissioner Liu, your phone is fully charged.”

“Oh, just put it there.”

Commissioner Liu replied without raising his head, while Officer Zhang placed the phone down and left.

After a long while, Commissioner Liu finally put down the files in his hands, and turned on his phone as he rubbed his temples.

Not long later, Lil' Ye's text popped up. Commissioner Liu quickly opened it, then froze.

He looked at the time that the text was sent.

Slap.

Crap.

Chapter 100 – Turning The Tables

Li Jiayi, who was handcuffed to the heater as well could no longer make any sound as she sobbed.

Ye Zichen was looking like he just had been fished out of the water, while huge droplets of sweat fell onto the ground.

Crackle.

The baton in Liu Qiang's hands prodded Ye Zichen again, who nearly lost consciousness, causing him to shiver intensely once more.

Liu Qiang licked his lips and smiled savagely. He grabbed Ye Zichen's hair and slapped him.

“Brat, gonna get cockier?”

Ye Zichen feebly opened his eyebrows and moved his lips. Liu Qiang revealed a playful smile, “What do you want to say?”

As he said that, Liu Qiang brought his ear closer.

“F*ck... you...”

Bang.

Liu Qiang hit Ye Zichen's stomach with the baton, then squinted his eyes with a snort, "You're still reluctant, right?"

With that, he picked up the baton and walked towards Li Jiayi, "This is your woman?"

Liu Qiang grabbed Li Jiayi's chin and laughed, "Hey, if it wasn't for her other side of the face, she would look pretty good. Especially this body. Zeze... It's so voluptuous!"

"Let go of me!" Li Jiayi struggled futilely.

Ye Zichen, who had nearly lost consciousness, also stood up with a struggle when he saw this, "Grandson, come mess with grandpa if you dare. Grandpa isn't scared of you."

"Heheheheh..."

Smack.

Ye Zichen immediately coughed up a mouthful of blood as the baton struck him once again.

At this moment, Liu Qiang's phone in his pocket rang. He looked at the caller ID and snorted towards Ye Zichen with a smile, "You got lucky."

Then he hit Ye Zichen with the baton once again and walked out of the room with his phone.

“Ye Zichen...” LI Jiayi cried.

“Hehe!” Ye Zichen raised his head feebly and smiled. “Don’t be scared. That grandson... will suffer... later!”

At the same time, Liu Jing also floated over and reached out her hand in an attempt to support Ye Zichen’s body, “Ye Zichen, you have to hold on. My dad will come save you very quickly.

“Hehe,” Ye Zichen smiled dumbly with squinted eyes and continuously nodded.

“Superintendent Wang.”

Liu Qiang stood outside the room and answered the phone with a normal tone.

“I’m asking you, did you arrest a suspect called Ye Zichen just now?”

Why would the superintendent mention this?

Liu Qiang’s heart jumped as he gulped, “Yeah, I did arrest someone named Ye Zichen. He is related to a smuggling case, so I...”

“Related my ass!” Superintendent Wang suddenly roared in the phone. “I’ll telling you, hurry up and let Ye Zichen go. The city police department has already sent someone over to get him! Also, you have to say good things to him and apologize properly, okay?”

“...”

Liu Qiang’s hand trembled as he opened his eyes wide, and sweat appeared on his forehead.

“I-I understand.”

“Hmmph,” Superintendent Wang snorted and said. “Oh yeah, you didn’t give Mr. Ye a lesson, right?”

Giving him a lesson was exactly what he had done to Ye Zichen just now...

Liu Qiang’s heart was about to explode. He gulped and said, while clenching his teeth, “No-No...”

“Hmmph, you got lucky. Otherwise, even ten lives are not enough for you! Speak properly when the person from the city police station comes over later. Alright, that’s all!”

Slam.

The call ended.

Beep, beep...

At the same time, a police car parked outside the police station. Lin Xiyue, wearing a police hat, frantically ran in with three policemen in tow.

“Xiyue, why did you come here?”

Zhao Ziming walked out of the office with a smile.

Lin Xiyue frowned and said, “Ziming, did your station arrest Ye Zichen?”

“Ye Zichen? That name is so familiar!” Zhao Ziming revealed a confused expression. Then said in surprise after a long while, “Isn’t that the name of savior? I didn’t hear about anyone arresting him though?”

“Then hurry up and ask your colleagues, Ye Zichen was arrested by your guys. I came to get him out under orders,” Lin Xiyue’s face was filled with worry. She had rushed over the moment she got Commissioner Liu’s call.

Although she didn’t have a good impression of Ye Zichen before, but ever since last time...

She gained a very different view of him.

Zhao Ziming's expression darkened when he felt Lin Xiyue's worry for Ye Zichen, but he still revealed a shocked expression and said, "Alright, I'll make the call right now."

Liu Qiang went completely dumb after his call with Superintendent Wang. He sat limply on the ground, while his phone fell to the side.

"Liu Qiang."

At this moment, Zhao Ziming's shouting sounded out beside Liu Qiang's ear.

Captain Zhao.

Yeah, Captain Zhao told him to do everything. Captain Zhao gave him the towel and told him to do it.

He did everything under Captain Zhao's instructions!

"Captain Zhao, save me," Liu Qiang kneeled on the floor and crawled over.

Seeing him, Zhao Ziming's expression grew sullen, "Where is Ye Zichen?"

“There!” Liu Qiang pointed his finger towards the room. Seeing that, Lin Xiyue immediately ran towards it.

“...”

Lin Xiyue’s heart felt a sudden pain when she saw the devastation in the room.

“Ye Zichen, wake up... Ye Zichen...”

She hugged Ye Zichen’s neck tightly and shouted out his name.

At this moment, Liu Qiang and Zhao Ziming also walked in.

When they saw Lin Xiyue hug Ye Zichen, Zhao Ziming’s face grew dark once again.

“Give me the keys,” Lin Xiyue essentially roared out.

Liu Qiang took out the keys with a pale expression.

Lin Xiyue quickly unlocked Ye Zichen’s handcuffs and continued to shout out Ye Zichen’s name, “Ye Zichen, wake up... wake up...”

At that moment, the other policemen also unlocked Li Jiayi’s handcuffs. Immediately after that, she directly ran to Ye Zichen’s side and pushed Lin Xiyue onto the floor.

“Screw off.”

“You dare to assault an officer!” Zhao Ziming shouted.

“None of you are good!” Li Jjiayi glared at Zhao Ziming and roared, then she cried as she held Ye Zichen’s head. “Ye Zichen, don’t scare me, hurry and wake up... Ye Zichen...”

“You...” Zhao Ziming’s face was dark, but Lin Xiyue held him back with a cold smile. “Zhao Ziming, look at this great team that you lead.”

With that, she turned around to the policemen behind her and shouted, “Hurry up and call the ambulance. Also, arrest him.”

The policemen that Lin Xiyue brought with her immediately dialed the number for the ambulance and put Liu Qiang under control.

Liu Qiang’s entire face was filled with terror as he reached his hand out towards Zhao Ziming, “Captain Zhao, save me. This is all your...”

Bang.

Zhao Ziming, who stood by the side, kicked Liu Qiang’s stomach, causing the two policemen who were putting him under control to

fall onto the ground as well.

“It really is my shame to have a teammate like you under me.”

“Captain Zhao!”

Liu Qiang still wanted to say something, but he was afraid due to Zhao Ziming’s shocking gaze.

He knew!

He no longer had the chance to turn it around.

“Cough, cough...”

At that moment, Ye Zichen, who was lying in Li Jiayi’s arms suddenly coughed intensely. Lin Xiyue hurried over, but she could only watch him worriedly from afar due to Li Jiayi’s hostile gaze.

“Zichen, you’re awake,” Li Jiayi instantly replaced her cries with smiles when she saw Ye Zichen open his eyes.

“Ha... Laozi is going to turn the tables!”

That was the first thing that Ye Zichen said when he opened his eyes.